



SHURA'S WRATH

BOOK 08

I AM SHURA

Mars Gravity

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Shura's Wrath

(网游之天谴修罗)

by

Mars Gravity

(火星引力)

Synopsis

To save his terminally ill little sister, Ling Chen enters the newly released virtual game world and joins a small gaming studio comprising entirely of women.

From now on walking upon his path towards the pinnacle.

An ancient, evil item almost forgotten by history, the “Lunar Scourge” helps forge his unsurpassable legend, and causes him to unknowingly step upon a path that is destined to be punished by the heavens, the way of the shura.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by WhatTranslate, Kaycee Liang, Sophia, Sylver135, Mr Voltaire @ [Gravity Tales](#)

Translation Edits by Allenwa, TheNo1Fan, Pebbles, xXmA5taof5hAdoWZzzXx, Niku @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 701 - The Yun Family's Greed

Perhaps no one else would think too much when he or she heard what Su'Er said. After all, it was possible that she was still feeling sensitive about what happened to Ling Tian City. However, Ling Chen was unable to disregard this. Even as he walked to the Administrative District, he was still thinking about what Su'Er had said, and he thought of all sorts of possibilities... however, the Forgotten God Representative had definitely been affected by the Soulstealing Curse, and the Forgotten Emperor definitely wouldn't dare to attack again even if he was 10 times as brave. Even if he did go mad and attack Ling Tian City, he wouldn't be able to be much of a threat. What's more, Ling Chen had the Underworld supporting him, so even the Dragon Clan and Moon God Clan would have to think about it seriously before attacking.

At that moment, Ling Chen saw 3 middle-aged men walking towards him. The 3 of them evidently were not battle profession players, and they had very low levels. However, they were dressed in expensive clothing and jewelry, and they didn't have a single piece of battle equipment on them. The 3 of them walked side by side, and their faces were raised, not even bothering to look at Ling Chen. It seemed like they were quite used to being proud and arrogant. Seeing the direction in which they were walking, Ling Chen slightly frowned, slowed down, and watched them as they stopped in front of the Administrative District's Main Tower.

“Apologies, this is where the leaders of the city do important business, so if you do not have an appointment, please do not enter.”

This was the centre of Ling Tian City's Administrative District, the core of Ling Tian City. Yun Meng Xin, Li Xiao Xue, and others who were working on the development of the city were in here, and those who were standing guard naturally were not ordinary players but 2 young Celestial grade Fairies.

Although these 3 middle-aged men had come over quite suddenly, the Fairies still courteously warned them not to come closer. However, the middle-aged man on the right angrily yelled, “Get out of the way and let us in!”

The 2 Fairies simultaneously frowned, but they continued to speak in a polite tone, “Without an appointment or the Lady’s permission, no one is allowed to enter here. Apologies...”

“I don’t want to repeat myself.” The middle-aged man who had spoken became quite angry. From the look of it, he was used to being higher than everyone else, and he put no one in his eyes. These 2 Fairies looked almost the same as humans, so they were taken to be 2 player guards. As such, let alone speaking courteously, they didn’t even put these Fairies in their eyes at all. “Immediately get out of the way and take us to see the Lady of the city... not everyone can be stopped by you! Do you know who I am? The Lady of your city is my niece! This is her Third Uncle, and this is her father! If you waste our time, we’ll make you regret it!”

In the distance, Ling Chen still hadn’t left, and his eyes started to narrow. At that moment, Xiao Qi happened to walk by. Just as she was about to call out to him, Ling Chen hurriedly waved her over and made a signal not to speak. Xiao Qi stared for a moment before looking over, and her face fell as her cheeks puffed out angrily. “Hmph! It’s big sister Meng Xin’s father and 2 uncles. They actually came here to see her. I’m sure they’re not here for anything good.”

“Ai! Don’t say such things, these 2 little brothers evidently don’t know who they are. After all, they’re just diligently doing their job,” The middle-aged man in the middle spoke, speaking somewhat pleasantly to the 2 Fairy guards. “2 little brothers, I am Lady Yun’s father, and I have urgent business with her. Please take us to see her immediately.”

As Ling Tian City developed, Lady Yun Meng Xin’s name was also known across all the lands. Adding on her breathtaking beauty, she

became world-famous. When Fey called her the most famous woman in the world, she was not exaggerating at all. Her identity as China's Yun family financial group's heiress was also made known, causing the Yun family financial group to also greatly benefit. Although Ling Tian City had only been established for 2 months, the benefits that the Yun family financial group had received due to being associated with Yun Meng Xin were not small at all. As Yun Meng Xin's relatives, especially close relatives, they felt that their status had been lifted up as well.

As Yun Meng Xin's father, Yun Zheng Fan was incredibly pleased, and he started to look down on even the Li family, who he had only been able to look up at before... so what if the Li family was powerful in the past? The Yun family has the most powerful daughter in the world, and the Li family's daughter is my daughter's subordinate!

Now, the way everyone looked at him was completely different. Because of the massive influence that Ling Tian City had within the virtual world, countless rich and powerful people, including those whose statuses were far above his, tried to curry favour with him so that they could establish themselves within Ling Tian City. This made Yun Zheng Fan feel giddy with joy, and he felt that he didn't have to put anyone in his eyes.

Facing these 2 'player' guards, they revealed their identities, expecting to scare these guards senseless. They fully expected the guards to start acting humble and immediately take them to see Yun Meng Xin, but the 2 Fairies only calmly glanced at them. The 3 middle-aged men's arrogance angered even them, and standing guard was their job no matter who it was that approached. One of the Fairies expressionlessly said, "I don't care who you are. If you don't have an appointment or the Lady's permission, please immediately leave this place. If you don't leave, we'll be required to force you out."

"You!" Yun Zheng Fan's expression froze, and his face became a

pig-livered colour. He never would have thought that 2 mere guards would dare to treat him this way given his status. This felt even worse than being looked down on by those who had higher status than him, and he was instantly infuriated. “I tried to be polite, but you 2 refused. Didn’t you hear who your elder is? Immediately piss off! If you continue being so blind, your elder will make you disappear from here with a single sentence! Scram!”

Beside him, the other 2 men were furious, and they started to loudly curse at the Fairies. If this was the real world, they would have immediately called for their people to beat them up. At this moment, a gentle and cold voice sounded out, “What’s going on?”

Just those 3 words alone were able to calm down the entire situation. As the voice sounded out, Yun Meng Xin slowly walked out, wearing a plain white dress, looking completely otherworldly.

“Lady Yun.” Seeing that Yun Meng Xin had personally come out, the 2 Fairy guards stepped to one side and slightly bowed as they greeted her. Yun Zheng Fan glared at the 2 Fairies and coldly harrumphed before smiling and rushing up to Yun Meng Xin with the other 2 men. “Ah, Meng Xin, so you really were here. Your second Uncle, your third Uncle, and I have come to see you.”

“Meng Xin, you’ve become even prettier after not seeing you for months. You truly have the airs of the Lady of a city.”

“No less than expected from the daughter of the Yun family. As elders, we can’t help but rejoice.”

Facing their big smiles, Yun Meng Xin was instead quite calm. “Welcome to Ling Tian City. I have many things to do, so if you have any business, please state it. If you don’t, feel free to take a look around the city.”

Yun Zheng Fan’s expression did not change. Evidently, he was used to Yun Meng Xin’s attitude towards him. He chuckled before replying, “Of course we have business with you.” He then looked to both sides as he said, “There are too many people here; let’s talk

inside.”

“No need, we can talk here,” Yun Meng Xin replied expressionlessly.

Yun Zheng Fan’s face stiffened, but he immediately regained his composure as he nodded and said, “Very well. It’s actually the same thing that I talked to you about last time... Ling Tian City is becoming larger and larger, and managing this place must be getting harder and harder. As a girl, the burden on you is simply too great, so how could I, as your father, not worry about you? You’re my daughter, and one of the successors of the Yun family. The Yun family has the responsibility to bear part of the burden for Ling Tian City...”

He stopped speaking, and Ling Chen, who had been silently watching, raised his eyebrows and gave coldly smiled. The Yun family’s greed was evident – with Ling Tian City developing like this, anyone would feel envious. With Yun Meng Xin as the Lady of Ling Tian City, how could they just sit by? Evidently, they wanted control over Ling Tian City as well.

Beside Ling Chen, Xiao Qi angrily stamped her feet, and she said in a low and furious voice, “So it’s this again! Before, they treated her so poorly, but now that she’s the Lady of the city, they’ve started acting like this. Before, they continuously harassed big sister Meng Xin, forcing her to move. She even changed her phone number, and now they’ve come to find her in the city... they’re simply too shameless!”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Yun Meng Xin had not returned to the Yun family this entire time. After becoming famous overnight, Ling Chen did not worry about her safety because Gui Ya was personally protecting her. Now that Yun Meng Xin had secretly moved to Xiao Qi’s residence, with the Battle Alliance protecting her, she was completely safe.

“That’s right, that’s right; you’re the Yun family’s daughter, so

your city is naturally the Yun family's city. Our family should be doing everything we can to help you. Even though I, your Second Uncle, am not very familiar with the virtual world, your cousin Yun Lan is quite familiar with it. Adding on our finances, we'll be able to make Ling Tian City even more prosperous."

"Haha, Third Uncle helping his niece is right and proper. That's right, I heard that the newly expanded region doesn't have anyone managing it yet. How about allowing Third Uncle to manage it? Don't you know your Third Uncle's abilities?"

Hearing their words, rage was written all over the 2 Fairies' faces, and they looked at Yun Meng Xin worriedly. Both of them could tell that these 3 men were Lady Yun's relatives, but their words and actions completely disgusted them. These sorts of people managing Ling Tian City was something that they could not accept.

Yun Meng Xin listened to them until they finished speaking without any changes in her eyes. Evidently, she already knew why they had come. She calmly looked over at them as she said softly, "I understand. I have many things to do, so forgive me for being unable to entertain you. If there's nothing else, please return."

"Ai, ai... Meng Xin!" Yun Zheng Fan hurriedly walked up and said hurriedly, "I know you're busy, but... but at least tell us whether it's a yes or a no so that we can make preparations."

Yun Meng Xin looked at him and said, "I'll repeat myself again: Ling Tian City doesn't just belong to me; it has many owners, and I'm simply managing it. What you're asking for isn't something that I can decide by myself."

"But, but you're the Lady of the city. If you can't decide, who can? We're doing this for you! Yun Zheng Fan said.

"Thank you for your kindness, but I'm unable to make a decision on what you've proposed." Yun Meng Xin didn't bother explaining her words and turned to leave.

Yun Zheng Fan's face twisted, but he did not have the guts to fly into a fit of rage in front of Yun Meng Xin. He lightly breathed in and said sorrowfully, "Meng Xin, make sure you think about this. I know I owe you too much, but in the end, I'm your father, and you're the Yun family's daughter. Putting all else aside, it was the Yun family that brought you up, and now that you've become so reputable, it should be time that you repaid the Yun family."

"....." Yun Meng Xin remained silent.

Xiao Qi was so angry that her face became completely red. "Despicable! They're too despicable! They know that big sister Meng Xin has a soft heart, and they're starting to attack her emotions! Why don't they think about how they treated big sister Meng Xin back then? They completely disregarded her wishes and happiness, and used her as a tool for the family. In the end, she wasn't even willing to return home, so they forbade anyone, including Yun Feng, from helping her... they're simply toooooo shameless!"

"Don't worry, Meng Xin will know what to do," Ling Chen replied as he smiled.

"Ai." Yun Zheng Fan gave another long sigh as he continued to speak, "Meng Xin, I don't want to force you, but please think about what I, and your Second Uncle and Third Uncle, have said. There's also something else – tomorrow is your grandpa's 70th birthday banquet, and you haven't come home in a long time. This time, as the Yun family's daughter, you absolutely must come back and stay for a while. After all, that's your home – I've even prepared your room for you."

"Alright," Yun Meng Xin replied as she returned to the Administrative District's Main Tower.

The 3 men looked at each other and shook their heads before leaving unhappily.

"They've finally left. I'll go and comfort big sister Meng Xin. She

must be feeling terrible right now.” After the Yun family’s 3 men left, Xiao Qi quickly ran into the Administrative District’s Main Tower.

Ling Chen stood there and frowned as he thought for a while. He picked up his communication device and said in a low voice, “Gui Ya, if nothing out of the ordinary happens, Yun Meng Xin will be attending her grandfather’s 70th birthday banquet tomorrow. Keep her safe; it’s best to bring a few people.”

Chapter 702 - 12am

After logging off, Ling Chen immediately went to Qi Yue's room but found that she was not there. He walked to the courtyard and found that she was relaxingly lying next to the man-made lake on a deck chair, reading a fashion magazine with great interest.

By now, it was early Summer, and it was the best time for sunbathing. Qi Yue's body was only covered by a thin muslin dress, her snow-white skin incredibly eye-catching. Although she was lying down, her snowy peaks stood tall and perky, and her curves were simply breathtaking. Her large, long legs were completely exposed under the sunlight, and her feet naturally dangled off of the deck chair.

Undoubtedly, Ling Chen was not immune to all of Qi Yue's enticement and seduction. Just staring at her for a few seconds caused his heart to chaotically beat and hot blood to rush around his body.

"Demoness..." Ling Chen inwardly muttered the word that he always thought of whenever he saw Qi Yue, and he walked towards her. After bringing her to the real world, Qi Yue refused to leave, and she lived the life of a rich young mistress. Everything was cooked for her or bought for her, and all she would do every day was sleep, watch soap operas, read magazines, go swimming, etc... as for doing housework, that was simply impossible.

"Qi Yue, there's something that you need to tell me today," Ling Chen said sternly as he frowned.

It was as if Qi Yue had just discovered Ling Chen's presence. She slowly put down the magazine in her hands and slowly raised her arms, hugging her proud chest. By now, her skin had a healthy red glow to it after basking in the sun, making her look incredibly bewitching.

"Little master, why did you log off so early today? Did you miss

me?” Seeing Ling Chen, a look of happiness appeared on Qi Yue’s face, and a pleasant fragrance sprang towards Ling Chen’s nose.

The enchanting fragrance almost caused Ling Chen to space out, and he subtly bit his tongue. He continued to frown as he said, “Qi Yue, you haven’t forgotten why I’ve agreed to let you stay here, right?”

“Oh... of course it’s because little master didn’t want me to leave,” Qi Yue said as she smiled coquettishly.

Ling Chen ignored her answer and continued speaking, “You said back then that you would tell me the truth about Shui Ruo’s death if I allowed you to stay here for a month... now, nearly 2 months have passed; if you still don’t tell me about Shui Ruo, I’ll take you back to the virtual world today!”

This time, Ling Chen was incredibly resolute. From his expression, if Qi Yue said anything that he didn’t want to hear, he would immediately drag her back into the virtual world without hesitation. She started to slowly pout as if she was being wronged, her red lips looking so enticing that Ling Chen wanted to go up and kiss them.

There was no man who could resist Qi Yue’s seductiveness. However, Ling Chen’s expression did not change at all, looking just as serious. Qi Yue gave in and sadly said, “Alright... I didn’t say it because I was afraid that little master would send me back to the virtual world right after I told him so then I wouldn’t be able to sleep in the same house as little master anymore...”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“But since little master is so adamant, I’ll just tell little master. However, little master needs to remain calm,” Qi Yue said as she raised her chest. Every time she blinked, it looked as if water would fall out of her crystal-like eyes.

“I trust that you won’t lie to me,” Ling Chen said calmly. His

expression was calm, but his heart was trembling... just what was this 'truth' that Qi Yue was talking about?

“It was poison.” This time, Qi Yue did not try to beat around the bush.

“Poison?” Ling Chen felt quite shocked.

“The thing that took her life was a fatal poison. However, it wasn't the Isrock Disease but something even worse than the Isrock Disease. Something so bad to the point that the Isrock Disease was completely neutralised by it and became dormant,” an earnest expression appeared on Qi Yue's face as she slowly spoke. During this time, she had increased her understanding towards things on earth, and she also knew what the Isrock Disease was.

“Poison? How is that possible...” Ling Chen felt quite confused. Shui Ruo had contracted the Isrock Disease, but it was cured by the 13223 drug from Yun Feng. Shui Ruo's body had become much better to the point that she had been essentially completely healthy, so how could she have been poisoned? He had been with her the entire time and never left her side. How could she have been poisoned?

“From what you told me about lil sis Shui Ruo's status, I used the internet to do some research, and I found a remarkable type of poison. What's interesting is that it wasn't thought to be a poison at the beginning but a miracle cure for the Isrock Disease. However, not too long ago, it was discovered that it was a fatal poison even more terrifying than the Isrock Disease. It was able to completely suppress the Isrock Disease because of how much more powerful it was, forcing the Isrock Disease to lock itself away. After it was discovered to actually be a fatal poison, it immediately became a forbidden good, and its name is... 13223.”

An explosion rang out within Ling Chen's head. Afterwards, he didn't hear anything that Qi Yue said.

13223... the 13223 drug he had received from Yun Feng... the

legendary drug that could suppress the Isrock Disease...

It was actually a poison... and it was actually what had taken away Shui Ruo's life!

That night, there were not any injuries on Shui Ruo's body, much less any signs of being attacked. After he had regained his sanity, he had always wondered about that. It turned out that she had not died because of the Long family's attacks, but... but...

"How could it be like this... How could it be like this..." Ling Chen muttered. The 13223 that had made him delirious with joy and brought Shui Ruo and him out from the abyss of despair... was actually a poison?!

This was like an incredibly cruel prank – it had given Shui Ruo and him a bubble-like sense of happiness, after which the poison had taken Shui Ruo away forever...

"If little master searches the name '13223' on the internet, you'll be able to look at its properties as well as the announcements calling for it to be forbidden. Otherwise, if it could really cure the Isrock Disease without any side effects, it would have been mass produced already."

Ling Chen thought about the last time he had went to the doctor with Shui Ruo and remembered the doctor's complicated expression when they had mentioned the '13223 drug'. Evidently, she already knew the truth about 13223 but was unable to tell them because they had already used it.

"I... see." Ling Chen's voice was filled with dryness and bitterness. The light of hope was actually the cause of Shui Ruo's death. "In that case, if we can't cure her of the poison even if she's brought back to life, then she'll immediately die again, right?"

"This poison is incredibly powerful, and it will remain within a person's body for 10 years. Back then, I wasn't trying to scare little master," Qi Yue said confidently.

Ling Chen sorrowfully sighed. Although his heart felt incredibly chaotic, his mind was quite clear. At this moment, he needed to maintain his clarity. He looked at Qi Yue as he asked, “Then tell me, how can I cure the poison within Shui Ruo’s body? Since you’ve said this, there must be a way!”

“Little master’s quite smart; I indeed do have a way.” Qi Yue’s smile filled her face as she slightly adjusted her position, causing her large, snow-white chest to enticingly ripple.

“Tell me immediately then!” Ling Chen took a step forwards as he demanded.

“I can’t do that right now.” Qi Yue slowly shook her head as she charmingly smiled. “I’ve just said a lot, and I feel tired now. At least let me rest for a little while. However, I know that little master is in a rush to know, so I’ll definitely tell little master today... the time will be... 12 am. If little master can find me at that time, I’ll tell little master everything. I won’t forgive any tardiness though.”

After speaking, Qi Yue smiled before lying back down on the deck chair and closing her eyes, continuing to enjoy the sun. Even though she had been sunbathing for the past half a month, her skin remained just as snowy-white.

Ling Chen did not continue to ask, because if Qi Yue didn’t want to say something, she would never speak no matter what he did. Even though he was in a hurry to know, he could wait until 12am.

While Ling Chen was talking to Qi Yue, neither of them noticed a small white figure silently appear on the balcony on the second floor, listening to every word they said. When Ling Chen left, the white figure silently looked at Qi Yue for a while before disappearing.

After Ling Chen returned to his room, he looked up the 13223 drug and found that it was just as Qi Yue had said.

When he had given Shui Ruo the 13223 drug, there were very few bottles of it left. In fact, very few people even knew that it existed. After it was discovered to be a fatal poison, it was still not very well-known, so it was only today that he had found out the truth about the 13223 drug. Yun Feng definitely didn't know even now, and it was likely that Gui Ya and the others still didn't know. Otherwise, they would have immediately told him.

At the very least, the 13223 drug gave Shui Ruo and him hope and allowed them to share a happy and blissful time together, though it was quite short...

“Ruo Ruo, that legend in the virtual world is definitely real. I believe it, and you need to believe it as well... you need to believe that I'll wake you up one day, and that day's coming soon...”

After closing his eyes, Ling Chen muttered inwardly for a while... he repeated those words sometimes up to tens of times per day. After opening his eyes, he picked up the phone next to him.

“Gui Ya, if Meng Xin really does return to the Yun family tomorrow, remember to bring some people. Right now, she's extremely high-profile, and there are definitely countless people eyeing her. If any of you are exposed, it'll be a risk to her safety. It's best to ask Qian Mo and Yao Ying to stay by her side.” Ling Chen warned Gui Ya about all of this because of Su'Er's premonition.

“Yes!” Gui Ya curtly replied before saying, “We've already met up with Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice; they want to come too.”

“They're essentially the same as us, so let them join,” Ling Chen said without hesitating.

“Very well... after joining, Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice's codenames will be Winter and Ice. Also, Yao Ying and Qian Mo have looked over their physiological function, and the result... says that their lifeforce isn't withering but is instead

becoming more vigorous. Their bodies are completely healthy; even healthier than normal humans. Their senses are completely fine too.”

Winter of That Year’s yells could be heard on the other side, “Ahhhhh!! Boss Ling Tian, we really weren’t lying before. My smell and taste suddenly recovered, and boss’s touch and verbal abilities were suddenly restored as well. We really don’t know why... we really weren’t lying... as for our lifeforce, that’s even more confusingggggggg. Such a kind and handsome person like me would never lie...”

Although Winter of That Year was crying out that he had been wronged, Ling Chen could tell that he was delirious with joy. He had thought that he only had 1 or 2 years to live, and now he found out that his lifeforce was incredibly vigorous and could most likely live until he was 100 years old. How could he not be delirious with joy? As for the matter with Winter of That Year and Hundred Miles of Ice, Ling Chen had always felt quite confused about them. His blood flowed through their veins, so there was a special connection between them. When he first met them, he could indeed tell that their lifeforce was withering. However, after meeting them, their lifeforces became stronger and stronger, and their senses were restored, making him feel incredibly perplexed.

Ling Chen ignored Winter of That Year and asked in a low voice, “How’s Buggy doing? It’s been so long; why hasn’t he been brought out yet?”

The ‘Buggy’ Ling Chen was talking about was the Reaper who had been caught that night when he had charged into the Long family’s residence. He was imprisoned beneath the Xuanyuan family’s residence.

“His wounds have fully healed, and with his abilities, it’ll be incredibly easy for him to escape. A few days ago, I snuck in and found Buggy... he said that Long Zheng Yang would occasionally come to see him and seemed to have some sort of agenda. He wants

to find out Long Zheng Yang's agenda before leaving, and he also wants to find out some things about master."

"Oh?" Ling Chen asked.

"....." Gui Ya slightly hesitated but then added, "Buggy says that master's mother seems to still be alive. He wants to stay in the Xuanyuan family's prison and investigate a few things, such as who master's mother is and why master was treated like that back then... actually, Buggy told me not to tell master about any of this before he got to the bottom of it."

Ling Chen's heart lightly trembled, and a person's figure appeared in his mind. He looked up and sighed, "I see. Tell Buggy to put his safety first. Also, tell him to use his time there to investigate the Long family's 'Dragon's Vein' if possible."

"Yes."

Chapter 702.5 - The Missing Godchild

An unknown space.

The lighting was quite dim, and fog swirled around. Neither the sky, the earth, nor end could be seen in this space. Only a gigantic, light-blue crystal ball giving off a dreamy blue light, providing the only source of light in this space, could be seen. The crystal ball was about 1 metre in diameter and had fog swirling around within it, making it impossible to clearly see what it contained. The crystal ball slowly gave off blue motes of light, making it seem as if there were blue fireflies dancing in the air, painting a dream-like world.

All around the crystal ball was darkness, and no living or dead creatures could be seen.

Suddenly, a grey orb of light silently appeared above the blue crystal ball, forming a person's figure. However, it was too hazy, and only the rough outline could be seen, making it so that no features of the person's body or face could be seen. As this figure appeared, the space seemed to freeze, and the blue motes of light stopped moving around. After a short pause, they started to tremble as if they were afraid of something.

“After countless years of hiding and thousands of years of waiting, the power of a god will once again descend... this is a world created by gods – how could those lowly creatures be the sovereigns!”

The grey figure looked down at the blue crystal ball as it spoke in a low and hoarse voice. The voice had an unpleasantness to it, and it sounded as if the figure was using a fake voice.

The blue crystal ball slightly shook as if it was trembling in terror after hearing this voice.

At that moment, tens of metres in front of the crystal ball,

another grey figure appeared. This figure was also humanoid, but it was much taller and bigger than a normal human's. It also had 2 sharp and thick 'horns' protruding off of its head. As soon as he appeared, he subconsciously looked up to the figure above and knelt on a single knee in terror. "I greet your majesty! I wonder why your majesty has summoned me and what orders he has."

As he spoke, 2 other figures appeared next to the crystal ball. One was of medium-height but was incredibly wide, while the other was incredibly small and skinny, looking like a hunch-backed skeleton. They also knelt on one knee as they paid their respects to the figure above. "I greet your majesty."

The grey figure in the air slowly looked over the 3 people and said calmly, "Rahu, how have the plans for the destruction of the Pegasi Star and Galois Star come along?"

The tall figure called Rahu immediately replied, "Replying to your majesty, after the Earth Flame Plan and Galois Plan were completed, I immediately set about the destruction of the Pegasi Star and Galois Star. The Pegasi Star has been completely destroyed without even a remnant left, and the Galois Star's core has been destroyed and is currently collapsing. In another 2 months, it will be completely destroyed."

"Very good." The figure in the air nodded. "You've never disappointed me before. Mad Scientist, how is the Mystic Moon Plan going?"

"Heheheh..." A sharp, hoarse, and incredibly unpleasant peal of laughter sounded out from the short and skinny person. "Rest assured, o great King, the Mystic Moon Plan is going very smoothly. Even with tens of billions of humans, they won't be able to escape my hands. The Mystic Moon Plan has been 70% completed, and in a year and a half, I'll be able to perfectly complete it."

"Hmph," The figure in the air coldly snorted. "Mad Scientist, I've

never doubted your powers before, but I'm unable to be at ease with your personality. I heard from Rahu that while going about the Mystic Moon Plan, you also simultaneously carried out other experiments. You should know how important the Godchild Plan is to me; I hope that you won't allow any mishaps to occur!"

"Heheh..." After being rebuked by King, the short and skinny did not seem to mind at all, and he instead strangely laughed. "Rest assured, your majesty, this genius' experiments will not affect the Mystic Moon Plan at all, nor will they drag out the Mystic Moon Plan. Instead, the experiments might just bring your majesty a great surprise, heheheh..."

"Hmph, do as you will. Wan Chong, how is the Burning Heavens Plan going?" King turned to look at the incredibly wide and stout figure.

The figure referred to as Wan Chong hurriedly lowered its head as it replied, "Replying to your majesty, the Burning Heavens Plan has nearly reached its end, and the Xiya Star has completely fallen into my hands. Although the Xiya Star's population is only one-tenth of that of Earth's, the Xiya Star's people are much more powerful than those from Earth, especially the queen. She possesses the bloodline of an ancient god clan, and the Xiya Star's people's faith in her has caused them to continuously struggle. As such, it will take some more time to obtain all of the Xiya Star's people's souls. However, rest assured, your majesty, all they will be able to do is struggle. In 2 years at most, the Burning Heavens Plan will be perfectly completed."

"Bloodline of an ancient god clan? Hmph! After the gods all fell, those god clan's bloodlines are merely tiny marks that the gods left behind on living creatures. With the tiny bit of divine power they have, how can they even think of comparing themselves to gods?" King replied dismissively. "Rahu, after destroying the Galois Star, go to the Xiya Star to help Wan Chong carry out the Burning Heavens Plan."

“Yes!” Rahu replied as he lowered his head.

Wan Chong instantly became excited. “With boss helping, completing the Burning Heavens Plan will be incredibly easy. Those stubborn Xiya Star’s people will immediately realize how foolish resisting is. With boss, I believe that within a year... no! Within half a year, the Burning Heavens Plan will be completed!”

At that moment, another figure silently appeared to the east of the crystal ball. Different to the other figures, this figure gave off a mysterious, pure-white light, and an extremely enchanting air. When the figure formed, it was one of a woman.

When this woman appeared, everyone fell silent. King looked at her and said, “Yue, you’ve come.”

“What is it?” The woman referred to as ‘Yue’ calmly replied. Her voice was soft and charming, but it contained no emotions. Not only was she not as humble as the other 3 people, she even gave off an air of impatience.

However, King was not angry at all, nor did the other 3 figures show any displeasure. Evidently, this was how this woman always acted in front of ‘King’. King did not speak too hurriedly or too slowly. “I want to know how the Shura Plan is going.”

“Half,” Yue calmly replied.

“Half?” King’s voice became a bit strange as he sighed, “No less than expected from my good little sister. You’ve actually completed half of it within such a short period of time. From the looks of things, a new Shura will be created within two years. I thought that it would take decades, if not centuries.”

“Ohh! Shura, what an interesting name,” the skinny and short figure’s shrill voice sounded out. “O glorious King, allow me to ignorantly ask: from what I know, the Shura Plan is to create a Shura and then use the Shura’s blood to fill the Godchild’s body, allowing the World Destroying Plan to begin... I was wondering

why the Shura's blood would have such a miraculous effect.”

“Shura... a long time ago, I seem to have heard King mention this name – King said that the Shura was what caused those god clans to fall. In the history of the Mystic Moon Star, which the Mad Scientist modified, such a being existed, and it caused a great devastation to the Mystic Moon Star,” Rahu replied. “King, is the ‘Shura Plan’ to create another one of these creatures?”

King's voice suddenly became low and heavy, “How could the Mystic Moon Star's Shura compare to the Shura from back then? The Shura is the only god among gods, and it is closer to a demon god. The Shura from back then destroyed all gods by himself... that's right, it was by himself. After that, he destroyed himself, making it so that there were no longer any True Gods in the world. The Mystic Moon Star's ‘Shura’ was just a merciless murderer who was stained with some of the Shura's ruthlessness and power through the Lunar Scourge! He did not deserve to be called a Shura!”

“Lunar Scourge?” Rahu's voice sounded out. “According to my knowledge of the Mystic Moon Star, this item seems to have been created by a clan called the Moon God Clan. Could it be that this isn't true?”

“Moon God Clan? Hahahaha...” King wildly laughed. “Now that there aren't anymore True Gods, even ants dare to call themselves gods? The Lunar Scourge was the thing that the Shura treasured the most. Even though he destroyed himself, he did not destroy the Lunar Scourge because it was given to him by his beloved. Even though he became a Shura, he wore it always. Afterwards, it was contaminated by the Shura's divine power and became the vilest item in existence – how could a mere Moon God Clan create it? Humans records are simply ridiculous.

“However, in order to carry out the Shura Plan, only a fake Shura created by the Lunar Scourge can do. Although a fake Shura does not have the Shura's power, it has the Shura's ruthlessness and

bloodlust. Not only is the newly-born Godchild powerful and incredibly intelligent, it has a pure heart. This sort of Godchild is impossible to control. However, if the Godchild is bathed in the Shura's blood before it is born, the Shura's ruthlessness and bloodlust will enter the Godchild's veins and arteries, causing it to become bloodthirsty and vicious. When that time comes, controlling the Godchild will be incredibly easy."

"So it was like this. No less than expected from King to be able to think so thoroughly," Wan Chong said in praise.

"I'm not interested in the Shura Plan at all. I just hope that the 'revival technique' is not something you've made up to convince me to carry out the Shura Plan. Otherwise, even if it's you, I won't forgive you!" Yue said in a cold voice.

King fell into silence and then slowly said, "Since it was left behind by the ancient god clans, it should be true. However, Yue, you don't need to be so obsessed about this. After all, she's..."

"Don't say any more!" Yue cut King off. "I only know that she's my mother! You can disregard everything to become a god, but I'm not like that. No matter how ordinary she is, she's still my mother. If one gives up his or her humanity, what point is there in becoming a True God?"

King was speechless.

"If there's nothing else, I'll be going now."

After saying this, without waiting for a response from King, the figure vanished.

"Revival technique? Does such a thing really exist? Even the True Gods who died won't be able to be revived – this is one of the natural laws of the universe," Rahu said in confusion.

"Hmph, it's just a legend. If it's true, then good. If it's false, then no matter. Since she's so determined, let her do as she wants. All I want is for her to produce a Shura," King coldly replied.

King's body slowly descended and came closer to the blue crystal ball. Looking at the crystal ball, King's figure started to slightly tremble. "This mysterious aura can only come from a True God! The God Clan that was destroyed by the Shura will once again appear, and it will rule over this vast universe."

King stretched out his hand and gently pressed it against the crystal ball. "After the Mystic Moon Plan and Burning Heavens Plan are completed, the Godchild will mature. Before this happens, we need to keep the Godchild asleep and fully seal her power and consciousness. Otherwise, the Godchild Plan will be much more difficult if the Godchild wakes up. It's time to seal her power again; that's why I personally came here today."

As King spoke, his hand gave off a blinding light. However, the light suddenly vanished and King's body violently trembled. A berserk aura swept through the entire space, followed by King's mad screams, "Arghhh!!! Why is it like this!!! Why is it like this?!"

King's sudden outburst caused Rahu, Wan Chong, and the Mad Scientist to all feel incredibly shocked, and they asked, "King! What happened?"

"I've been played! I've been played by the Godchild!!" King roared as the grey light around him twisted in a berserk manner. "The Godchild's not in there anymore! She's escaped! She's escaped!!"

King's words caused Rahu, Wan Chong, and the Mad Scientist to feel greatly dismayed. They had been planning for countless years, and they had finally created the Godchild. King's words caused all of them to feel as if they had been struck by lightning, and King even more so felt like the sky had collapsed on him. After all, the Godchild was what he had put everything into. Rahu came up and said shakily, "King... could it be that there's a mistake? Hasn't the Godchild's power and consciousness been sealed by you? How could she escape? Moreover, this crystal ball is the 'forbidden god space' that King spent countless years creating. Even if the

Godchild's consciousness and mind weren't sealed, it would be impossible for her to escape!"

"No! She played me; she played me!!" King continued to roar. "I underestimated the Godchild's intelligence. Even though she's only a youth, she's still the Godchild! She tricked me and used some method that I was unable to detect to escape. She then created a clone of herself that looked asleep, and what I saw before was her lying to me the entire time! She's unable to escape from the forbidden god space, but this space only restricts humans, while other creatures can freely enter and exit. She must have used her newly-awakened divine power to open a gate to here from elsewhere to guide a creature in here to take her out! That's the only possibility! Ahh!! This crafty Godchild! She played me! I was too careless... too careless!!!"

Rahu, Wan Chong, and the Mad Scientist looked at each other and asked fearfully, "King, what should we do now then?"

"What should we do? Of course it's to look for her! The Godchild is still in her youth, and her power has only just awakened, so I'm still able to suppress her. After she matures, no one will be able to control her anymore, and the Godchild Plan will fail! We need to find her immediately... I'll personally go to find her!! Even if she escapes to the edge of the universe, I'll bring her back. Continue with the Mystic Moon Plan and the Burning Heavens Plan. No matter what you have to do, within 1 year... no, finish it all within half a year!"

"... Yes! We won't disappoint your majesty!"

"Mad Scientist, tell Yue to cancel the Shura Plan! Now that the Godchild has woken up, the Shura's blood will not be able to affect her... we need to find the Godchild immediately!!"

All of the figures disappeared in an instant. Cracks slowly began to spread along the blue crystal ball, causing it to shatter. A white fog slowly floated out from within it, and after it completely

dissipated, all that was left was shattered blue glass shards. The thing that had been within it was long gone...

Chapter 703 – Enchanting Moon

Evening, 11:55pm.

Tian Tian and Shadissika were both asleep, while Xuanyuan Dia Wu was still in the game. Normally, Ling Chen would be in the game as well during this time. However, today, he exited the game and silently walked out of his room towards Qi Yue's room.

Qi Yue told him to find her at 12am – only then would she tell him how to get rid of the poison within Shui Ruo's body. As for why she chose this time, Ling Chen had no idea... however, since it was a time chosen by that demoness, it definitely didn't bode well!

Ling Chen put his hand on the doorknob and gently turned it, causing the door to open. However, there was no one inside. Ling Chen stared – she wasn't in her room? Could it be that the demoness wanted to play hide-and-seek?

Ling Chen glanced at the clock on the wall and saw that there was less than 5 minutes left until it was 12am. If Qi Yue really was hiding from him, he wasn't sure if he could find her within the remaining time.

However, he understood Qi Yue's character – she most likely wouldn't do such a thing! Ling Chen closed Qi Yue's door with a 'bang', and just as he was about to call her name, he suddenly noticed that the light in the bathroom was on... and that there was the sound of flowing water from within.

All of the others were either sleeping or within the game, while Chao Ying and Chao Xi never used this bathroom. In that case, there one was only person who could be using it...

Qi Yue!!Ling Chen's heart suddenly jumped.

She had told him to come and find her at 12am, yet she was in the shower!?

What was she intending to do??

As Ling Chen walked closer to the bathroom, the sound of water became clearer. In fact, he could even hear the sound of hands lathering soap on skin. Standing in front of the bathroom door, a complicated look appeared on Ling Chen's face, and he knocked on the door while saying in a low voice, "Qi Yue, immediately get out here!"

Despite the sound of water from within, Ling Chen was certain that Qi Yue could hear his voice. However, after he spoke, there was no response from within. The sound of splashing and flowing water continued and did not stop at all – it was as if Qi Yue had not heard his voice or noticed that he was outside.

"Fudge!" Ling Chen gritted his teeth and knocked on the door even harder. "Qi Yue, I've found you, so... get... out!" All that answered him was the rage-inducing sound of water. Just as he was about to call out to her for the third time, a soft voice came from within, "It's nearly 12am, and the little master still hasn't found me. If I don't see little master by 12am, I will never tell him the things about lil sis Shui Ruo... poor lil sis Shui Ruo. Even if she's brought back by little master through his hard work, she'll have to die so quickly again. What a pitiful and sad fate... looks like there's only 1 minute left; will little master really not come? Could it be that little master has fallen in love with me to the point that he doesn't care about lil sis Shui Ruo anymore..."

Those words and that voice... apart from that demoness Qi Yue, who else could it be? Moreover, her muttering caused Ling Chen to gnash his teeth – evidently, she was baiting him in. Without a doubt, if he really went in, he would fall into Qi Yue's trap, and the consequences were evident. However, because this concerned Shui Ruo, he had to do it."

"Alright, demoness, you win this time!" Ling Chen glanced at the time and did not hesitate anymore. He pulled the door open, and the instant he saw what was inside, he was completely dumbfounded.

Steam filled the bathroom, and it contained a sweet fragrance, making one feel intoxicated. Water continued flowing, and a gentle light illuminated the woman in the shower. The soft light danced across her bottom, illuminating 2 flawless arcs, and in front of her chest, her proud breasts were like 2 gigantic, snowy mountains. Countless water droplets rained down from the peaks – some directly fell down, while others slid across her shocking curves until they reached her feet. Because of the hot water, Qi Yue's skin glowed red, and her lustrous black hair was spread out, not at all blocking her beautiful face. Facing Ling Chen, who had suddenly come in, she did not try to hide her body at all. Instead, she smiled, narrowing her watery, upturned eyes, and looked down, giving off an incredibly seductive air as if she was marvelling at her own flawless body while at the same time allowing Ling Chen to look all over it.

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded, and he couldn't move his gaze away no matter what. This was because Qi Yue's body was not covered at all and completely revealed to him. At such a close distance, he could clearly see wherever he wanted to see...

From the day he had met Qi Yue, she had continuously used her body to seduce him. However, it was all in a flirtatious manner – Ling Chen was sure that she would quickly avoid him if he ever did leap on her. In other words, she was simply toying with him to mess with him, and with her scheming mind and background, how could she casually allow a human to have his way with her? And yet, although she was always wearing revealing clothing and making suggestive actions, she never revealed her most private parts to him.

Ling Chen knew all of this. Before he had opened the door, he had expected to see a fully-dressed Qi Yue about to tease him. However, he never thought that he would really see Qi Yue showering... just how seductive was Qi Yue? Ling Chen was certain that there was no woman in the world who could drive him crazier

than her. Normally, he was afraid of even being too close to her, and even with his incredibly powerful mind, keeping himself in check was difficult. Now, he had seen her entire body whilst caught off guard, and in just a few moments, his soul flew out of his body and his eyes started burning. The water suddenly stopped, causing the bathroom to fall into silence. Qi Yue seemed to only just discover him, and she raised her hand and tucked some hair behind her ear as she hazily smiled. “Little master, do you want to shower with me?”

Ling Chen, who had been desperately suppressing his desires while reminding himself why he had come here, felt suffocated when he looked at Qi Yue’s chest, his mind buzzing. Qi Yue’s clear eyes were simply too enchanting, and they looked as if they were covered by a smoky mist... those eyes and her incredibly sexy, naked body were enough to instantly destroy any man’s self-control.

Following this, Ling Chen’s defences crumbled.

With a naked, peerlessly beautiful woman standing in front of him seducing him, he would doubt if he was still a man if he didn't leap on her. Just as his self-control crumbled, Ling Chen’s eyes shot out a look of lust and greed, and he leapt on Qi Yue like a ravenous wolf. He hugged her incredibly slim waist and ran his hands up her beautiful long legs. He pressed her down on the wet ground, causing her large breasts to shake.

“Ahh... little master, no, I’m still a... a...” Qi Yue’s voice was incredibly soft, and her mesmerising fragrance gently blew onto Ling Chen’s face. Her beautiful eyes were tightly closed, and her face incredibly red. However, she did not resist and allowed his body to press down against hers.

“Ahh...” Qi Yue cried out, shaking her head and hair about, and subconsciously wrapped her arms tightly around the man who was pressing down on her. She endured the tearing pain, and her lips slightly parted, giving out moans that she could no longer hear.

The seductiveness in her eyes slowly disappeared and was replaced by a blankness as a tear appeared at the corner of her eye.

After a while, they finally settled down.

The bathroom was in complete disarray, showing how intense their 'battle' had been. After rampaging for half the night, the 2 people were still intertwined. Qi Yue sat against the wall with a satisfied and happy look on her face, while Ling Chen was lying on her large chest, completely motionless as if he had fallen asleep. At this moment, an abnormal red light flashed on his chest, and a crescent moon the size of a fist appeared there. After appearing for an instant, it slowly disappeared.

By now, Qi Yue's eyes had become clear again. She looked at her position and Ling Chen sleeping, feeling complicated. "I'm sorry... to me, this is the best and most direct method... at the very least, it's my compensation to you... I'll use the thing most precious to me to compensate you..." Qi Yue muttered as she looked at Ling Chen. She then closed her eyes as she softly asked, "What's... your name?"

"Ling... Chen..." Ling Chen did not move, but his mouth gave a sleepy reply.

"Where did you get that girl called Tian Tian from?"

"Beijing... outskirts... a meteor fell, then we met Tian Tian. She said that she was from a place called the Xiya Star... I know... she wasn't lying... but just forgot many things..." Ling Chen said.

"Xiya Star... Demigod Godhood... so it was..." Qi Yue muttered to herself. However, she did not continue to ask, and it was as if she already knew the answer and was not very interested. She fell silent for a moment before softly asking, "What sort of person am I in your eyes?"

"You're... a very beautiful, seductive, and dangerous person," Ling Chen dreamily replied.

“Then you must despise me, right?” Qi Yue asked self-mockingly. “I don’t despise you... although you feel quite dangerous, when I encounter danger, I can tell that you are truly worried for me... even though I don’t know your goal, you at the very least gave me hope for reawakening Ruo Ruo and even protected Ruo Ruo’s body for me. You also told me many things that I didn’t know... I’m filled with... gratitude... towards you, so I know that even though you’ve been using me for an unknown goal, I’m unable to stray from the path that you’re leading me down... because I want to reawaken Ruo Ruo, and I also want to help you fulfil your wish...”

Qi Yue’s body gently trembled, and she looked up at the ceiling, feeling quite dazed.

“I would rather that you only feel wariness or even just contempt,” Qi Yue muttered. After a while, she raised a snow-white hand and pushed Ling Chen deeper into her chest. “It’s just that I’m unable to have any regrets, and perhaps I won’t regret. Once ‘Enchanting Moon’ has been sown, unless an ancient god power intervenes, even I will be unable to remove it. 3 months after ‘Enchanting Moon’ is sown, I will be able to control your body and soul, and you will be unable to resist my commands. As for me, I will only be able to have you as my man – if I even touch another man’s finger, I’ll feel the pain of ten thousand arrows piercing through my heart...”

“That day will come, and this is the only way to save you...”

Chapter 704 - Grievous News

It was now 3am.

The tightly-shut bathroom door finally opened, and Ling Chen softly walked out. His steps were slightly shaky, and his arms were down by his side. His eyes were also closed as if he was sleepwalking. He unconsciously walked towards his own room, closed the door, and began sleeping on his bed.

Following this, Qi Yue, who had put her clothes on, walked out of the bathroom towards her own room.

At this moment, Shadissika, who was 'sleeping', silently opened her eyes. Within the darkness, her eyes twinkled like stars without a trace of sleepiness within them. She sat up and looked at Ling Chen, who had collapsed next to her, and stretched out her hand, placing it on his chest. Following this, a colourless light invisible to the eye was slowly released.

Clang...

A red-pink crescent moon mark slowly appeared – it was the 'Enchanting Moon' that Qi Yue had left on his body.

A serious look that Ling Chen had never seen before appeared on Shadissika's tender, snow-white face. After maintaining that posture for a while, she brought her fingers together... in that instant, the mark on Ling Chen's chest suddenly jumped. It then strangely left Ling Chen's body, as if guided by a mysterious power, and then travelled to Shadissika's hand. Shadissika immediately tightly closed her hand, and as a colourless light shone out, the pink mark was turned into countless tiny pink motes of light and scattered in the air before disappearing.

"Enchanting Moon's effects on Ling Chen have disappeared, but its effects on you will never disappear. That's your punishment for trying to scheme against him," Shadissika muttered in a low voice.

When the dots of pink in the air disappeared, she lowered her head and looked at the Ling Chen sleep. Her gaze became gentler, and she moved him into a more comfortable position. She smiled, kissed his forehead, and hugged his arm before closing her eyes and going to sleep.

The next day, it was already 10am when Ling Chen woke up. Ling Chen sat up and suddenly felt a wave of powerlessness, causing him to almost fall back onto the bed.

No way! Could it be that he messed around with that demoness too much last night? Ling Chen subconsciously rubbed his eyes, feeling incredibly depressed... this was simply illogical! He was Adam, who had walked out from heaven and hell! His body was essentially invincible – let alone a single woman, even if he had 10 or 20 in a single night and did it a hundred times, he still shouldn't feel this tired... putting the tiredness aside, he even felt incredibly weak!

Ling Chen quickly thought back to the events from the night before... that's right, he had gone mad on Qi Yue's body for 2-3 hours, after which... he had fallen asleep?!

What the hell! Could that woman really be a demoness? Could she have learned some technique that converts a man's Yang energy into her own Yin energy?! Otherwise, how could this have happened? Back when he was only in his teens, he had done it with Fey for an entire day and night, but he did not feel this weak.

Ling Chen jumped down from the bed, and the instant he landed, a wave of dizziness passed through his head, his vision flickering... these signs all told him that he had overspent himself to the point that his body had become incredibly weak.

“Could it be because I haven't done intense exercise in a while? That shouldn't be it!” Ling Chen muttered to himself. Just as he was about to open the door, the door was suddenly pushed open as a fragrant, violet figure rushed in. It was Qi Yue with her beautiful,

voluptuous body, as well as perfect S line. She seemed to be in a rush, and she almost ran into Ling Chen's chest.

“Little master.” Seeing Ling Chen, Qi Yue bewitchingly smiled as her voice became incredibly gentle, “Did you ‘sleep’ well last night?”

After waking up, the first person Ling Chen saw was Qi Yue. She still looked incredibly beautiful, but she seemed to have more charm about her. Being so close to her stunning face, busty chest, slim waist, and long legs, Ling Chen's blood started to boil, and his body's temperature started to rise.

Qi Yue's seductiveness was simply unrivalled, and after tasting her, even Ling Chen found it difficult to control himself around her. Luckily, something even more important came to his attention. “Last night... you didn't tell me how to get rid of Ruo Ruo's poison!”

After saying this, Ling Chen's face became slightly red. He clearly remembered that he had leapt at Qi Yue and gone at it madly, and then... he felt that he was very tired, and after closing his eyes, he had fallen asleep – it wasn't that Qi Yue hadn't said it, but that he hadn't asked! Moreover, he had fallen asleep in front of this demoness... this was simply... too shameful! Too embarrassing! Hopefully she didn't think that he was actually a lightweight...

Seeing him ask so bitterly, Qi Yue giggled, pursed her red lips, and said, “I wanted to tell little master last night, but little master only wanted to bully me and didn't give me an opportunity to say it... alright, alright, I'll tell little master. In actuality, little master doesn't need to worry about the poison in lil sis Shui Ruo's body. Because she's been placed by little master into the Fairy Fountain, she's long since been completely purified by the Fairy Fountain's water. Right, breakfast is on the table – cute little Sha Sha has heated it up for little master many times, so remember to eat it.”

After saying this, Qi Yue gave him a flirtatious look before

walking out, leaving Ling Chen standing there, motionless as a statue.

He had been worried for an entire day, yet the answer he received was that the poison within Shui Ruo's body was long gone. He wasn't sure if he should be happy or depressed. Happy because after he brought Shui Ruo back, she would be fine; depressed because he had been completely toyed with by that demoness!

However...

Last night, he had really done that demoness...

It actually happened...

In actuality, Ling Chen never thought that it would actually happen. The fact that she was a character from a game was not important. However, he was certain that Qi Yue had always been plotting against him and using him. In more direct terms, although Qi Yue always called him 'little master', she was always just using him. Since he was a tool, how could she allow him to do it with her?

And yet, that had actually happened last night. What's more, she was the one who had initiated. What made it even more difficult for Ling Chen to stay calm was that... she was actually a virgin.

Ling Chen felt a bit hazy – if she was just using him, why would she do that? Yesterday, she was still a virgin, which meant that even though she was incredibly seductive, she definitely wasn't an easy woman.

Ling Chen simply couldn't understand, but the way he felt about Qi Yue completely changed. Although she had been using him this entire time, she had willingly given herself to him last night, allowing him to be her first man. As such, no matter what her goal was, she didn't want to harm him... at the very least, most of his worries were unnecessary.

After thinking about that, Ling Chen silently let out a breath. When relaxed, a man's nature would naturally be revealed. Thinking back to Qi Yue's naked body, a lascivious light shone in Ling Chen's eyes... before, he could only endure it and suppress it, but now, that demoness was his woman! What did he need to endure for anymore? Yesterday was definitely an anomaly... after he was full after eating, he would show that demoness his strength at night!!

After thinking about that, Ling Chen's eyes became much clearer, and he marched right to the dining table.

Around dusk, Ling Chen received news from Gui Ya. Just as he had expected, she had left for the Yun family in the afternoon to be at her grandfather's 70th birthday banquet. She, who had been used as a tool for the Yun family, would cause a massive disturbance by going back.

“You have to protect her safety. Especially so... because Long Tian Yun has been silent for too long; this isn't consistent with his personality. He's definitely looking for an opportunity to take revenge, so you have to be very, very careful,” Ling Chen said.

“Yao Ying and Qian Mo will be right by her side, while Gui Shou, Leng Feng and Leng Mei will infiltrate the Yun family and protect them from the shadows, so please rest assured, master... oh, Su'Er also came. She most likely knew that Yun Meng Xin would go, so she went with her father.”

“Su'Er?” Ling Chen thought for a moment before saying, “All in all, just be careful and don't let down your guard. Yun Meng Xin will most likely spend the night at the Yun family's residence, so tell Yao Ying and Qian Mo to stay in the room with her.”

After hanging up, Ling Chen frowned. With Yao Ying and Qian Mo by her side, as well as Gui Ya protecting her, it was essentially impossible for anything to happen to Yun Meng Xin. However, there was still an ominous feeling within his heart.

“Is it because I’m thinking too much about Su’Er’s words?” Ling Chen muttered before shaking his head.

Yun Meng Xin’s grandfather’s birthday banquet went quite late, and everything had gone quite smoothly. After seeing off the guests who were not staying, it was about 10pm. Yun Meng Xin would naturally stay overnight... after all, this was her home.

Su’Er did not go back, and she instead went to find Yun Meng Xin, and the 2 sisters slept together in Yun Meng Xin’s room.

At night, everything was peaceful in the Yun family. Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er talked on the bed for a long time before sleeping. Gui Ya and the others did not sleep at all the entire night, remaining incredibly tense. Soon, a whole night passed, and nothing had happened.

In the morning, Su Hong Cheng personally came to take Su’Er home, and Yun Meng Xin refused the Yun family’s requests to stay behind and left the Yun family. Although she was born into the Yun family, it was not a place where she wanted to stay. After all, in that family, profits were more important than feelings, and she didn’t want to become one of them.

“Was I really just thinking too much?” After Su’Er went home, Yun Meng Xin returned to the Xiao family’s residence. From the previous day to today, nothing out of the ordinary had happened. After receiving a report from Gui Ya, Ling Chen was able to finally relax.

Su Hang was too far from Beijing, and Meng Xin’s status was too special. Since she wasn’t willing to return to the Yun family, what about coming here? She would at least be completely safe here...

As Ling Chen was thinking, his phone started ringing. Ling Chen looked at the screen and saw that it was Gui Ya, who he had just gotten off the phone with.

“What is it?”

“Master! We don’t know why, but Yun Meng Xin suddenly fainted,” Gui Ya said in a cold voice.

“She fainted? Why?” Ling Chen’s eyebrows jumped.

“We don’t know. Yao Ying and Qian Mo are currently checking up on her, but it shouldn’t be anything serious. Perhaps it’s because she’s been working too hard lately...” Gui Ya’s voice was suddenly cut out by a woman’s scream, and Ling Chen heard Qian Mo’s shocked voice, “I-Isrock Disease!!”

Bang...

Ling Chen’s body swayed and his phone fell heavily to the ground.

Chapter 705 - Nightmare

Isrock Disease was one of the most terrifying things in the world to Ling Chen. This was because he fell into an abyss of despair because of the Isrock Disease back then. If he hadn't been taken to 'heaven', he would have died long ago. Shui Ruo's parents, his adoptive parents, also died because of the Isrock Disease, and Shui Ruo also contracted it. During his lifetime, almost all of his nightmares came from the Isrock Disease. The term 'Isrock Disease' was a synonym for the devil, and it was his worst nightmare. Deep in his heart, he wished that those words would never appear in his life again after Shui Ruo woke up.

When Qian Mo cried out 'Isrock Disease', Ling Chen felt as if he had been struck by lightning. The trauma that this terrifying disease had brought him once again covered his entire soul.

"Impossible! It's definitely wrong! How could Meng Xin contract the Isrock Disease! She was born in the Yun family, and she definitely had the best vaccines!" Ling Chen picked up the phone and roared into it. No one knew clearer than him how terrifying the Isrock Disease was. Once someone contracted the Isrock Disease, it spelled a death sentence for them... this was something that everyone knew.

"Master, you must remain calm," Gui Ya's voice trembled. Of course, he too knew what the Isrock Disease meant. Beside him, Qian Mo and Yao Ying's faces were deathly pale, and they profusely sweat as they checked Yun Meng Xin's condition again, praying that the result they just received was a mistake, but...

"It's definitely the Isrock Disease. Moreover, it's a very active type of Isrock Disease, so she must have contracted it within the past 24 hours. It's impossible to tell how she contracted it..."

Ling Chen gripped the phone in his hand tighter and tighter as the last bit of hope evaporated. He was very familiar with Qian Mo

and Yao Ying's abilities – the equipment that they used was from the Mad Scientist, and it was more sophisticated than even the best equipment on Earth. This equipment has never made mistakes before. At this moment, he heard a woman's voice, "Wait! If she just contracted it, the Isrock Disease shouldn't be so active. Unless... Unless..." It was Yao Ying's voice.

"Unless this Isrock Disease was stimulated by special means and cultivated to its most active state! This sort of Isrock Disease can't be prevented even with the world's best vaccines! Moreover, because of how active it is, it's incredibly contagious!"

Ling Chen: "!!!!!"

"Immediately tell the Xiao family, and tell them not to come near Meng Xin! Qi Qi... where's Qi Qi? Did she come in contact with Meng Xin?" Ling Chen spoke breathlessly, his expression incredibly dark.

"The Xiao family's Princess is currently in the game and hasn't come into contact with Yun Meng Xin. I'll immediately quarantine this room. Xiao Fei has gone to tell the Xiao family's young master, and I'm sure that Yun Feng will know soon," Yao Ying said worriedly.

"Ding..."

A soft sound rang out – it was the sound of the Reapers' phones receiving a call or message. Qian Mo picked up her phone, and after listening for a few seconds, she cried out, "What?!"

"What happened?" Gui Ya hurriedly looked over at Qian Mo, who was panicking.

"Gui Shou says that Su'Er... after Su'Er returned home, she suddenly fainted and her face became extremely pale... it's possible... it's possible..." Qian Mo's voice trembled, and was unable to keep speaking.

"W-What?!"

Ling Chen, who heard all of this, felt his entire body tremble... yesterday, Gui Ya had reported to him that Su'Er had attended Yun Meng Xin's grandfather's birthday banquet with her father, but had not returned home with Su Hong Cheng, and had instead spent the night with Yun Meng Xin in her room...

Bang!

Ling Chen's phone once again hit the floor, and he felt as if he had lost all of his strength. He heavily fell into the chair behind him, his eyes losing their focus.

How could things turn out like this... was this reality... or a nightmare...

Could this be what Su'Er's premonition had been about? Why did it have to be so cruel? Ling Chen felt that even seeing Ling Tian City completely destroyed would be a thousand times better than the despair he was currently feeling.

"Big brother, what happened?"

"Ling Chen!"

When Tian Tian and Shadissika heard Ling Chen heavily sit down, they, who had been organising clothes in their room, ran out. They stood at Ling Chen's left and right, and when they saw Ling Chen's expression, they were both greatly shocked.

Ling Chen shook his head, wanting to squeeze out a smile, but he was simply unable to do so. He gently hugged the 2 girls and said with a dry voice, "Tian Tian, Sha Sha, stay with me here and never go out... there aren't any bad people, danger, or diseases here..."

"Big brother, what's wrong? What happened? Big brother..." Tian Tian immediately felt that something was wrong, and her eyes began to fill with tears. Apart from when Shui Ruo had left, she had never seen Ling Chen in so much despair.

Shadissika blinked and silently looked at Ling Chen for a long time before coming close and resting her head against his shoulder.

She softly said into his ears, “Ling Chen, you can’t be like this. You need to believe that everything will be fine. Bad people can be defeated, dangers won’t appear, and diseases aren’t all that scary. After all, I know many ways to get rid of diseases.”

Ling Chen’s mouth moved, but he was still unable to smile. Looking at the worried gazes in the 2 girls’ eyes, he desperately wanted to comfort them but couldn’t. He closed his eyes and silently hugged them tightly...

“There’s a way to cure the Isrock Disease.”

Qi Yue’s voice sounded out from behind Ling Chen, causing his body to quiver. He stood up and looked at Qi Yue, who had suddenly appeared, and he felt so excited that his lips trembled. If anyone else had said those words, he wouldn’t have felt anything. However, Qi Yue was different – she didn’t belong to this world, and her experiences were far greater than his own. For her to say this, perhaps she really knew of a way to get rid of the Isrock Disease. “Qi Yue! Are you sure? It’s the Isrock Disease; are you sure you know a way to cure it?”

When Ling Chen had been talking into his phone, Qi Yue had been silently listening. Her ears were so sharp that she could hear what the people on the other side of the call were saying, which was quite extraordinary. However, this was not what Ling Chen was thinking about. His eyes burned as he stared at Qi Yue... although this demoness was dangerous, with her experiences and power, he was unable to doubt her words.

Qi Yue nodded, smiling when she saw the hope in Ling Chen’s eyes. “It’s not important whether it’s the Isrock Disease or not; the method I know can purify any negative disease. That’s right, any!”

When facing Ling Chen, who was depressed, this demoness was actually beaming – evidently, she didn’t take this seriously at all. Ling Chen forced himself to calm down and said hurriedly, “Hurry up and tell me what that method is!”

“I told little master that method only yesterday; don’t tell me you’ve forgotten already.” Qi Yue did not directly reply, and she instead narrowed her eyes and smiled.

“Yesterday?” Ling Chen stared in surprise. He immediately thought of something, and his eyes trembled. “You’re talking about... the Fairy Fountain’s water?”

“Little master’s so smart; you remembered immediately,” Qi Yue lightly laughed as she continued speaking, “I told little master yesterday that the Fairy Fountain has powerful purifying properties. The poison in lil sis Shui Ruo’s body is much more powerful than the Isrock Disease, but it was still easily cured.”

“The Fairy Fountain’s water... Fairy Fountain...” Ling Chen muttered. The Fairy Fountain belonged to the virtual world, and anyone who heard Qi Yue’s words would be incredibly disappointed and might even scoff. However, Ling Chen was an exception to that. For Qi Yue and Sha Sha to appear in the real world and for Shui Ruo’s body to be transported into the virtual world, it was indeed possible to bring the Fairy Fountain’s water into the real world.

“As long as we bring out the Fairy Fountain’s water, we’ll be able to save Meng Xin and Su’Er... Qi Yue! I’m sure you have a way to bring things out from the Mystic Moon world, right?” Ling Chen suddenly looked up towards Qi Yue.

“Well, that’s indeed possible,” Qi Yue did not deny it. “As long as you give your 2 little lovers the Fairy Fountain water, their bodies will be purified within a short period of time, and even their skin will become white and supple. Even after reaching 40 or 50 years of age, they won’t grow old, and their lifespans will be greatly extended.”

Hearing Ling Chen and Qi Yue’s words, Tian Tian’s face was completely blank. However, Shadissika’s eyebrows slightly twitched, and she wanted to say something but stopped herself.

“Immediately come back to the game with me,” Ling Chen grabbed Qi Yue’s hand as he said hurriedly. He was full of anticipation and sorrow... if the Mystic Moon world had opened earlier, and what Qi Yue said was true, then Ruo Ruo would have been fine. However, one could not turn back time...

On the other hand, Qi Yue did not seem hurried at all. She turned her wrist and instead held Ling Chen’s arm as she said in a soft voice, “If I bring the Fairy Fountain’s water out, how will little master reward me?”

“What reward do you want?” Ling Chen immediately replied. If Qi Yue really could resolve this crisis, he would simply owe her too much.

Qi Yue pressed her lips against Ling Chen’s ear and whispered softly, “I want you to sleep with me every night for this month.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

In front of Tian Tian and Sha Sha, Ling Chen was evidently unable to reply to Qi Yue. He once again grabbed her, rushed into his room, locked the door, and started up the game. As his consciousness entered the game, Qi Yue’s body also disappeared.

“Eh... what were big brother and Qi Yue talking about just then? Sha Sha, did you understand any of that?” Tian Tian, who still didn’t understand what happened, pulled at the corner of Sha Sha’s clothes.

“It’s nothing.” Sha Sha smiled and then turned to look at Ling Chen’s room. She slightly frowned and muttered in a voice that only she could hear, “That method... is impossible... because this is a polluted earth.”

Chapter 706 - Breaking Off Ties (1)

To the Fairies, there was nothing holier than the Fairy Fountain. After the Fairy Tree regrew, the Fairies' gratitude towards Ling Chen rose to a new level. Simultaneously, they believed that this was their reward for carefully guarding the Fairy Fountain for so many years. As such, the Fairies viewed the Fairy Fountain all the more as the lifeline of their clan, and they would not allow anyone else to pollute it at all.

Of course, Ling Chen was an exception. The Fairy Tree had been reborn because of him, resolving the threat of extinction. Within the Fairies' hearts, his status surpassed even Chief Greenwood's. Let alone go near the Fairy Fountain, there probably wouldn't be any dissent if he wanted to take the Fairy Fountain away.

Ling Chen brought Qi Yue back into the Mystic Moon world and brought her to the Fairy Fountain. The Fairies guarding the Fairy Tree thought that he was here to see Shui Ruo, so they left after saluting him in order to give him some privacy. In actuality, whether they left or not made no difference to Ling Chen because Qi Yue made it so that only he could see her.

Qi Yue lightly floated above the Fairy Fountain. She bent down and lightly traced her hand against the water. As the Fairy Fountain's water rippled, a small, transparent bottle filled with Fairy Fountain water appeared in her hand. She gently closed her hand, and when she opened it again, the bottle was gone.

“Can you really bring the Fairy Fountain water into the real world?” Ling Chen asked in disbelief.

Qi Yue looked at him, a charming look on her face. “How could I lie to little master? Could little master have forgotten that it was I who brought lil sis Shui Ruo's body from the real world here? What's so difficult about bringing back a small bottle of Fairy Fountain water?”

“In that case, are you saying that you can bring anything from the Mystic Moon world to Earth and anything from Earth to here?” Ling Chen calmly asked.

“Theoretically, yes. However, little master shouldn’t ask me to casually move things between these 2 worlds. The Mystic Moon world and Earth are 2 completely different worlds: to you, one is ‘real’, while the other is ‘virtual’. The intersection between a ‘real’ and ‘virtual’ world is already a heaven-defying action, and moving things between them occasionally is possible. However, if you do it too frequently, you might be punished by the heavens. I’m sure little master wouldn’t want me to be punished by the heavens and be killed by divine lightning, right?” As Qi Yue spoke, she looked down and bit her lip, making her look quite innocent.

If this was the first time that Ling Chen had met Qi Yue, he might have believed her. Moving things from the real world into the virtual world and from the virtual world to the real world was a heaven-defying action... no, no! It definitely wasn’t like that.

However, was the Mystic Moon world really a virtual world? By now, Ling Chen was completely confident that it definitely wasn’t!

In that case, the everything that Qi Yue had just said was nonsense! What she was trying to say was quite simple: “Even though I can do it, asking me to transport things for you between the 2 worlds simply isn’t going to happen!”

Ling Chen did not waste more any words with her on that matter and instead said, “Since we’ve obtained the Fairy Fountain water, let’s go back now.”

“Doesn’t little master want to look at lil sis Shui Ruo for a bit longer?” Qi Yue floated over to Ling Chen’s side and looked at him with her watery eyes.

Ling Chen’s chest heaved. He closed his eyes and said in a soft voice, “After I reawaken Ruo Ruo, I’ll be able to spend a long time with her... let’s go now.”

After speaking, he grabbed Qi Yue's hand and logged off. As he vanished within a flash of white light, Qi Yue looked down at the Fairy Fountain water, and a complicated look appeared in her eyes. She lightly sighed and also disappeared.

Beijing.

When Yun Feng heard from Xiao Qiu Feng that Yun Meng Xin had contracted the Isrock Disease, he spaced out for 10 or so seconds... following this, he logged off from the game and madly rushed towards the Battle Alliance's headquarters.

“Meng Xin... Meng Xin!!”

Yun Feng crazily roared as he staggered into the Xiao family's residence. Not a single person from the Xiao family stopped him, and Xiao Qiu Feng was already waiting for him at the door, a heavy look on his face.

“Where's Meng Xin? Where's Meng Xin? How could she have contracted the Isrock Disease?!” Yun Feng rushed over to Xiao Qiu Feng, his face completely red and covered with sweat. His mind had been completely taken over by fear and shock, and he grasped Xiao Qiu Feng's clothes as he roared, “Xiao Qiu Feng, is this a goddamn prank?! Meng Xin was fine this morning! How could something like this suddenly have happened to her? You got it wrong, right? Right?!”

Yun Feng's second grand-uncle died because of the Isrock Disease. He was closer with his second grand-uncle than with his own grandfather, and the 13223 drug that he had given to Ling Chen was the one he had desperately obtained for his second grand-uncle. However, he had been too late. From then onwards, he has been deeply fearful of the Isrock Disease, and he hated it with his entire being. When he heard that Yun Meng Xin had been diagnosed with the Isrock Disease, he felt as if he had been struck by lightning, and he simply could not accept it.

“She's in Qi Qi's room. You should go see her. However... don't

get too close.” Xiao Qiu Feng powerlessly said and sighed.

Yun Feng ferociously breathed in, pushed aside Xiao Qiu Feng, and rushed towards the Xiao family’s inner courtyard.

At this moment, the Xiao family’s courtyard was filled with movement. Everyone was wearing at least 2 layers of masks, and some were even wearing thick hazmat suits. All of them were quickly rushing around. Every building gave off a dense smell of disinfectant. Yun Feng ran the whole way to Xiao Qi’s private courtyard. Within the courtyard, Xiao Qi stood there while spacing out, her eyes completely red and puffy from crying. The door that she was facing was tightly closed. When Yun Feng saw this, his mind buzzed, and he burst into the room.

“Meng Xin!” A heavy air swept out from within the room, and he immediately saw Yun Meng Xin lying on the bed. She was peacefully lying there with her eyes closed, and her face was completely pale with not even a trace of blood in her lips... in that instant, Yun Feng felt as if his mind had exploded, and the last trace of hope disappeared. His second grand-uncle had died because of the Isrock Disease, and he couldn’t be more familiar with the outward symptoms of it. Otherwise, when he saw Ling Chen and Ling Shui Ruo, he wouldn’t have been able to immediately tell that Ling Shui Ruo had the Isrock Disease.

“How could it be like this... Meng Xin!” Yun Feng muttered in despair. He swayed as he walked over to Meng Xin, and just as he took 2 steps, Yao Ying firmly blocked his way forward. “Don’t go near her; immediately leave this room!”

The Isrock Disease spread too easily. If a person stayed in a room with an infected person, even if the person did not touch the infected person, the person might still contract the Isrock Disease. However, the Reapers who had walked out from ‘hell’ did not fear it because their bodies, which had surpassed the limits for humans, were not able to be infected by the Isrock Disease.

“Get out of the way! That’s my little sister!” Yun Feng completely lost control of his emotions, and he didn’t even look to see who the person in front of him was. He stretched out his hands, wanting to push her away. However, how could he overcome Yao Ying? Before his hands could even touch her, his arm was instead twisted behind his back, and he was pushed out of the room.

When Yun Meng Xin heard Yun Feng’s voice, she opened her eyes. With the Isrock Disease in her body, this simple action took an incredible amount of strength. She parted her frighteningly pale lips and worriedly said, “Big brother... don’t come in...”

Her voice was just as soft and gentle as normal, but it was so weak that Yun Feng’s heart ached to the point that he almost couldn’t breathe. Yun Feng powerlessly squatted down, and he started to weep like a child, “This isn’t real... This isn’t real...”

“Big brother Yun Feng...” Xiao Qi walked over, bit her lip, and also started to cry. Xiao Qiu Feng also walked over with heavy steps. When he saw Yun Feng weep, he could only sigh, not knowing how to comfort him... all humans knew that the death rate for the Isrock Disease was 100%. No one had ever survived from the Isrock Disease.

Yun Feng felt as if his heart was being stabbed by knives, and he felt that fate had treated his little sister too unfairly. She had no freedom during her childhood, and after she grew up, she became a tool to be used by her family. She didn’t have the power to make her own decisions, but she struggled and obtained Ling Chen’s help, allowing her to finally escape. Not only did she obtain complete freedom, but she also became the star of the world. Because of this, Yun Feng has been delirious with joy. However, this only lasted for a few months before a nightmare of despair mercilessly descended on her...

“She was so kind; in fact, perhaps her only shortcoming was that she was too kind and too perfect... why did fate have to treat her like this?!” Yun Feng inwardly screamed. He gritted his teeth and

stood up. He used his hands to forcefully wipe away his tears and determinedly said, “Qiu Feng, I want to take Meng Xin home.”

Xiao Qiu Feng sighed, “She’s very weak right now, so it’s best that you don’t...”

“Meng Xin staying here will only bring trouble to the Battle Alliance. This is the Yun family’s misfortune, and you shouldn’t have to bear it.” Yun Feng’s body was still trembling, but his voice was now steadier. “Although our family hasn’t treated her well, she’s still part of the Yun family, so we should be taking care of her. Even if... even if she departs, it should be at home...”

Xiao Qiu Feng gave him a deep look and silently nodded, unable to say anything. All touching words of comfort were meaningless in the face of the Isrock Disease.

“Since it’s like that, let me do it. Don’t worry, I won’t contract the Isrock Disease.” Yao Ying nodded towards Yun Feng and Xiao Qiu Feng, then walked to the bed and picked up Yun Meng Xin.

Chapter 707 - Breaking Off Ties (2)

Yao Ying carried Yun Meng Xin into Yun Feng's car. The car was wide enough to allow Yun Meng Xin to lie on Yao Ying's lap in the back seats. Following this, the car started and sped towards the Yun Family's residence.

“No, I... I want to go and look after big sister Meng Xin!” Xiao Qi muttered to herself as she watched the car disappear. She suddenly ran back into her own courtyard, and soon a light pink Porsche 918 appeared. Xiao Qiu Feng did not stop her and instead only gave a long sigh.

When Yun Feng's car raced into the Yun family's residence, he found his home in complete chaos as well. Evidently, when he had received news that Yun Meng Xin had contracted the Isrock Disease, so had the Yun family's people. Just like in the Xiao family, everyone wore thick masks, and there were people spraying disinfectant in every single corner.

Yun Feng stopped the car, and he almost fainted from the incredibly heavy smell of disinfectant. The smell here was much heavier than in the Xiao family's residence. He wasn't sure if he was imagining things, but there also seemed to be a burnt smell. When the attendants saw Yun Feng, some of them hurriedly ran over, “Young master, you're back...” At that moment, the back door was opened, and Yao Ying expressionlessly carried Yun Meng Xin out. Immediately, the attendants' expressions changed, and they desperately ran away as they screamed, “B-Big miss...”

Yun Feng slammed the door shut with a bang and ignored the pale-faced attendants. He said hurriedly, “Quick, take her to her room. It's over there.”

Although Yao Ying looked quite weak, she was a Reaper who had walked out of hell. She wouldn't feel tired even after holding Yun Meng Xin for hours. Looking at the pale-faced and shallowly-

breathing Yun Meng Xin in her arms, she did not say anything and followed behind Yun Feng. Honestly speaking, Yun Meng Xin living or dying meant nothing to her. However, she was worried about the impact it would have on Ling Chen. After all, she was one of the people who Ling Chen wanted to protect with all his might, which meant that she was important to Ling Chen within his heart.

After rushing to Yun Meng Xin's small courtyard, Yun Feng suddenly stopped running before he went in, and his body became stiff. He stared ahead of him... within the courtyard, the small and elegant building was gone, and it was instead replaced by smouldering ruins. The fire had evidently been burning for a long time, and everything had been burned to ashes.

Yun Feng's face became incredibly dark, and he tightly clenched his fists. How could he not understand what had happened? Behind him, Yao Ying also frowned, and a coldness flashed in her eyes.

A burst of footsteps sounded out from behind him, and Yun Feng silently turned around and looked at the people who had arrived – it was his father, Yun Zheng Fan, second uncle, Yun Zheng Hai, and second aunt, Dong Fang Lan... as well as his grandpa, who had just turned 70 years old, Yun Ba Fang. There were also 7 or 8 attendants behind them. Each of them was wearing a full body hazmat suit and thick masks. Only their eyes could be seen from outside.

“Yun Feng, did you go to pick up Meng Xin? You said you... ai!” Yun Zheng Fan stared at Yun Feng, then at Yun Meng Xin in Yao Ying's arms, his gaze becoming incredibly complicated.

“Father, grandfather... what's going on?” Yun Feng pointed at the ruins behind him, suppressing the suffocating feeling in his chest.

“What else could be going on?” Yun Zheng Hai replied. “Don't

you know that Meng Xin has contracted the Isrock Disease? She slept there last night, so her room and courtyard are probably contaminated. Of course we had to burn it! What will we do if other people contract the Isrock Disease?”

“But that’s Meng Xin’s courtyard! Even though she’s moved out for a year, many of her things are in there! How could you just burn it all! You didn’t even ask Meng Xin!” Although Yun Feng was doing his best to keep himself calm, his voice was still furious. “Moreover, now that you’ve burned it all down, where is Meng Xing going to stay?!”

Hearing Yun Feng’s words, Yun Zheng Fan frowned and said in a low voice, “Stay? You brought Meng Xin back here because you want her to stay here? Do you know what sort of sickness she’s infected with? If she stays here, she might bring disaster to our entire family!”

Yun Feng’s eyes widened as he gnashed his teeth and yelled, “Father! What do you mean by that?! Aren’t you going to let Meng Xin stay here?”

Yun Zheng Fan looked at Yun Meng Xin, whose eyes were closed in a deep sleep, and said sharply, “Yun Feng, stop joking around! Don’t you remember how your second grand-uncle died? How can she stay here? Immediately take her away.”

Yun Feng was unable to suppress the flames of fury inside of him anymore, and he clenched his fists as he roared, “Father! She’s my little sister and your own daughter! Now that she’s incredibly sick, she needs us the most! Apart from her own home, where is she supposed to go? With our family’s capabilities, even if it’s the Isrock Disease, we’ll be able to perfectly quarantine it! Now that you’ve burned her courtyard, where is she supposed to stay... Father, that’s not something you should have done... say something!”

“Insolence! What gives you the right to yell at me?” Yun Zheng

Fan was also infuriated, and he stepped forwards.

“Big brother, Yun Feng, you should both calm down,” Yun Zheng Hai hurriedly said as he stopped Yun Zheng Fan. He then tried to console Yun Feng, “Yun Feng, I know that you care about Meng Xin deeply, and as her family, none of us care about her any less than you do. Your father’s not being cruel; rather, Meng Xin is his only daughter, and he’s feeling sadder than anyone. He’s doing all of this for our family. Your second grand-uncle died because of the Isrock Disease – once someone’s infected, not even a god is able to save them. If we keep her here, it’s possible that more people in our family contract the Isrock Disease...”

“Hahaha...” Yun Feng coldly laughed. “I’ll say it again – our family has the ability to completely quarantine the Isrock Disease. I don’t believe that none of you know this! Even if we can’t... those with even a little bit of familial love would rather take that risk and take care of her than burn her courtyard and throw her out! I know exactly what you’re all thinking! Before, I’ve always hated those who abandoned their family because of the Isrock Disease. In order to keep themselves safe, they not only threw away their family but also their hearts. What I never expected was that my family would be that sort of family!”

“You!” Yun Zheng Fan was completely enraged, and he stepped forwards and slapped Yun Feng.

Since he was young, Yun Feng had been slapped by Yun Zheng Fan many times, but he took it obediently each time. However, this time, he tilted his head, making Yun Zheng Fan’s slap miss. Yun Feng didn’t even look at him, and he turned to look at Yun Ba Fang, calmly saying, “Grandfather, are you going to say anything? Yesterday was your 70th birthday, and Meng Xin, who hadn’t come back in an entire year, came back must to see you. You were so happy that you even praised Meng Xin for an entire evening, saying that she was a genius who could only be found once every hundred years and that she was the Yun family’s hope and pride.

You even said that the Yun family would always be her shield, and that she shouldn't forget the Yun family... you must be feeling a great deal of heartache; surely you'll let her stay here to be looked after, right?"

There was something else that he hadn't said, but he trusted everyone knew – Yun Meng Xin contracted the Isrock Disease last night when she had attended Yun Ba Fang's birthday banquet. If she hadn't come to the banquet, everything would have been fine.

Last night at the banquet, Yun Meng Xin had indeed been the centre of attention. The light around her was simply too eye-catching, and if she helped the Yun family, the Yun family would have been able to rise to a whole new level. As such, the Yun family, which had once chased her out, took this opportunity to re-establish its relationship with her, and Yun Ba Fang used all of the praises he knew on her. However, who would have thought that the Yun family's hope became someone who was doomed to die after a single night. Not only could they not obtain any benefits from her, she had also become a burden to their very lives.

Yun Ba Fang's old eyes flickered for a while before deeply sighing and saying, "Feng'Er, take Meng Xin to Yan Huang Hospital. I'll arrange for the best doctors to look after her around the clock until she... ai."

Yun Ba Fang's words completely chilled Yun Feng's heart. He slowly looked at each person, and for some reason, the people who he was so familiar with all became strangers. He couldn't help but sadly think that if it was him who had contracted the Isrock Disease, he most likely would have been treated this way as well. If that happened, he might have naively thought that he would be taken care of at home, spending his remaining time with his family.

"I... understand." Yun Feng's expression became incredibly dark, and his heart fell to its lowest depths. At this moment, a weak voice sounded in his ears, "Big brother... let's go... I don't want

to... stay here...”

Yun Feng suddenly raised his head, looking at Meng Xin, whose eyes were half-opened as she lay in Yao Ying’s arms. Her face was even paler, turning almost grey, and there was not a bit of light in her half-opened eyes. Yun Zheng Fan and the others realised that Yun Meng Xin hadn’t been sleeping this entire time and had heard all of their words. No matter how thick their skin was, they couldn’t help but feel ashamed. Yun Zheng Fan sighed helplessly, “Meng Xin, don’t blame us; it’s not that we don’t want you to stay here but that we can’t allow anything to happen to the family anymore... don’t worry, we’ll find the best doctor for you.”

“No need! We don’t need the Yun family! If the Yun family won’t take her, we will!”

A furious voice yelled out from behind them. Everyone turned around and saw Xiao Qi angrily standing there, her beautiful eyes almost shooting out fire. She directly pushed through Yun Zheng Fan and the others and came to Yao Ying’s side as she said to Yun Feng, “Yun Feng, don’t send Meng Xin to some hospital. Just go to my place. My dad and big brother won’t turn their backs on her, and neither will I... I’ll take care of her – after all, I won’t be able to be at ease with anyone else taking care of her. Even if I’m infected with the Isrock Disease, it doesn’t matter. Big sister Meng Xin, Su Su, and I are the closest sisters in the world, and we said that we would live and die together.”

“Qi Qi...” Yun Meng Xin’s lips softly parted, a tear forming in her eyes.

These words caused Yun Zheng Fan, Yun Ba Fang, and the other seniors to feel extremely uncomfortable, and all of their faces flushed red with embarrassment.

“There’s nothing else to say. Let’s go,” Yao Ying said as she calmly glanced at Yun Zheng Fan and the others and brought Yun Meng Xin to where Yun Feng’s car was.

Chapter 708 - The Su Family's Despair

“What?! Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er were both infected with the Isrock Disease on the same day?” After hearing this from her phone, Li Xiao Xue shot to her feet, a deep frown on her face.

“Super active Isrock Disease? No one else in the Yun family was infected... I see.”

After putting down the phone, Li Xiao Xue’s breathing became quite erratic, and it took her a while to calm herself down. While she was standing in front of her window and looking outside, she was unable to stop frowning. After a while, her gaze suddenly became cold and sharp, and she summoned in a low voice, “Wan Yu.”

The door opened, and Li Wan Yu stood at the entrance. “What is it, miss?”

Li Xiao Xue turned around and said with a heavy expression, “Immediately take my Dassault Falcon 2000 and go to Beijing. Don’t take anyone else. As for where to land and pick them up, I’ll let you know by phone before you get there... leave right now!”

“Ah... yes!” The coldness on Li Xiao Xue’s face and her rushed order caused Li Wan Yu to feel quite shocked, and she didn’t dare to ask any questions. She immediately answered and hurriedly left. Although she was quite young, she had followed Li Xiao Xue since she was young, and flying a plane was one of her compulsory courses.

Not too long after, the sound of the jet’s engines starting could be heard from outside. Li Xiao Xue rested her face on her right hand, and after thinking, she said in a low voice, “Bing Yao, I’ll be going out for a few days, so there’s no need to follow me. Guard this place and monitor everyone who does cleaning or management... if anyone does anything suspicious, notify me immediately!”

.....

After bringing Yun Meng Xin away from the Yun family's residence, Yun Feng's emotions plummeted into an abyss. Yun Meng Xin contracting the Isrock Disease already caused him immense pain, and the coldness of their relatives caused his heart to feel even colder. He finally clearly understood why Yun Meng Xin had left for so long without coming back.

“Big brother... don't take me... to Qi Qi's home... I can't bring the danger... to the...” Yun Meng Xin said in a weak voice.

“Meng Xin, don't say anything and just rest up. Don't think too much and don't lose hope... now that medicine has developed so much, curing the Isrock Disease is just a matter of time. Maybe even next year... no, next month or even tomorrow they'll find a cure. As such, you need to stay strong and not worry about anything else.” Hearing Yun Meng Xin's voice, Yun Feng's heart hurt so much that it felt as if it was dripping blood, and he tightly gripped the steering wheel. Normally, after someone was infected with the Isrock Disease, it would have a short incubation period before showing any symptoms and slowly devouring the victim's life. However, the Isrock Disease that Yun Meng Xin had contracted was simply too terrifying. In less than 24 hours, it had devoured half of her lifeforce, making her seem like someone who had been infected for more than 1 year.

He couldn't help but think that this Isrock Disease was not spread by natural means. The only possibility was that someone had cultivated the Isrock Disease to its most active state, which meant that someone had effectively tried to assassinate Yun Meng Xin! Moreover, they had chosen right when she went back to the Yun family's residence. However, he was certain that it definitely wasn't someone apart of the Yun family because this would not benefit the Yun family and doing so would only end up harming it. After all, the Yun family had been hoping to reaching new heights with Yun Meng Xin's help.

“Ding...”

A soft sound rang out, and Yao Ying quickly pressed her finger against her right ear as she said in a low voice, “What is it... oh? Got it!”

After bringing her hand down from her ear, a strange look appeared on Yao Ying’s face, and she immediately turned and said, “Yun Feng, immediately change directions. We’re going to the Su family’s residence.”

“The Su family’s residence? Why?”

“To take Su’Er to Su Hang... master said that he has something that can cure the Isrock Disease and can help Meng Xin and Su’Er quickly recover!”

Screeeeech!!!

An ear-piercing screeching sound pierced through the street as the car did a 180 degree spin and zoomed off in the opposite direction... if anyone else had told him that they had something that could cure the Isrock Disease, Yun Feng wouldn’t have believed them. However, he knew who this ‘master’ was. He was the only person who Yun Feng would believe no matter what, regardless of what ridiculous things he said.

Just like the Xiao family and Yun family, the Su family was filled with chaos, and the smell of disinfectant filled every corner of the residence. Before, the Su family never refused guests, but today, the Su family’s gates were tightly closed, and there was not a single person paying a visit.

Within the Su family’s inner courtyards, the atmosphere was so heavy that those around felt suffocated.

To the Su family, the Isrock Disease was a forbidden name, and it was a nightmare that the Su family could never get rid of. Decades ago, because of a catastrophe with the Isrock Disease, the Su family’s numbers had dwindled, causing them to give up on

business and take up politics. After that catastrophe, the only men left in the previous generation were Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng, and only Su'Er was left in the current generation. The Su family's entire future rested on Su'Er's body, so Su'Er's safety was of paramount importance to the Su family.

However, none of them expected the demon that had almost killed off the Su family to appear in Su'Er.

Su Hong Cheng leaned against the door, unmoving. The awe-inspiring and strict Mayor of Beijing's face was waxy yellow, his eyes completely blank, looking as if he had aged decades in half a day. With his status, he had weathered all sorts of storms and was able to remain calm in all of them. The only thing in the world that could affect him like this was Su'Er's safety...

"Chief, please put on this mask, this is... much too dangerous," The Su family's doctor brought over a thick mask and pleaded with Su Hong Cheng. He had already repeated such words more than 10 times, but Su Hong Cheng had not put on the mask, let alone a hazmat suit. His eyes looked as if he had lost his soul. He finally moved and knocked the hand holding the mask away as he said in a hoarse voice, "My daughter's already like this... what use is there for me to wear a mask... what mask... why wasn't it me who was infected... why was it my daughter..."

Hot tears flowed down Su Hong Cheng's face. The doctor stared in shock... he had served the Su family for decades, and this was the first time he had seen this man, who seemed to be made of iron, cry... even when his first wife, Murong Lan, passed away, he only knelt in front of her grave for 3 days and 3 nights until he passed out. However, he did not shed a single tear... because although he was grieved over his wife's death, he did not despair. But Su'Er... this caused him to feel utter despair. If he lost his daughter, the Su family's future would be over.

His first wife, Murong Lan, Su'Er's mother, had also died because of the Isrock Disease. There was also his father, his mother, and

his second uncle... all of them had died because of the Isrock Disease. The Isrock Disease catastrophe of that year had unluckily swept through the Su family, but even that time did not bring him as much despair as this time.

Su'Er's body had always been weak, and after being infected with the abnormally active Isrock Disease, her body was unable to take it at all. After falling unconscious, she still had not woken up. Murong Xiu looked at her through a transparent door, crying so much that she couldn't see anymore. After hearing the news, Su Yi Cheng dropped everything and immediately rushed back, and he was currently sitting on the cold ground outside. He did not say a single word, and the space within his fingernails was filled of blood.

Suddenly, Su Yi Cheng stood up and savagely leapt towards Su Hong Cheng, smashing his face with a punch, roaring like a beast, "Su Hong Cheng! You bastard! Why did you let Su'Er stay at the Yun family's place yesterday! You bastard! I'll goddamn kill you!!"

"Yi Cheng!" Murong Xiu hurriedly rushed over and stood in front of the berserk Su Yi Cheng. Su Hong Cheng had been knocked to the ground, but he did not stand up. Instead, he lay on the ground as he wept, "Hit me! Hit me as hard as you can... even I want to beat myself to death..."

"Yi Cheng! Calm down, this wasn't Hong Cheng's fault. No one knew that this would happen... Hong Cheng's sadder than anyone – Su'Er's his own daughter," Murong Xiu said as tears streamed down her face while continuing to block in front of Su Yi Cheng.

Su Yi Cheng's face was completely twisted, and his heart and body threatened to blow apart from his pain and rage. He waved his hand and screamed before growling with wide eyes, "Yun family... it's all the Yun family's fault! I'll... I'll flatten the Yun family today!!!"

After saying this, Su Yi Cheng walked off, radiating murderous

intent. However, he was stopped by Su Hong Cheng on the ground. Su Hong Cheng lowered his head as he said, “Don’t you think that this whole situation is chaotic enough as it is? The Yun family is also a victim; if you flatten the Yun family, don’t you think that the scum who did this will laugh their heads off?!”

Su Yi Cheng stopped walking and stared ahead of him as he breathed raggedly, his eyes as terrifying as those of a vulture’s. He knew that Su’Er contracting the Isrock Disease could not be blamed on the Yun family because the Yun family’s daughter and Su’Er had both contracted the Isrock Disease. Moreover, the Yun family had also descended into chaos... in the coming period of time, he will disregard everything else and do all he can to find out who was behind this. If Su’Er had contracted the normal Isrock Disease, he would not have paid it much mind. However, the Isrock Disease that Su’Er had been infected with was evidently cultivated artificially. If he could find who was behind this, even if it was the emperor of heaven, he would crush them into ten thousand pieces. Now that the Su family’s only hope was gone, in his despair, he would do anything no matter how crazy it was.

Outside the gates, the screech of a car suddenly stopping sounded out, followed by a massive explosion, which seemed to be the gates being smashed open. Following this, a Lincoln MKT roared as it burst through to where they were, followed by a crowd of guards, who started to point their guns.

The car door opened as Yun Feng jumped out and asked, “Su’Er... Where’s Su’Er?”

Su Yi Cheng was still furious, and seeing Yun Feng, he instantly roared, “What are you doing here?!”

“I came to take Su’Er to a place... there’s someone who can save Su’Er!” Yun Feng said as he breathed unsteadily, completely ignoring all of the guards around him.

“W-What did you say?!” Su Hong Cheng felt as if he had been

electrocuted, and he jumped up from the ground, staring at Yun Feng with wide eyes.

Chapter 709 - Flying to Su Hang

“Bullshit!” On the other hand, Su Yi Cheng did not seem happy at all, and he roared, “If there really was such a person in the world, the Su family definitely would have known before the Yun family! Don’t try to use these sorts of underhanded tricks to absolve your responsibility; Su’Er’s like this now because of the Yun family. I’ll definitely settle this debt in the future!”

“Uncle Su, I’m telling the truth!” Yun Feng pointed at the back seat of the car as he quickly said, “My little sister Meng Xin’s in the car right now, and I’m about to take her to that person. He said that he might have a way to cure the Isrock Disease and save my little sister and Su’Er!”

“Cure the Isrock Disease?” Su Yi Cheng laughed mockingly. “Even 3 year old children know that it’s impossible to cure the Isrock Disease.”

At this moment, Xiao Qi also drove in, and she could hear Su Yi Cheng’s words from afar. She hurriedly got out and cried out, “Uncle Su, big brother Yun Feng’s telling the truth; we’re here to pick up Su Su! How could we lie to you about something so important?”

“Hmph, I’ll say it again. None of you should even think about touching a hair on Su’Er’s head!” Su Yi Cheng angrily replied. He knew more than anyone else how much despair the Isrock Disease could bring. He simply didn't believe that it was possible to cure the Isrock Disease.

The back door of the car opened, and Yao Ying frowned as she expressionlessly said, “You can choose not to believe us, but I should remind you that if you let us take Su’Er away, you’ll at least have a chance at saving her. If you don’t let us take her away, Su’Er will only be doomed to die. Moreover, you should already know that Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er’s Isrock Disease isn’t any ordinary

Isrock Disease. Those who have the normal Isrock Disease, if given proper treatment, will be able to last 1 or 2 years, but the Isrock Disease they have will make it difficult for them to last even 5 days. For Su'Er, the time is even shorter, and she might not even last 2 or 3 days. At the same time, the longer we leave it, the more difficult the disease will be to cure. Every second you waste is equivalent to taking away a bit of hope from Su'Er! If you are still adamant on not believing us... Yun Feng, let's go. Remember what master said, he'll definitely be able to follow through. When Yun Meng Xin returns healthy, let's see what kind of comical expressions these people, who refused to give hope to their loved one, will make!"

Su Yi Cheng's expression darkened, but he was unable to chase them away anymore. Su Hong Chen staggered forwards as he yelled out, "Wait! Please tell me... who is this 'master' you refer to?"

"You've met him before. It's Ling Tian, who came to Su'Er's 16th birthday party... the national fugitive Ling Chen," Yao Ying said with an expression of pride and worship.

"Him... it's him!" Su Yi Cheng and Su Hong Cheng's expressions both changed. Ling Tian, the overlord of the Mystic Moon world; Ling Chen, the man who had charged into the Long family's residence alone, crippled Xuanyuan Xue Yi, and had a body that surpassed humanity's limits!

Hearing the name 'Ling Tian', both Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng's hearts trembled. If anyone else had said that he or she could cure the Isrock Disease, they wouldn't have believed them. But Ling Tian... this monster exceeded anything they knew, and everything he did completely shocked even these powerful men who had seen almost everything. If it was him who said that he could cure the Isrock Disease... there was almost no reason for Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng to doubt it.

“Did he really say that? Did he really say that he has a way to cure the Isrock Disease?” Su Hong Cheng’s voice trembled. He believed it... he used all of his will, and even his life, to believe it.

“My master never says things that he’s not sure about. Moreover, despite being a national fugitive, he still came to Su’Er’s birthday banquet; can you not see how much he cares for her?”

“Great... Great... This is great... we’ll believe him... we’ll believe him...” Su Hong Cheng said emotionally, and Su Yi Cheng’s face became bright red. They had fallen into utter despair, but they could now see the light of hope. Su Yi Cheng clenched his fists as he said in a trembling voice, “Very well... very well... tell Ling Tian that we’ll agree to any condition of his if he’s able to cure Su’Er! Even if he wants me to kneel down to him or take my life, I won’t hesitate!”

Yao Ying smiled and replied, “My master truly likes and cares for Su’Er. He’s not doing this because he wants anything from the Su family; rather, he is doing it for himself. If anything happened to Su’Er, master would not be any less sad than all of you. I’m sure you also know that Su’Er likes my master, so all I can say is that I hope you won’t stop Su’Er from being with master.”

“As long as Su’Er’s fine, we’ll do anything to make her happy, even if we have to make enemies with the whole world,” Su Hong Cheng exclaimed emotionally. They knew that Su’Er secretly liked Ling Chen, but before today, they definitely would not have allowed her to be together with him. After all, Ling Chen’s identity was too sensitive: he was the Long family’s archenemy and a national fugitive. If she was with Ling Chen, it would affect the Su family’s reputation, and it might even pit the Su family against the Long family. However, now that they had almost lost her, nothing was as important. As long as she could be safe and happy, it didn’t matter even if the entire Su family was destroyed.

“Thank you for your trust. I’ll convey what you said word for word to master.” Yao Ying nodded at them. “We can’t waste any

more time, so please let me take Su'Er... 2 Chiefs, I'm sure you know about my master's situation. The place he's staying at is a very secret place, and it cannot be revealed to anyone. As such, although I understand how you feel, I cannot allow you to come with us. Please understand."

Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng, who were planning to go as well, stared in surprise, but they did not say anything. They nodded before personally opening the door to the room that Su'Er was quarantined within.

"You Yue, Han Lan, hurry and help." Yao Ying shouted as he suddenly looked up while walking to the entrance.

When she shouted, 2 figures simultaneously landed. Both of them had their faces covered with marks, and their tight clothes revealed their slim curves, revealing that they were both young women. Su Yi Cheng and Su Hong Cheng were both shocked. "Who are you?"

"Per master's orders, we've been protecting Su'Er around the clock. We have failed this time, and we will ask master to punish us." After speaking, You Yue and Han Lan quickly walked to Su'Er's bed and carefully picked up the unconscious girl.

Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng looked at each other, both seeing the shock in the other person's eyes. The guards around them were completely dumbfounded, and they looked at each other... this was the Su family's residence, and the residence had countless high-grade soldiers with live ammunition standing guard around the clock. In terms of defensive power, apart from the Long family, the Su family was the most protected place in all of Beijing. However, they had never discovered these 2 people who had been protecting Su'Er around the clock, and they had not seen where they had come from just now.

"No less than expected from Ling Tian's people. They're all... monsters," Su Hong Cheng couldn't help but mutter.

“At the very least, it shows that he really does care about Su’Er.” Su Yi Cheng looked at Su’Er, the hope in his heart becoming larger.

“That’s right... come to think of it, if Su’Er’s with him, we won’t have to worry about her safety at the very least,” Su Hong Cheng said. With Ling Tian’s ability to send the entire Long family into chaos by himself, if Su’Er was by his side, who in the world could harm her?

“It’s just that, from what I’ve seen, there are quite a few women by his side. Let alone Su’Er, even her 2 sisters, the Yun family’s daughter, and the Xiao family’s daughter are all extremely close to him.”

“If Su’Er can really get better... as long as that’s what she wants, what need is there for us to worry?” Su Hong Cheng closed his eyes as he silently prayed.

Yun Feng did not say anything. Seeing the Su family’s response to Su’Er’s situation, he felt incredibly complicated. The Su family has been around for less than 300 years, and it was much weaker than the Yun family financially. After the Isrock Disease catastrophe 60 years ago, the Su family gave on their businesses and entered politics. Now, he finally understood why the Su family had done so. With their relatives dying in that catastrophe, what use was immense wealth and enterprise? As such, the Su family gave up on business and focused on politics to attain power, particularly military power. The Su family did this so that they could protect their relatives and their family, and this way they would not be bullied by others. As for the Yun family, it was a large business family. Most people in the Yun family were conditioned to be perfect businesspeople – to only do what was beneficial and what would bring profits, not losses.

In order to form a relationship with the Long family, they had completely disregarded Yun Meng Xin’s own wishes and happiness. They tried to curry favour with her after she rose to

power and fame, but they had once again discarded her after finding out that she had the Isrock Disease. After confirming that they could no longer gain anything from her and would instead only bring danger and misfortune, they had mercilessly cast her out... this was the Yun family.

For me to have this sort of personality despite being born into the Yun family; this must be a miracle... Yun Feng silently laughed to himself and then re-entered his car. Soon, Yun Feng and Xiao Qi's cars left the Su family's residence, heading South.

When they reached their destination, Li Wan Yu was already waiting for them with the Dassault Falcon 2000. This place was the Li family's private airport in the southern part of Beijing, and most of it was unused. Yun Feng and Xiao Qi drove their cars right up to the Dassault Falcon, and seeing them, Li wan Yu asked, "You are..."

The car doors opened, and Yao Ying quickly came before Wan Yu and said, "You're Li Wan Yu from the Li family, right? We're the people you're waiting for... the people we're bringing have been infected with a powerful version of the Isrock Disease, so it's best that you don't go back with us. This is quite close to the Beijing's southern airport, so we'll have to ask you to return on a flight from there... immediately tell me the jet's activation code so that we can go."

Li Wan Yu stared for a while before dumbly nodding. She thought to what Li Xiao Xue had told her and didn't dare to ask any further. She hurriedly gave him the Dassault Falcon 2000's activation code, but she asked with an air of uncertainty, "Are you sure... you'll be able to fly it?"

"Don't worry!" Yao Ying waved her hand before quickly moving around, helping the others bring Su'Er and Yun Meng Xin into the cabin. Xiao Qi did not even hesitate, and she completely disregarded the risk of being infected with the Isrock Disease as she too entered the cabin. She didn't even have time to call and let

her family know. She didn't know how this trip to Su Hang would turn out, but she simply wanted to be with Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er... 10 minutes later, the jet quickly left.

This Dassault Falcon 2000 was Li Xiao Xue's custom-made jet, and it could seat 8 people. With enough fuel, it could travel over 6,000 kilometres at an altitude of 5,000 metres, and it could reach a maximum speed of Mach 2. Going at a steady speed, it would take less than 2 hours to go from Beijing to Su Hang.

Although they were quite familiar with each other in the virtual world, Su'Er had only met Ling Chen in the real world once, while Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi had never met Ling Chen in the real world. Perhaps only after they reached Su Hang would they truly begin their relationships with him.

However, could the Fairy Fountain's water really cleanse the Isrock Disease? Xiao Qi believed it, Yao Ying believed it, You Yue, and Han Lan believed it because that's what Ling Chen had said. Ling Chen himself believed it too. However, whether the result would be as they wished was a different matter.

Chapter 710 - Meeting In Real Life

Yao Ying's words were not exaggerated at all. Su'Er and Yun Meng Xin's Isrock Disease was simply too active. Every second that passed put their lives in more danger. At the same time, it also made it harder to rid the Isrock Disease from their bodies.

Everyone who stepped into the Bamboo Sea Wonderland for the first time marveled in awe, but this time was an exception. No matter if it was Yao Ying or Xiao Qi, none of them could appreciate the scenery around them, and they only hurriedly flew the jet towards their destination.

By the time they reached the Bamboo Sea Wonderland, it was already 10pm, about 10 hours since they had discovered that Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er had been infected with the Isrock Disease. However, these 10 hours seemed like an extremely long time to all of them.

“Tian Tian, Sha Sha, do your best to sleep. No matter what you hear, don't come out!”

Hearing the sound of a car driving towards them from afar, Ling Chen, who had been waiting anxiously, immediately stood up and said sternly to Tian Tian and Sha Sha. This event was already like a nightmare, and he wouldn't allow Tian Tian and Sha Sha be infected as well.

“But I want to see big sister Meng Xin and big sister Su Su...” Tian Tian looked out of the window as she said in a small voice. By now, she knew that Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er had contracted the Isrock Disease, and when she had heard the news, she had burst into tears out of fear. Luckily, Ling Chen told her that he had found a way to cure her, settling her down.

“No! If you don't do as you're told, I won't take you out to play in the future! Dia Wu, make sure you keep an eye on them!”

After saying this, Ling Chen rushed out of the house with 2 small bottles of Fairy Fountain water. By the time he opened the gates, 2 cars were already stopped there.

“Big brother Ling Tian!!”

A car door opened, and Xiao Qi rushed out first, throwing herself into Ling Chen’s arms as she started to wail. Even though it was the first time she had met him in the real world, he was exactly the same as within the virtual world – his appearance, aura, speech, personality, eyes, and mannerisms were all exactly the same. Despite meeting Ling Chen for the first time, Xiao Qi saw ‘big brother Ling Tian’ from the virtual world and felt the same satisfaction and reliance.

Her 2 closest sisters in the world had been diagnosed with the terrifying Isrock Disease; this reality stabbed into her heart like 2 thorns, making her feel so much pain to the point of death. When she saw Ling Chen, the sorrow and grief that she felt all exploded out, causing her to weep like there was no tomorrow.

“Qi Qi...” Ling Chen raised his head and gently patted her soft back. “Don’t cry; Meng Xin and Su Su will be fine, I promise...”

“Wuu...” Xiao Qi vigorously nodded within his embrace, showing that she believed him. However, she was unable to stop crying, causing most of Ling Chen’s clothes to become wet.

The lights were all turned on within the house, causing the centre of the Bamboo Sea Wonderland to be completely illuminated. Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er were carried to a quarantined room. Both girls’ faces and lips were completely white, making everyone’s heart ache. Looking at them, Ling Chen’s gaze became a bit blurry, and the image of Shui Ruo with the Isrock Disease appeared within his mind, reminding him of the despair he felt knowing that Shui Ruo had contracted the Isrock Disease...

“Ling Tian...” Yun Meng Xin was barely conscious, and she half-

opened her eyes as she hazily looked at Ling Chen, a faint smile appearing on her face. “I’ve finally... seen you in person... great...”

Looking at her faint but beautiful smile, even the elegant Yao Ying couldn’t help but silently admire this young woman. Contracting the Isrock Disease was the most terrifying thing in the world, and she had been chased out from her family. In this sort of situation, even a strong-willed man might have broken down and given up hope. And Yet, her smile was still so elegant and mesmerising, and seeing this smile, anyone’s heart would feel relaxed and warm.

No less than expected from the Lady of Ling Tian City, who was the centre of attention across the entire world. She did not just have a beautiful appearance.

Looking at Yun Meng Xin, Ling Chen smiled. “You’re saying it like you won’t be able to see me in the future. Don’t worry. Even if it’s the Isrock Disease, it won’t be able to take you away. There’ll be countless opportunities for us to see each other in the future.”

“Mm!” There was no doubt in Yun Meng Xin’s reply, and although her eyes were not as focused as usual, she still gave off an enchanting charm. “In this world... the men I trust most... are big brother and you...”

All those who heard this felt an ache within their hearts, and Ling Chen took in a deep breath. Yao Ying told him everything that had happened in Beijing, and Ling Chen knew how Yun Meng Xin had been treated by her family. These words showed that she had completely lost hope in her family.

Su’Er was still unconscious and hadn’t woken up yet. This was because her body was naturally quite weak, and her Isrock Disease was even more active than Yun Meng Xin’s. It was possible that she would sleep until her life withered away if they did not get rid of the Isrock Disease.

Ling Chen did not waste any time and opened his hand, revealing

2 small glass bottles that were drenched by his cold sweat. Everyone's gazes fell on his right hand, and Yao Ying asked, "Master, is this the medicine that can cure the Isrock Disease?"

"Really? Is this true?" Xiao Qi quickly came over, looking at Ling Chen's hand with a trembling gaze.

"I'm sure it'll work!" Ling Chen said resolutely. Even though Qi Yue was a dangerous woman, her words were quite reliable. Moreover, he knew that the Fairy Fountain water had extremely powerful cleansing properties as well as Nature's blessings.

Qi Yue had said that the poison in Shui Ruo's body was much more powerful than the Isrock Disease, and it had still been cleansed by the Fairy Fountain water. In that case, it would be incredibly easy for the Isrock Disease to be cleansed as well.

"Meng Xin, open your mouth and drink this, and your Isrock Disease will be gone," Ling Chen gently said to Yun Meng Xin as he opened the first bottle.

Hearing Ling Chen's words, Xiao Qi tightly gripped her hands together in front of her chest, and she nervously and excitedly looked at Ling Chen and Yun Meng Xin. Her heart beat rapidly, praying that a miracle would happen. It was public knowledge that there was no cure for the Isrock Disease and that no one had ever survived before. However, since it was something said by Ling Chen, she was willing to blindly believe it.

Yun Meng Xin's lips slightly parted, revealing her pearl-like teeth. Ling Chen quickly and carefully brought the small bottle over and slowly poured it into Yun Meng Xin's mouth as his hand slightly trembled.

Because of the Isrock Disease, Yun Meng Xin's five senses had become quite hazy, but as the Fairy Fountain water entered her mouth, she felt a coolness spread through her mouth, down her throat, and into the rest of her body. She immediately felt her vision and hearing becoming much clearer, and her gaze became

slightly brighter as well.

Seeing that Yun Meng Xin had drunk the contents of the bottle, everyone looked on with anticipation. Xiao Qi hurriedly asked, “Big sister Meng Xin, how do you feel? Do you feel better?”

“It’s very mysterious,” Yun Meng Xin said in a soft voice. “I’ve never tasted such a refreshing flavour. In just a short while, I feel much more awake.”

“Really? That’s great!” Hearing her answer, Xiao Qi jumped up in excitement, and a red glow appeared on her face. “I knew that big brother Ling Tian could do it! Since it was so effective so quickly, big sister Meng Xin and Su Su will be fine very soon!”

Seeing Yun Meng Xin’s complexion and mind recover greatly, Yao Ying, You Yue, and the others all felt shocked and delighted, and Ling Chen also inwardly let out a sigh of relief. He came before the sleeping Su’Er and opened the second bottle.

Even the starting of the jet’s engines and the sound of them flying in the jet was unable to wake up Su’Er, let alone the others. Moreover, Su’Er was currently in this state to preserve her lifeforce and mind as much as possible. If she were forcefully woken up, it could harm her even more. However, the sleeping Su’Er was unable to open her own mouth, nor could she swallow the water. Ling Chen silently looked at Su’Er before putting the contents of the bottle into his own mouth. He then leaned down and parted Su’Er’s lips with his own, slowly letting the Fairy Fountain water trickle from his mouth into hers.

Everyone watched on with different looks in their eyes. Yun Meng Xin softly smiled, while Xiao Qi’s lips were slightly parted, her gaze becoming hazy... in that instant, she deeply admired Su’Er... to be treated like that by Ling Chen, she almost wished that she had been infected with the Isrock Disease...

On the second level balcony, Xuanyuan Dia Wu looked at the small room in worry. She had a deep fear towards the Isrock

Disease; it was this sickness that had caused Ling Chen and her to separate for more than 10 years. She prayed that Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er really would be able to get better.

“Big sister, how long will it take? Big sister Meng Xin and big sister Su Su will definitely get better, right?” A sleepless Tian Tian once again asked.

“Mm, they'll definitely be fine.” Xuanyuan Dia Wu nodded, her voice full of worry.

“Oh... Sha Sha, you seem quite strange tonight. You haven't said much or smiled at all.” Tian Tian turned to look at Sha Sha, who seemed quite spaced out.

Shadissika, who had been silently staring ahead of her, came back to her senses and smiled. “It's because I'm worried about Ling Chen and them. However, I'm sure that nothing will happen to them since the big sisters and Ling Chen are all such good people. They'll definitely get better.”

“Mm!” Tian Tian vigorously nodded.

Soon, 15 minutes had passed.

Everyone was waiting for a miracle to occur, but a miracle never occurred. All they saw was Yun Meng Xin's slightly-recovered complexion become sickly again.

“Yao Ying, did you bring the equipment? Immediately have a look at their bodies!” Ling Chen started to feel quite worried.

“Yes!” Yao Ying took out a piece of equipment from the Mad Scientist, and he tied a metallic string around Yun Meng Xin's wrist and another one on her forehead. Very soon, the equipment's screen began to flicker with light, and looking at the screen, Yao Ying's expression became anxious, her frown becoming deeper.

“Master.” When Yao Ying raised her head, she almost did not dare to meet Ling Chen's eyes. She completely trusted Ling Chen, so she was unable to accept what she had just seen. “Their bodies

are almost completely paralysed, and they are declining... and the Isrock Disease... is instead becoming more active...”

“Ahh!!” Xiao Qi covered her mouth, her eyes, violently trembling.

“How could it be like this... it shouldn't be like this!” Ling Chen's face paled as he turned to look at Su'Er. “Then what about Su'Er?”

Yao Ying immediately went to check up on Su'Er, but the result was even worse than Yun Meng Xin's. The Isrock Disease inside Su'Er had spread everywhere in her body, and its density and activeness were greatly increased... no matter if it was Yun Meng Xin or Su'Er, let alone cure it, the Isrock Disease was not lessened at all.

Chapter 711 - The Ineffective Fairy Fountain Water

“It shouldn’t be like this!”

“It’s not working?” Qi Yue said as she turned to Ling Chen and said, “The cleansing process takes time, and it won’t take effect immediately.”

“But it’s already been 20 or so minutes! And they haven’t gotten better at all, only worse.”

“Oh?” A look of surprise appeared on Qi Yue’s face as she said in a low voice, “Could it be that we didn’t give them enough? No... with the Fairy Fountain water’s cleansing properties, that amount would have been more than enough to make them completely healthy again. Why couldn’t it cleanse the measly Isrock Disease?”

As she spoke, Qi Yue brought out another 2 small bottles. “I brought another 2 bottles in case anyone else was infected, so you can try using these 2 as well... hm?”

Qi Yue suddenly stopped speaking. She did not give the bottles to Ling Chen, and she instead looked at the slightly trembling contents within the bottle as her gaze flashed.

“What is it?” Ling Chen asked.

Qi Yue did not immediately reply. She opened the bottom and poured a drop of the Fairy Fountain water onto her palm. Instantly, an incredibly refreshing and cool feeling spread throughout her body, and Qi Yue’s frown deepened.

“Just what’s going on?” Lin Chen shouted, unable to stay calm.

“Ai...” Qi Yue slowly closed her hand and lightly sighed as a look of guilt that he had never seen before appeared on her face. “Little master, I miscalculated. I thought that the Fairy Fountain water could cure all diseases, including the Isrock Disease, but I just

realised that I was too naïve... it doesn't have the ability to cure their Isrock Disease.”

“Why?” Ling Chen felt as if a bucket of cold water had been poured over him. “Didn't you say that the Fairy Fountain water could purify everything?!”

“Yes, there's nothing wrong with the Fairy Fountain water.” Qi Yue shook her head. “The Fairy Fountain water does indeed have the ability to cleanse all sicknesses, but the Fairy Fountain water belongs to the Mystic Moon world, while this is earth.”

Facing Ling Chen's look of confusion, Qi Yue slowly explained, “Compared to the Mystic Moon world, earth's nature is too polluted, and the density of elemental essences is pitifully low. As such, no matter if it's strength or longevity, earth's people can't compare to the Mystic Moon's people at all. At a conservative estimate, earth's nature is more polluted than the Mystic Moon's by more than 300 times, and the density of elemental essences is lower by more than 20 times. As soon as the Mystic Moon's Fairy Water comes into contact with the earth's polluted air, it will be instantly polluted and its cleansing power reduced. At most, it'll make a person feel cool and refreshed. Another reason is that the aura of nature in the 2 worlds are completely different. The Mystic Moon world's aura of nature contains far more elemental essences than earth, which is why there are many different races. In this sort of environment, once the Fairy Fountain water comes into contact with the air, it will no longer be Fairy Fountain water and will not have its powerful cleansing properties anymore.

Hearing Qi Yue's words, Ling Chen fell silent for a while.

In order for one to drink this Fairy Fountain water, it was impossible for it to not come into contact with the air. This was because even if one drank it in a vacuum, there would still be air within their bodies... this meant that as long as one was on earth, the Fairy Fountain water, which could cleanse all sicknesses, would be ineffective.

“Then what about in the Mystic Moon world? You took Ruo Ruo there, so surely you can bring Meng Xin and Su Su there...” Ling Chen said as he looked at Qi Yue desperately.

Qi Yue’s voice became soft, “Last time, I already told little master that the Lunar Scourge is only able to bring souls or inanimate objects... it could bring little sis Shui Ruo because she was dead, while these 2 are still living. If we wait until they’re also dead, there’ll be no point.”

Ling Chen did not say anything, and he returned to the quarantined room.

Seeing hope being extinguished was worse than being in despair the whole time. Because of his faith in Qi Yue and how he had personally witnessed the miracles the Fairy Fountain water could bring, Ling Chen had thought that the Isrock Disease would be perfectly cleansed, and he had confidently told everyone that he had found a way to cure the Isrock Disease. However, that was now a beautiful, shattered bubble of hope.

After returning to everyone else, his dark expression caused everyone else’s hearts to sink. Looking at the unconscious Su’Er and Yun Meng Xin, who barely had her eyes half-opened, his lips trembled before he dryly said, “I’m... sorry...”

These 2 words crushed all hope remaining in the other people. Xiao Qi, who had confidently been waiting for a miracle, covered her mouth, soundlessly crying. Yao Ying and the others’ gazes all became dim... they were not worried about Yun Meng Xin or Su’Er but Ling Chen. He had been completely confident, but in this matter regarding the lives of Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er, he had failed... it not only meant that Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er had lost their last hope, but that Ling Chen himself also suffered a big blow to his mind.

“Why are you apologising?” Yun Meng Xin lightly smiled. “The Isrock Disease has always been incurable – this is something that

the entire world knows. Even if you're Ling Chen, there's no reason why you would be able to do it. As such, you don't need to feel guilty..." She paused as her dim eyes flashed with light. "I thought that I would spend my entire life as a tool for the Yun family, living as a puppet... not only did I escape that fate, but the value of my life also reached a height that I would never dare to imagine. The best thing was that I have such a good big brother, such good sisters, as well as... you..."

"Life is like a dream, and after experiencing so many good things, I don't feel any sadness or regret that this beautiful dream is about to end..."

"It won't end like this! Don't say things like that!" Xiao Qi rushed over and vigorously shook her head as she cried, "It won't... big sister Meng Xin, you'll be fine... both you and Su Su will be fine..."

"Don't go near her!" Yao Ying immediately rushed over and stopped Xiao Qi. Allowing her to be in this room was already the limit, and it was impossible to allow her to get any closer.

The atmosphere became filled with sorrow and grief, and from Ling Chen's dark expression, everyone knew that the method he was so confident in had failed. This meant that there was no longer any way to save Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er. You Yue and Han Lan simultaneously knelt before Ling Chen and said in a self-blaming manner, "Master, we're sorry for not protecting them properly... please punish us."

"Get out... all of you get out!" Ling Chen said in a terrifyingly calm voice while raising his head and looking at the ceiling.

"Big brother Ling Tian?"

"Master..."

Xiao Qi, Yao Ying and the others all looked at Ling Chen worriedly.

"All of you get out. Yao Ying, take Qi Qi somewhere safe." Ling

Chen's voice was weak and filled with grief.

Yao Ying nodded and pulled the Xiao Qi away, who was teary-eyed and witless. Everyone else also left the room and gently closed the door.

Within the silent room, only Ling Chen and the 2 sick girls were left. The instant the door was closed, Ling Chen's body leaned against a wall and slid down to the cold ground. He raised his hands and clutched at his hair... he had not died in heaven, hell had not taken away his life, he had broken free from the Mad Scientist's mental restrictions, and he had even killed the terrifying Instructor Hell... he had overcome countless adversaries, but no matter how powerful he was, he could only despair in the face of the Isrock Disease...

Himself, Shui Ruo, and now Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er...

He resented the Isrock Disease deeply – why did such a thing have to exist? If this was the heaven's punishment on humans for their wars, why was this cruel punishment given to these innocent girls?

“They said that you won't be infected by the Isrock Disease... is this... true?”

Yun Meng Xin's soft and weak voice sounded out, causing Ling Chen to come back to his senses. He raised his head and lightly nodded, saying, “Mm, because I contracted the Isrock Disease in the past, but I was healed.”

Yun Meng Xin fell silent for a while as if she were shocked by what he had said or perhaps what she wanted to say took a lot of strength. Ling Chen stood up and walked to her bed, and she said in a weak voice, “My family doesn't want me anymore. To them, I'm just a burden that causes them terror... Ling Tian... will you want me...”

“Of course, of course I will!” Ling Chen unhesitatingly nodded. “If this is what you want, you can stay as long as you want. I'll

never chase you away.”

Yun Meng Xin lightly smiled, and looked she at Ling Chen, a look of infatuation in her eyes. “Ling Tian, why... why do you treat me so well? I’m not your relative, nor am I your benefactor, and I’ve never done anything for you. You’ve already fulfilled your promise to my big brother by hundreds, if not thousands of times... so why do you treat me so well...”

Why do I treat her so well...

Ling Chen stood there dumbly. He had met Yun Meng Xin because of his goal to help Yun Meng Xin, all in order to repay Yun Feng for giving him the 13223 drug. Back then, he had thought that he would withdraw from the virtual world and spend all of his time with Shui Ruo after completing the ‘quest’. However, who would have thought... after she became the Lady of Ling Tian City, what he felt was not relief at him completing his ‘quest’, but joy, anticipation, and some worry that the burden would be too great for her.

After hearing that she had been infected with the Isrock Disease, he had felt just as shocked and terrified as when Shui Ruo had been infected with the Isrock Disease. At this moment, hearing Yun Meng Xin’s words, Ling Chen finally found his answer. He looked down at Yun Meng Xin, who was a strong, intelligent, and beautiful young woman, and softly said, “Because, in my heart, Meng Xin is incredibly important to me; someone who I can never lose.”

Yun Meng Xin, who had not shed tears when she found out that she had the Isrock Disease or when her family had chased her out, felt tears stream out from her eyes. “Ling Chen, did you know what everything you’ve done for me meant... did you know that the image you’ve left in my eyes and heart is something that I can never get rid of... my heart and my soul are filled with you, and I cannot contain anyone else anymore, making me live every second, every minute, and every day with your image in my head.

No matter what I do, see, or experience, all I can think of is you... you met me because of your promise to my big brother, so why did I have to fall in love with you so completely...”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Chapter 712 - Ling Chen's Heart

“Meng Xin, I...” Meng Xin's final sentence sent Ling Chen's mind into complete chaos.

Yun Meng Xin closed her teary eyes as she said, “I thought that I would never be able to say those words because you had Shui Ruo and now have Dia Wu. My best sisters Qi Qi and Su Su are infatuated with you, and I could not allow myself to make you choose between us... moreover, I've received too much help and grace from you, and I didn't have the courage or the right to ask for you to feel the same way about me. It's just that if I didn't say it... I might not have had a chance to anymore...”

“Meng Xin...” Ling Chen gently said her name, not sure what to say.

“Ling Chen...” Yun Meng Xin airily said his real name. “Did you know, from since I was little, I've never liked a man before. Men who were excellent in other people's eyes were unable to move my heart at all. I thought that my heart was simply too cold... and that it would never be moved... until I met you...”

“Did you know that your existence is like an irresistible disaster to any girl who comes near you... your strength, decisiveness, domineering attitude, self-confidence, and cruelty to enemies but warmth and care towards those who you're close to... as well as the sense of peace and security when being with you... and the fact that you would die for Shui Ruo... all of these have a fatal attraction to any girl, making it impossible for those close to you to escape... back then, I was sighing about how Qi Qi and Su Su both liked you and how you had Shui Ruo, but I had also fallen in love with you...”

“It's just that despite being such a brave person, I didn't have the courage to show the real me. When I encounter things I'm afraid of, I'm actually... not brave at all... Qi Qi... and Su Su... are much

braver than me.”

“Meng Xin...” Ling Chen lightly held Yun Meng Xin’s hand, looking into her eyes. “I feel the same way towards you as you feel towards me. If I’ve always been attracting you, then you have also been attracting me... much more... it’s just that I had even less courage than you. The image in my heart of you has always been proud, noble, elegant, pure, and beautiful like an otherworldly goddess. If I was still single when I met you, I would have given my all to chase after you, but I had Shui Ruo, Dia Wu, as well as the promises I made to Su Su and Qi Qi... I thought that this sort of fickleness would be incredibly despicable and would lead to tainting your purity if I was with you...”

Yun Meng Xin’s eyes quivered, becoming more resplendent. “Is this true... is this true...”

Ling Chen vigorously nodded. “Of course it’s true. Meng Xin, you should know just how charming you are. Otherwise, you wouldn’t have worn a veil all these years. Your looks and aura cause me to feel intoxicated, and your intelligence and empathy are things I greatly respect as well. After knowing you for so long, how could I not have feelings towards you?”

Yun Meng Xin’s lips slightly moved, and she gently smiled, looking incredibly content. She looked at Ling Chen hazily as she said in a dreamy, soft voice, “So the happiness that I wanted... was so close to me the whole time... I just didn’t have the courage to take it with my own hands... if I had been just a bit more brave... just a bit... even if today still came... I wouldn’t have any regrets...”

After speaking, Yun Meng Xin’s unfocused eyes slowly closed, and her body, which had been lying in Ling Chen’s warm embrace, fell back to the bed.

“Meng Xin... Meng Xin!!”

Yun Meng Xin did not reply – she silently lay there in a deep sleep, looking like a sleeping princess from a fairy tale who was

waiting for her prince to awaken her with a kiss. Though her face and lips were incredibly pale, she still looked incredibly beautiful, like a cold goddess. Her simple white dress looked incredibly elegant on her, and it was even more beautiful than those exquisite and fancy dresses. In fact, it could be said that it was she who made this dress look beautiful, not the other way around.

Without realising it, Ling Chen's eyes had become damp, but he raised his head, forcing the watery feeling back.

Meng Xin, you said that you regretted it, and I also regret it. When I lost Ruo Ruo, I hated myself for devoting so much time to taking revenge on the Long family and not spending it with Ruo Ruo. Now, I regret that I hadn't told you about my feelings earlier... if both of us had taken this step, we wouldn't have so much pain and regret at the very least...

Why did he have to only realise and regret once he lost something...

“Big brother... Ling... Tian...”

A mosquito-like voice sounded in Ling Chen's ear. He hurriedly looked behind himself and stumbled over to Su'Er as he called out, “Su Su!”

Su'Er was still sleeping, and she was in a deeper sleep than Yun Meng Xin. Just then, she had only called out to him while sleeping. While dreaming, she had not called for her father, aunty, or uncle... but him.

And yet, he could not save Su'Er, nor could he save Yun Meng Xin.

Ling Chen felt as if all of his strength had left his body, and he once again sat on the floor, looking down in despair. This whole time, he had known that he was a monster that could put everything beneath him. He had the strength to look down on everything beneath the heavens, and as such, he had always been

proud and arrogant. However, at this moment, he felt completely useless... a trash who could only watch as the people around him walked towards death.

The door opened, and a pair of slow and heavy footsteps walked towards Ling Chen. With Ling Chen's senses, a blade of grass tens of metres away could not escape his senses, and yet he did not realise that this person had walked right up to him and gently hugged him.

Ling Chen raised his head and saw Xuanyuan Dia Wu's eyes, which were filled with heartache and comforting. He leaned his head against her chest and said dispiritedly, "Dia Wu, what should I do... what should I do..."

Xuanyuan Dia Wu did not know how to reply, and she only lightly sighed. After a while, she softly said, "No matter what happens, I'll be by your side forever."

After lightly pushing Xuanyuan Dia Wu away, Ling Chen stood up. "Dia Wu, you should go rest. It's too dangerous here, and if you're infected as well..."

"I know; I just wanted to come see you. I'll leave immediately. Stay here and keep them company. Even if they're asleep, they'll still be very happy." Xuanyuan Dia Wu did not insist on staying. Although her body was quite strong, that didn't mean she was immune to the Isrock Disease like Ling Chen and the Reapers. Seeing how much sorrow and grief Ling Chen felt for Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er, she did not feel even a hint of jealousy, only heartache.

"Tian Tian and Sha Sha are both very worried about you and refuse to sleep." After saying these words, Xuanyuan Dia Wu anxiously looked at Ling Chen for a while before softly leaving.

Not too long after, Ling Chen opened the door and walked out. The fresh air outside did not refresh his sinking heart at all. He felt as if there were a massive mountain weighing down on his heart,

and it was to the point that he almost couldn't breathe.

Ling Chen silently looked up at the starry sky and gave a long sigh. After taking a few steps forwards, he saw a small figure next to the man-made lake.

“Sha Sha... why aren't you asleep yet?” Ling Chen walked over as he wondered why she was here all alone... wasn't Dia Wu, Yao Ying, and the others watching over her? Why wasn't Tian Tian with her?

Hearing Ling Chen's voice, Shadissika turned around and looked at him without blinking. She lowered her gaze as she said in a worried tone, “Ling Chen, I can feel that you're very sad... I thought that Ling Chen was someone who always made others feel peaceful and happy. So it turns out that Ling Chen can be sad to this degree as well.”

Ling Chen shook his head and did not say anything. He stood beside Shadissika and silently looked at the moon's reflection on the water.

“Ling Chen.” Shadissika looked up at him. “If, if one day I was like those 2 big sisters, or if I... disappeared so that you couldn't find me, would you feel this sad as well?”

Ling Chen's eyes trembled and bent down to hug Shadissika. “Of course I would.”

“Why?” Shadissika's voice sounded quite emotional. Evidently, she was quite touched by Ling Chen's reply. “Those 2 big sisters have been with you for so long, so it's only natural that you are so close with them. However, I was picked up by you and taken care of by you so well, but I can't do anything for you...”

“It's because...” Ling Chen shook his head, cutting Shadissika off. “It's because Sha Sha is my little angel. Every time I see Sha Sha, I feel much happier, and my mind feels much better. This is something that no one else but Sha Sha can give me.”

Ling Chen's words represented how he really felt about Sha Sha. There was something magical about her. Every time he saw or hugged her, he felt a sense of happiness and satisfaction. This sort of feeling became immersed in his soul, and although she had only been with him for 2 months, he already couldn't imagine not having her by his side.

"Little angel..." A light flickered in Sha Sha's eyes, but it was quickly replaced by an incomprehensible light. Following this, her gaze became dim, and her voice became softer, "Then... Then what if Sha Sha was a bad person... a very bad person, who... who's worse than a demon..."

Ling Chen laughed and looked into Sha Sha's eyes as he earnestly said, "How could Sha Sha associate herself with demons... alright, even if Sha Sha really were a demon, I'll be this little demon's guardian. No one's allowed to harm my little demon."

Sha Sha silently looked into his eyes with a calm and sincere look in her eyes.

"Alright, be good and go to sleep now. It's easy to get a cold if you stay out here so late," Ling Chen softly said as he stroked Sha Sha's cold face.

After staring at Ling Chen for a while, she lightly replied with a 'mm', then walked back towards her room. Sha Sha was acting quite strangely, and normally, Ling Chen would have realised this and asked her what was wrong. However, Ling Chen's mind was at an incredibly low point, and he didn't have any mind to notice or ask about it.

Shadissika did not return to her own room. She appeared in the back garden, which contained a multitudes of flowers, and stood in the corner as she silently stared at the man-made lake and the soulless Ling Chen. Her gaze flickered the entire time as if she felt incredibly conflicted. After a while, a cool breeze blew past, causing the rock-like Ling Chen to sway. Seeing this, Sha Sha's

heart ached, and she almost called out his name.

If I do that, I might be discovered by them...

But...

Shadissika slowly stretched out her right hand, and she lowered a small finger...

“I don’t want to see him like this. Even if I’m discovered...”

A drop of blood dripped out from Shadissika’s finger into the small bottle she was holding. This bottle was one of the bottles that contained the Fairy Fountain water. Before the drop of blood fell in, half of it contained water from the man-made lake.

Chapter 713 - Miracle

The night became darker and darker, and every second that passed, Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er came closer to death. Every second that passed, the god of death could descend on them. Facing the god of death, no matter how powerful Ling Chen was, he could only despair. All he could do was silently stand in front of Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er's beds, looking down at them.

“Ling Chen.”

As a voice called out, the tightly-closed door was suddenly opened. Shadissika stood at the entrance, sweetly smiling at the despairing Ling Chen. Her appearing here greatly shocked Ling Chen, and he hurriedly ran over and blocked in front of her. “Sha Sha, immediately leave this place. It's too dangerous here... where are Dia Wu and Ying and Xi? Why didn't they stop you?”

“It has nothing to do with big sister Dia Wu and the others,” Shadissika said as she smiled. She was completely different to how she had been just then. She stretched out her hand towards Ling Chen, and within it was the bottle that contained the Fairy Fountain water. “Ling Chen, if you give this to Meng Xin and Su Su to drink, they'll immediately get better.”

Shadissika's straightforward words shocked Ling Chen. “What... is this?”

“It's something that can cure these 2 big sisters. Ling Chen will know after giving it to them to drink.” Shadissika grabbed Ling Chen's hand and placed the bottle into it.

Ling Chen's eyes jumped, but it was not out of joy. This girl was incredibly pure and innocent, and Ling Chen believed that she would not lie. However, the words she said were simply too shocking, and he simply couldn't believe them... because apart from the Mad Scientist, there was nobody in the world who could cure the Isrock Disease. Otherwise, he wouldn't have despaired so

much. How could this girl, who he had brought out from the virtual world, be able to cure this world's most terrifying sickness?

“Ling Chen, it's true. It really can save these 2 big sisters. As long as they drink it, they'll wake up soon and be fine.” Shadissika knew that Ling Chen would naturally be skeptical, but she smiled and stared at him without blinking, seeming incredibly confident.

“Alright...”

Although he simply couldn't believe it didn't have any hope, Ling Chen couldn't resist the look in Shadissika's eyes. Moreover, since Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er were already in desperate straits, he had no reason not to try no matter how impossible it sounded. Ling Chen picked up the bottle and walked over to Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er's beds, feeding them the contents with his mouth.

“This is the hope that Sha Sha gave us... I hope that a miracle really can happen.” Ling Chen stood up and softly said. He then turned and said to Shadissika, “Alright, Sha Sha, go and rest. You're not allowed to come here again, alright?”

“Mm, got it,” Shadissika clearly replied, a cute smile still on her face as she said seriously, “Can I make a promise with Ling Chen?”

“Promise?”

“Mm!” Shadissika lightly nodded, her eyes sparkling, “Big sister Meng Xin and big sister Su Su will get better soon, but Ling Chen can't tell anyone that they got better because of me, alright?”

Ling Chen felt like smiling, but he couldn't smile. He didn't ask anything and just nodded. “Alright, I'll definitely keep this promise.”

Shadissika softly left, and the moment the door closed, Ling Chen felt quite perplexed: With Dia Wu, Chao Ying, Chao Xi, and Yao Ying around, it was impossible for Sha Sha to come here. If Sha Sha was determined to come, they would have definitely stopped her. Even if she wanted to secretly come, she wouldn't have been

able to escape their senses. And yet, Shadissika had come here all alone.

However, this thought only flashed in Ling Chen's mind, and he did not pay it much mind. He raised his head and looked outside, hearing Sha Sha's footsteps get further and further away, until he heard her open and close the living room door. He let out a light breath, and he clenched his fists...

Isrock Disease... why did such a terrifying thing exist in the world? All of the nightmares in his lifetime had come from it.

If there were a way to make it disappear from the world forever, Ling Chen was willing to do anything to get rid of it simply because he couldn't endure this nightmare anymore.

Ever since the Isrock Disease appeared, hundreds of millions of people had died because of it. It was Ling Chen's and the entire world's worst nightmare. Ling Chen hated the Isrock Disease more than anything else, and today, his hatred rose to the extreme. Now, his entire mind was overshadowed by the terror of the Isrock Disease.

A very weak gasp sounded out, and although it was incredibly quiet, it sounded like a peal of thunder in Ling Chen's ears. The source of the sound was Su'Er. Ling Chen rushed over to Su'Er's bed and stared at her as he called out, "Su Su? Su Su?"

As Ling Chen called out and stared in disbelief, Su'Er's hazy eyes slowly opened, and her bright gaze pierced into his heart, causing all of the cells in his body to tremble... because although Su'Er's gaze was hazy, it was because of sleepiness not sickness. After opening her eyes, her eyes became clearer, and a red glow appeared on her originally pale face.

"Big brother Ling Tian, is it really you..." Su'Er muttered as she dumbly stared at Ling Chen, feeling as if she hadn't woken up yet.

"It's me, it's really me. I'm right here," Ling Chen hurriedly held

her hand, letting her feel his existence as he spoke in a trembling voice. Su'Er's body had always been quite weak, and she had been unconscious the entire time, unable to wake up. As the Isrock Disease developed more and more, she would only fall into a deeper and deeper sleep until she died. However, she had woken up, and she could see him and speak clearly...

“Big brother Ling Tian!” When Ling Chen became clearer and she felt the warmth in her hands, Su'Er finally realised that she wasn't in a dream. She suddenly leapt up and hugged him, and she pressed her head tightly against his chest as her body lightly quivered. “This is great... This is great... I just had a terrifying nightmare... I fell into a very dark hole, and I thought I would never be able to see big brother Ling Tian again... wuu... I knew that was just a dream... wuu...”

After speaking, Su'Er couldn't help but sob, wetting the front of Ling Chen's shirt.

The figure in his embrace was soft and warm, and the arms around him held onto him tightly, as if she was afraid that he would run off the instant she let go. Ling Chen stood there, feeling dumbstruck. Now, it was his turn to wonder if he was in a dream.

After being infected with the Isrock Disease, one wouldn't even have the ability to stand up, and this was even more so for Su'Er, who had just been infected by a highly-active Isrock Disease! And yet, Su'Er was able to quickly get up and hug him... this sort of strength was not something that someone with the Isrock Disease had!

“Su Su, you... you...” Ling Chen was filled with shock and joy to the point that even though his mind was much more agile than normal people's, he couldn't say a single word for a long time. “A-Are you feeling any discomfort anywhere?”

Su'Er lightly shook her head, which was still pressed against his chest, as she sniffled. When she had contracted the Isrock Disease,

she had fallen unconscious, and she had only just woken up. She didn't know anything that had happened in between – in fact, she most likely didn't even know that she had contracted the Isrock Disease.

“Ling Chen... Su'Er?”

A hazy and uncertain voice sounded out from behind Ling Chen's back. Ling Chen turned around and saw that the previously unconscious Yun Meng Xin was now sitting up, staring at him and Su'Er. The paleness that could cause anyone's heart to ache was gone from her face, and it had returned to the snow-white complexion that had a healthy red glow that Ling Chen was familiar with. Her eyes were no longer dim, and they had that familiar brightness within them.

A burning feeling quickly spread out from Ling Chen's chest, extending to his entire body. He deeply breathed in, and he let go of Su'Er as he quickly rushed to the door and pulled it open, yelling, “Ying, hurry up and come over!!”

Ling Chen's excited shout caused Yao Ying to immediately respond. She directly jumped down from the second level balcony and ran towards where Ling Chen was. Dia Wu, Xiao Qi, Chao Ying, and Chao Xi all quickly followed.

The atmosphere in the room was no longer dark and gloomy, and Yao Ying stared up the equipment from the Mad Scientist, checking both Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er's bodies. By now, Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er had already gotten out of bed and were standing there like normal, not looking weak at all. When everyone saw them, they were completely flabbergasted.

The results also completely shocked Yao Ying.

“Heavens... this is simply unbelievable!!” Yao Ying shouted in shock. Of course, there was joy in her voice, but it was greatly exceeded by her shock. “All traces of the Isrock Disease have vanished from their bodies... no, accurately speaking, all harmful

viruses and bacteria are gone from their bodies.” She looked at Ling Chen with a burning gaze. “Master, just what did you do? This is an incredible miracle!!”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“It’s completely gone? Completely gone? With nothing left?” Xiao Qi excitedly grabbed at the corners of Yao Ying’s clothes as she pinched herself... the pain told her that this was not a dream, but she simply couldn’t believe that this was real.

“It’s true! Definitely! Completely! Absolutely! Not only that, all of their bodies’ physiological functions have recovered; even I can’t believe it! However, all of this is real!” Yao Ying rapidly nodded. Wasn’t Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er, who were standing right there, the best evidence?

Ling Chen did not say anything. Looking at Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er, who looked completely fine, he was so excited that he couldn’t say anything. Hearing Yao Ying’s words, Shadissika’s small figure flashed in his mind.

It was Sha Sha! It was because of that bottle she had given him!

Ling Chen subconsciously looked towards the door, and he saw Sha Sha standing there. Meeting Ling Chen’s gaze, she giggled and blinked at him. Ling Chen immediately realised what she was trying to say: Don’t forget about our promise!

“I think that it’s because of the medicine I gave them to drink before,” Ling Chen said before letting out a long breath. “I thought that the medicine hadn’t worked, but it now seems that it just needed some time to take effect. We were all scared needlessly.” After saying this, he wiped the sweat off his forehead and gently said, “Meng Xin, Su Su, welcome back.”

“No less expected from master, amazing!” Yao Ying looked at him in admiration and worship.

“I... I knew that big brother Ling Tian could do it! I knew there

was nothing that big brother Ling Tian couldn't do!" Tears were streaming out of Xiao Qi's eyes. In just a short day, she had been kicked into hell, saw a light of hope, and then kicked to hell again. Finally, that nightmare finally ended. She wiped away her tears before rushing at Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er, hugging them tightly before wailing...

Chapter 714 - Blessing The World

Just like that, a massive crisis had been averted by a method no one had expected. Everyone thought that Ling Chen had used the mystical Fairy Fountain water to save Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er from the Isrock Disease. The massive joy in seeing Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er come back to life caused the girls to forget all of the pain and grief in their hearts, replacing them with laughter and much chatting.

“Dad, uncle, aunty, I'm fine now. Look, I'm completely fine. The Isrock Disease in my body is completely gone... it was big brother Ling Tian who saved big sister Meng Xin and me!”

Although it was late at night, how could Su Hong Cheng and Su Yi Cheng fall asleep? After receiving the video call from Su'Er, they saw Su'Er with a rozy complexion smiling and jumping, and they almost couldn't believe their eyes. Following this, the 2 men of iron could not help but weep. After confirming many times that Su'Er's Isrock Disease was completely gone, they alternated between laughing and crying like 2 mad men.

“Thank you, Ling Tian, thank you... we are assured with Su'Er by your side. Please take care of her for us.”

This was Su Hong Cheng's voice, filled with deep gratitude. Even though he had only thanked Ling Chen and asked him to take care of Su'Er, those few sentences had decided Su'Er and the entire Su family's future.

Yun Meng Xin also immediately told Yun Feng, who had not been able to sleep at all, causing him to become so excited that he screamed like a demon. Following this, words of worship towards Ling Chen flooded out of his mouth with no end.

It was nearly dawn, and the girls, who had been mentally tortured for a whole day, were now able to relax. They talked and messed around for a long time before sleeping. However, Ling

Chen was unable to sleep at all. After the girls had all gone to sleep, he got up and went to the courtyard. Ling Chen stood beside the man-made lake, spacing out. He replayed the words Shadissika had said to him, as well as the bottle she had given him.

Indeed, it was that bottle that Sha Sha had given him that had saved Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er. Apart from that, there was no other possibility. However, just what did that bottle contain? Where did Sha Sha get it from? It had actually completely cured the world's most terrifying disease so quickly, and it had completely restored Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er. Back then, after Shui Ruo had taken the 13223 drug, it had taken her a whole month to recover!

“Could it really be that the Fairy Fountain water just needed some time to take effect?” Qi Yue's voice sounded out from behind him. He had no idea when the sexily-dressed Qi Yue had appeared behind him.

“Even though I'm completely amazed, it looks like that's the only explanation,” Ling Chen said as he turned around. “After all, the Isrock Disease couldn't have disappeared by itself, right?”

“You should know that saying that the Fairy Fountain water took some time to take effect is completely illogical. However, it seems that little master is feeling quite confused.” Qi Yue tapped her snow-white chin, and her eyes narrowed as if she was thinking about something. She definitely didn't believe that the Fairy Fountain water just had delayed effects because it would no longer be Fairy Fountain water the instant it came into contact with the air, and it would no longer be able to do anything to the Isrock Disease. However, she was even more doubtful that Ling Chen was hiding some method from her. She had felt all of his emotions from before, and if he really did have some sort of method, he would have used it immediately.

However, Qi Yue didn't believe that this had nothing to do with Ling Chen. After Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er had recovered, she had

been observing Ling Chen the whole time, and his reaction was simply too strange. Within his shock and joy, there was a haziness and uncertainty in his eyes that was impossible to identify.

Ling Chen smiled with a baffled look on his face. “That’s what I thought too. Apart from that, I can’t think of anything else. Oh? Qi Yue, could it have been you?”

Qi Yue raised an eyebrow as she looked at Ling Chen, unimpressed. “Looks like little master doesn’t want to tell me. Forget it, I’m going to go and rest in order to avoid annoying little master... little master should rest soon as well.”

After saying this, Qi Yue elegantly walked off.

He wasn’t sure if it was a coincidence, but just as Qi Yue left, a soft patter of footsteps sounded out from behind him. Without turning around, Ling Chen already knew who the footsteps belonged to.

“Ling Chen, why aren’t you sleeping yet?” Shadissika stood beside Ling Chen, holding onto his hand with her 2 small hands in a natural manner.

“Sha Sha...” Facing Sha Sha, Ling Chen’s heart couldn’t help but beat faster. He deeply breathed in and said lightly, “Thank you.”

This word of thanks was quite heavy because this pure-white girl, who had walked into his life, had just saved Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er’s lives.

Shadissika smiled as she shook her head. “I don’t need Ling Chen to thank me because Ling Chen’s the most, most important person to me. I did what I did because that would make Ling Chen happy.”

Shadissika had said similar things to him the entire time she had been with him. Ling Chen also smiled and held Sha Sha’s small hands before saying earnestly, “Sha Sha, can you tell me what was in that bottle? I really want to know what saved Meng Xin and Su Su’s lives.”

He desperately wanted to know what that bottle contained. He couldn't help but think that if Sha Sha had come earlier, perhaps Shui Ruo...

Facing Ling Chen's question, Shadissika slightly lowered her head and shook her head, saying in a small voice slowly but resolutely, "I'm sorry... I can't say..." After saying these words, she suddenly became afraid that Ling Chen would get angry, and her voice became anxious, "I-It's not because I don't want to say or because I'm trying to lie to Ling Chen, but... but... I really can't, I..."

Seeing that she was anxious to the point of tears, Ling Chen felt an ache within his heart, and he hurriedly said, "It's fine, everyone has their own little secrets. This is Sha Sha's secret, so she doesn't have to tell me. It's fine; I won't get angry... because I've always believed that Sha Sha's a little angel sent to me from heaven that will only make me happy. I'm sure Sha Sha would never do anything that's bad for me."

Ling Chen's words caused Shadissika to raise her face. She stared at Ling Chen for a while before sweetly smiling and vigorously nodding. "Mm! Sha Sha will never, ever do anything bad to Ling Chen. However, I know that Ling Chen won't be happy about me not telling him, so I prepared a present as compensation." Looking at Ling Chen, Shadissika's crystal-like eyes seemed to light up.

"Present?" Ling Chen bent down, looking quite curious. Not only had she saved Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er miraculously, thus dispelling that nightmare, but she had also prepared a present as compensation for not telling Ling Chen how she had done it. It would be difficult for anyone not to love this pure-white girl.

"It's this!" Shadissika put her hands behind her back, and when she brought them out again, there was a small bottle within them – it was another of the bottles that had contained Fairy Fountain water.

“What is this?” Looking at the bottle in Shadissika’s hands, Ling Chen seemed to guess something, and his expression became excited.

Shadissika looked up as she said earnestly, “Ling Chen told me that the Isrock Disease is the most terrifying thing in the world and that there are many people in the world who have died from it. There are almost 200 million people infected with it across the world, and it is what everyone on earth fears the most. Even big brother Ling Chen hates and fears it. Before, even big sister Meng Xin and big sister Su Su almost... as such, I don’t want to see this happen anymore, and I don’t want Ling Chen to feel scared of this Isrock Disease.”

Shadissika raised the bottle higher, and under the moonlight, the liquid gave off a faint light. “The water inside is the same as what we gave the 2 big sisters. However, if it’s just to get rid of the Isrock Disease, you don’t need all of it. It won’t be a problem even if you dilute it 1 billion times.”

Ling Chen’s hands, which were about to take the bottle, violently trembled.

Dilute 1 billion times... even if it was diluted 1 billion times, it would still be able to cure the Isrock Disease!!

There were currently 200 million infected by the Isrock Disease, so in other words... this tiny bottle could rid the entire world of the nightmare that was the Isrock Disease! In other words, it could completely eradicate the Isrock Disease from this world!!

“Sha Sha... is this true?” Ling Chen’s voice trembled. If this was true, Sha Sha would save 200 million... no! If the Isrock Disease continued to spread, countless people would die! It was a terrifying disease that could bring down the whole world! This was a blessing not just to those who were infected but to the whole world!

“Of course it’s true. I would never trick Ling Chen.” After putting the bottle in Ling Chen’s hands, Shadissika smiled as she nodded.

“Sha Sha!” Although Shadissika’s words were incredibly shocking, Ling Chen did not doubt them at all. Yun Meng Xin and Su’Er had been miraculously healed, giving him no reason to doubt her words. He tightly gripped the bottle that could save hundreds of millions of lives as he said, “I’m starting to believe that you really are a little angel – not just mine, but the entire world’s...”

“Hehe, but Sha Sha only wants to belong to Ling Chen,” Sha Sha laughed.

“As long as you don’t secretly run off, no one will be able to steal you from my side.” Ling Chen put his arms around her slim shoulders as he smiled. The gratitude within his heart flooded through his entire body and soul. Shadissika was a girl who he had brought out from a strange place in the virtual world. Who she was, what her background was, and what secrets she had... none of those things mattered... he felt himself grow more and more attached to this girl... even though he had only known her for 2 or 3 months, he was as attached to her as he had been to Shui Ruo, who he had been with for more than 6 years.

Chapter 715 - Sha Sha and Tian Tian's promise

“The Isrock Disease was created by the nuclear and magnetic radiation released during wars and the pollution that has gathered for thousands of years. Humans are greatly reliant on nature, but they are taking care of it less and less. If this continues, even if there weren't anymore nuclear battles, the Isrock Disease would have developed regardless. It isn't wrong to say that the Isrock Disease is nature's revenge.

“What I gave Ling Chen is something that can cause the Isrock Disease to disappear from the world, but if the world continues to destroy nature like before, something more terrifying than the Isrock Disease will appear soon.”

Shadissika looked out at the water as she spoke in a calm but melancholic tone, saying things that a girl of her age should not be able to say.

Ling Chen looked over at the girl beside him in shock and nodded his head, then shook his head. “Sha Sha, you're completely right. Humans realised this, so we signed the Hundred Year Armistice Convention. However, there are more and more people on earth, and no matter how we control it, it's impossible for us to slow down the destruction of nature. Something like the Isrock Disease is fated to appear once again in future.”

“Ling Chen, this is for you.” Shadissika suddenly stretched out her hand, and within it was a small, metallic chip the size of a fingernail.

“This is... a memory chip?” Ling Chen held it in his hand, looking at Shadissika with curiosity. This was a very ordinary memory chip. Although it was incredibly thin, with the 31st century's technology, this memory chip was able to store 300

terabytes on it.

“On this are ways that the earth can use to avoid things like the Isrock Disease from appearing again. Ling Chen just needs to give it to big sister Xiao Xue – she’ll know what to do,” Shadissika said as she smiled.

“Really?!” Ling Chen was once again greatly shocked. The shock at what Shadissika had just said greatly surpassed how he had felt when she had given him the bottle that could save everyone who was infected with the Isrock Disease. He was unable to remain calm anymore, and his eyes widened as he asked, “Just what’s inside this? Where did you get it from? Is it really as amazing as you said?”

“Mm!” Shadissika vigorously nodded, then lowered her head and said in a softer voice, “If, if I had just met Ling Chen, I would just say that these things are in my head and that I don’t know how I knew these things. However, now, now... I don’t want to lie to Ling Chen... but I... really can’t answer... I...”

Shadissika looked so flustered that Ling Chen could only shake his head and say, “It’s fine. Sha Sha doesn’t need to tell me. I know Sha Sha has an important reason why she can’t tell me, and I believe that Sha Sha not telling me is for my own good. I’ll give this memory chip to your big sister Xiao Xue tomorrow.”

A sweet smile reappeared on Shadissika’s face. She happily nodded. “Mm! I knew that Ling Chen was the best, best person in the world... alright, I’m going to sleep then.”

Ling Chen’s words made Shadissika’s burdened heart feel at ease, and her mood became much better as she more or less skipped away. Watching her leave, Ling Chen held the bottle and memory chip in his hands, unable to quell the massive waves within his heart.

Sha Sha... just who are you...

Shadissika lightly returned to her room. Just as she closed the door, she saw Tian Tian rubbing her eyes, asking sleepily, “Sha Sha, where did you go... eh, where’s big brother?”

“Ah? I couldn’t sleep just then, so I went out for a bit. Big brother’s still outside; he’s probably too excited to sleep.” Shadissika smiled as she returned to the bed.

“Oh...” Tian Tian replied before kicking the blanket. “I’m so sleepy. Sha Sha, hurry and sleep.”

Shadissika pulled over the blankets, covering half of her small body, but she did not lie down. She silently looked at Tian Tian for a while, her gaze flickering as she suddenly said, “Tian Tian, if you had to leave Ling Chen for a long time to do something very important, would you be willing?”

“Of course not!” Although she was quite sleepy, Tian Tian answered without any hesitation. The more time she spent with him, the more she became attached to him. This was especially so after they had lost Shui Ruo – the trauma she had suffered made it so that she did not want to be separated from Ling Chen for even a day. As such, she automatically gave this answer in response to Shadissika’s question.

“Then doesn’t Tian Tian miss her mummy? And doesn’t she want to go back to the place called the Xiya Star?” Shadissika softly asked as she looked at Tian Tian’s partly-opened eyes.

“Mummy...?” Tian Tian repeated this strangely, and her eyes suddenly opened wide as she stared at the ceiling, as if she was trying to remember something. After a while, she turned to look at Shadissika with a hazy gaze. “Mummy... Xiya Star... did they really exist... or was it just a dream... I don’t know why, but I can’t remember them anymore. Mm, forget it, let’s not think about it anymore. Sha Sha, let’s sleep.”

“So it was like this...” Shadissika inwardly thought. “Her memories were scattered due to the crash, but they should have

recovered a long time ago. However, Ling Shui Ruo's death dealt a massive blow to her mind, making her feel that she could never leave Ling Chen. As such, she subconsciously suppressed those memories from surfacing because she was afraid that she would have to leave Ling Chen if she remembered... however, her power will awaken sooner or later, as will her memories. Even she won't be able to stop that. When that time comes..."

Shadissika gently placed her hand on Tian Tian's eyes and came closer as she smiled and said mysteriously, "Tian Tian, I'll give you a present."

"Present? What present?" Hearing the word 'present', Tian Tian felt much more awake.

Shadissika mysteriously smiled and stretched out her hand. She then drew a line around Tian Tian's snow-white neck before taking her hand off Tian Tian's eyes and saying, "Look."

Without the lights on, only some dim light came in from outside. Tian Tian excitedly sat up, and she immediately saw the dim violet light in front of her chest. Her eyes instantly lit up, and she held it with her hands as she cried out, "Wow! It's so pretty!!"

In front of Tian Tian's chest was a beautiful crystal pendant, which hung from her neck by a thin, transparent string. Although it was evening, it gave off a dreamy, violet light.

Seeing how cute Tian Tian looked, Shadissika happily laughed, "This isn't just any ordinary pendant; it also contains a mysterious power."

"A mysterious power?"

"Mhmm! Tian Tian, you need to remember my words." Shadissika held Tian Tian's hands, which were cupped around the pendant, and her gaze became serious. Looking at Shadissika, Tian Tian tilted her head curiously.

"Tian Tian must wear this pendant every day, and you must

never take it off. This is even when Tian Tian's showering or sleeping."

"Okay! Since it's a present given to me by Sha Sha and it's so pretty, I would never have taken it off anyways," Tian Tian confidently promised before Shadissika finished speaking.

"Mm." Shadissika nodded, and her expression became even more serious as she said, "What I'm about to say next is even more important... one day, if you face danger and big brother and I are not around, you just need to put this violet pendant in your mouth... okay?"

"Eh?" Tian Tian looked quite confused. "Sha Sha, what you're saying is so strange. Big brother will never leave me, and I won't let myself get into any danger. Plus, even if there is danger, why do I need to put it in my mouth? It's not a lolly."

Shadissika knew that no one would be able to understand her words. She couldn't explain it, so she grabbed Tian Tian's small hands and said earnestly, "Of course, I understand how Tian Tian feels, so let's just treat it as a promise between us, alright? Just a small promise between us that doesn't need any reason... alright?"

Tian Tian still looked quite confused. "Alright, even though it sounds very strange, since that's what Sha Sha wants... I'll listen to Sha Sha then. This is Sha Sha's present for me and my promise with Sha Sha, so I'll definitely keep it."

"As expected from my best big sister Tian Tian. I like you so much!" Shadissika said in a cute voice and hugged Tian Tian as she laughed.

"Hehe... what a pretty pendant. I like it so much. In the future, I'll also give Sha Sha a pretty gift... yaawn~" As Tian Tian spoke, she yawned and then said with drooping eyelids, "It's already so late, and I'm so sleepy. Sha Sha, let's sleep."

"Mm." Sha Sha covered both of them with the blanket and lay

down and closed her eyes. “Sleep time!”

Soon, Tian Tian was sound asleep. When she fell asleep, Sha Sha, who was not intending to sleep at all, opened her eyes and looked up at the ceiling.

Only that method is able to cause the Isrock Disease to vanish from this world, but that will allow them to easily find me... however, this is his greatest wish, and this is the only way I can achieve it.

Tian Tian, if that day comes, protect Ling Chen for me.

Chapter 716 - Futuristic Technology

The next day at noon, Ling Chen changed his appearance and personally came to the Li family's residence. The things that Shadissika had given him were much too important, and he wasn't able to feel at ease with them in his hands.

“What? 1 billion?!” Li Xiao Xue stood up from her chair with a ‘whoosh’ and looked at Ling Chen with dismay. “Do you know what that number represents? How is that possible?!”

She had heard that Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er had been cured of the Isrock Disease, and this in and of itself had given her a great shock. When Ling Chen came, she was desperate to know just how Ling Chen had cured the world's most terrifying disease. Before she could ask, Ling Chen gave her a bottle filled with a transparent liquid and said a sentence that was even more shocking than a legend.

It would still be effective even if it was diluted into 1 billion parts... this meant that the contents of this tiny bottle could cause the Isrock Disease to vanish from the world!

“You didn't hear incorrectly; it's 1 billion! If you're unable to believe it, you can find some people with the Isrock Disease and carry out tests after diluting it to one-billionth of its current dilution,” Ling Chen replied calmly.

If it were anyone else who had said those words, Li Xiao Xue would have believed that he was crazy. However, for Ling Chen to say it so calmly, it did not seem like a lie, and yet she was unable to believe it. As she held the small bottle, her hands subtly trembled. If what Ling Chen said was true, the value of this tiny bottle was simply priceless.

“Just what's inside this bottle? Where did you get it from?”

“I don't know.” Ling Chen shook his head. “Because this bottle

was given to me by someone else. It was because of this that we were able to save Meng Xin and Su Su. What I just said was what that person said to me, so I completely believe it! Just don't ask me who it was – that person didn't want me to tell anyone else.”

Li Xiao Xue slowly breathed out and looked at Ling Chen in disbelief. “And you're giving it... to me?”

Ling Chen nodded. “That's right! Because out of all of the people I know and trust, you're the only one able to dilute it that much and send it to Isrock Disease victims all over the world.”

“If... If what you said is true, do you know what this means for my Li family?” Li Xiao Xue's breathing became ragged.

After knowing Li Xiao Xue for so long, it was the first time he had seen her with such extreme emotions. However, this was not surprising – the value of the bottle in her hands was greater than thousands of times what the Li family had.

Ling Chen did not directly answer her question, and he instead asked, “If your tests prove what I said is true, how will you use it?”

Ling Chen thought that Li Xiao Xue would think for a long time before answering such an important question. Who would have thought that Li Xiao Xue would immediately say, “Of course I'll announce to the world that my Li family's medicine is able to cure the Isrock Disease and that none of the Isrock Disease victims will have to pay anything to receive it... we'll provide it to the whole world for free!”

“Provide it to the whole world for free?” Ling Chen was flabbergasted, and he asked, “Even though your Li family is incredibly rich, there are many Isrock Disease victims, and they're spread out all over the world. Doing this will cost a fortune... with my understanding of you, the big miss of the Li family, I'm sure you're not just doing this out of the kindness of your heart, right?”

Li Xiao Xue smiled and pursed her lips before saying leisurely,

“The costs will be quite high, but no matter how high they are, our Li family can take it. However, the benefits will be tens of thousands of times greater than the costs... no, millions of times greater. This is because our Li family will have saved hundreds of millions of people and gotten rid of the world’s biggest disaster. No one has ever done such a thing before! Our Li family will be known by the whole world, and our fame and reputation will hide the sky and cover the sun!

“This is especially so for those who have been plagued by the Isrock Disease. They would have received life from death, and they and their families would all be incredibly grateful towards the Li family to the point of worshipping my Li family! When that time comes, the support my Li family will receive will be unimaginable, and our development will become unstoppable. At the same time, what we had done was a great service to the world, so we will be remembered by history forever. Our family will become like a bright sun in the sky, and even the Long family’s people will not dare to do anything to the Li family who saved the world!”

After speaking, Li Xiao Xue looked at Ling Chen and added, “If what you said is true, what I just said is not an exaggeration at all. Moreover, this is just a small part of the benefits my Li family will receive!”

Li Xiao Xue’s words caused Ling Chen’s heart to tremble. He thought for a moment and couldn’t help but admit that Li Xiao Xue’s words were not exaggerated at all. As such, giving this bottle to the Li family would bring them immeasurable benefits. However, he did not care much for the benefits that the Li family would receive. He nodded as he said, “Since it’s like this, I’ll leave it to your Li family. As long as you can eradicate the Isrock Disease from the world, you can do whatever you wish with it. Moreover, I don’t need you to pay any price.”

“Oh?” Li Xiao Xue’s eyes rippled as she charmingly smiled. “I’m your woman, and I’ve even given you my precious virginity. As my

man, aren't you supposed to give me things? Could it be that you thought about using this as an exchange?"

"....." Ling Chen's face twitched, and he walked forwards and handed the memory chip from Shadissika to her as well. "I should give you this as well."

"A memory chip? What's inside it?" Li Xiao Xue asked in curiosity.

"I didn't look through it, so I don't know. If you want to know, have a look for yourself. This memory chip is from the same person who gave me that bottle," Ling Chen replied.

Hearing that the memory chip came from the same person who had given Ling Chen the bottle that could supposedly eradicate the Isrock Disease, Li Xiao Xue looked at the memory chip seriously. She did not say anything as she inserted it into her computer and opened its contents.

Ling Chen and Li Xiao Xue were separated by a table, so he could not see the contents on the screen, nor did he go over to look. Instead, he watched Li Xiao Xue's reaction. When the files within the memory chip were opened, he saw Li Xiao Xue frown, and as her finger flicked across the computer screen, her frown did not lessen but instead became tighter. Her expression went from one of calmness to one of shock... she could not suppress her shock at all.

In the end, her hands on the computer started to shake more and more violently. This sort of reaction from Li Xiao Xue was already absurd. Ling Chen finally couldn't resist anymore and asked, "What's inside it?"

Li Xiao Xue turned the computer around as her chest heaved. "Ling Chen! Who gave you this memory chip? Just who is that person?"

Ling Chen frowned and said, "I already said that the person doesn't want anyone else to know who he or she is, so I won't

answer that question... just what's inside?"

A complicated look appeared in Li Xiao Xue's eyes, and her lips moved a few times as if she still wanted to continue asking who that person was. However, thinking back to how stubborn Ling Chen was, she had to give up. She finally said with a breathless voice, "If this memory chip and that bottle came from the same person, then I can completely believe in the properties of the contents of that bottle! The things in here... don't belong to the current earth!"

"Don't belong to the current earth?" Ling Chen stared. "What do you mean?"

"The things recorded in here are roughly 300 years... no! At least 500 years, if not 1,000 years more advanced than our technology and medicine!" Li Xiao Xue's near-trembling voice replied.

"What?!" Ling Chen was also dumbfounded.

"There's 300 terabytes of data on this, but all of it is in standard Chinese. I only looked through a bit of it, but every word and diagram is completely shocking. This first resource is a solar car, and it is a perfect solar car that can't even be imagined right now. It completely describes how it works – it doesn't need any other resources, and it is no less inferior to any other car currently in the world while also avoiding all types of pollution... the blueprint describes every component in detail to the point that almost no further research is required. Anyone who has an understanding of engineering and mechanics will be able to build such a car! With this resource, my Li family can start mass-producing cars that should not appear for another 500 years! If the entire world uses these solar cars, the pollution in the world will be greatly reduced, and the noise and light pollution will also decrease. It will save an immeasurable amount of resources.

"The second resource is a natural purification system that's suitable anywhere in the world, including cities, towns, villages

and families. This system can efficiently purify air, water, light, industrial waste, general waste, and even magnetic radiation and nuclear radiation. It can even steadily control air quality, and it's also powered by the sun. If we use this sort of purification system on a large scale throughout the world, the polluted world can quickly be reborn!

“The third resource is a water-powered ship and submarine. They can, amazingly, use water to generate energy while not using any other resources...

“... Just the parts of the medical resources that I've glanced through contain countless medicines and equipment... the most mysterious thing is that there's even a human purification and regulation system...”

“... If we're able to produce the purification systems, I'm sure that the average lifespan of a human will increase to 200 years... or even higher... within 10 years...”

“And... And... And...”

Li Xiao Xue became more and more excited as she spoke. Anyone who saw technology that greatly surpassed their time would be unable to remain calm. Hearing the inconceivable things that she was talking about, even Ling Chen felt incredibly shocked, and he was unable to quell the waves within him.

This memory chip had been given to him by Sha Sha.

How did Sha Sha have such things!

She did not belong to earth, and she was instead a girl from the virtual world. Being able to bring her out from the virtual world was already incomprehensible, but... within the Mystic Moon world, the technology there was even further behind earth's! The things that Li Xiao Xue mentioned did not exist in the Mystic Moon world, and they were not recorded in the Chronicles!

Chapter 717 - Long Tian Ya?

“Ling Chen, is that person you were talking about an alien?” Li Xiao Xue asked seriously. She was not joking at all, because these things did not belong to earth and must have come from another world.

“You can think whatever you want,” Ling Chen casually replied. However, he was not any less shocked than Li Xiao Xue.

Li Xiao Xue did not continue to ask, and she instead said with a strange expression, “Alright, since you don’t want to answer no matter how I ask, I won’t be able to pry an answer from you. If it wasn’t for the fact that you possess the Long family’s bloodline, and everything you’ve done, I would actually suspect you to be a monster from another planet.

“The 2 presents you’ve given me are simply too great to the point that even I, Li Xiao Xue, am at a loss for words. I can 100% confirm that these 2 things will greatly change my Li family... as well as the entire world!”

“I’m sure you’re much clearer than me about how to use them, so I won’t say any more. Use them well.”

After saying this, Ling Chen prepared to leave.

“Wait,” Li Xiao Xue called out to stop him. She slowly walked over to Ling Chen and said in a low voice, “After hearing what happened to Meng Xin and Su’Er, I suspected that something similar would happen here, so I set some traps. Who would have thought that I would have received some results this morning.”

After speaking, Li Xiao Xue raised her hand, and within it was a capsule-shaped object tightly sealed in glass.

Ling Chen immediately thought back as he looked at the capsule, and his voice became low, “Isrock Disease?”

“That’s right, and it’s an extremely active type of Isrock Disease.”

Facing this terrifying Isrock Disease, even Li Xiao Xue had a look of fear on her face. If it wasn't for what had happened the previous day, perhaps the same thing that happened to Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er could have happened to her. "The person who tried to do this was Auntie Zhang, who had watched me grow up and cleaned my bedroom and office every day. However, the Auntie Zhang today was actually someone else impersonating her. However, her looks, clothes, figure, and even mannerisms were exactly the same. At a distance, even I wouldn't be able to tell that the person was an impersonator. Luckily, she didn't slip past Bing Yao's eyes."

"Did you catch the person?" Ling Chen asked. All of the Reapers were master-class disguise artists. As such, no matter how perfect one's disguise was, it would not be able to trick a Reaper.

Li Xiao Xue frowned and nodded. "Yes. The person was very strong, but she was no match for big sis Bing Yao. The person's being held underground, and this capsule was found on her. Evidently, she was preparing to infect me while 'cleaning' my bedroom or office. This was most likely how Meng Xin and Su'Er were infected, and this was most likely ordered by the same person. However, she quite stubborn, and no matter what we ask her, she refuses to answer."

"There's no use asking her; just do what you want with that person. Apart from that person, who else would do such a thing?" Ling Chen coldly asked as he clenched his fists so tightly that his veins bulged.

When he was 10 years old, Long Tian Yun had pricked him with a needle, causing him to contract the Isrock Disease. From when he had been pricked by the needle to when he was not able to even stand because of the Isrock Disease, only a mere day had passed. Normally, after the Isrock Disease entered a person's body, it would take at least a month, and sometimes it even took 3 or 4 months to incubate before completely infecting the body. Of course, this was unless it was a super active Isrock Disease like the

one that had infected Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er!

Yesterday, the sudden flaring up of the Isrock Disease in Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er caused him to think back to when he had been infected. Their conditions after they had been infected were exactly like his back then.

Li Xiao Xue naturally knew who 'that person' was. She slightly narrowed her eyes and said in a low voice, "Their actions are simply vile to the point that all of the humans and gods would be infuriated. I knew that he definitely wouldn't just stay silent with his personality. However, I never thought that he would do such a despicable thing. What's more, I never thought that he would secretly develop this super active Isrock Disease!"

"After all, there are no traces left by the Isrock Disease and those who are infected by it are doomed to die, so no one would suspect that it was orchestrated by someone. Over these years, he's used similar methods to kill many people." Ling Chen closed his eyes, and although his expression was calm, new and old hatred rose up within his heart, making his chest threaten to explode.

"What are you planning to do then?" Li Xiao Xue stood half a step away from Ling Chen. She knew how he felt, but she did not say anything because Long Tian Yun's target was her... as well as the entire Li family! From yesterday to now, if she hadn't sensed that something was wrong, she may have been infected by the Isrock Disease. If she died, her Li family, which would have no successor, would have fallen into outsiders' hands, and they would have quickly declined. As such, she was no less angry towards Long Tian Yun than Ling Chen was.

Ling Chen did not answer – perhaps he was thinking whether he should use various cruel methods to take revenge... because Yun Meng Xin and Su'Er had almost died because of the Isrock Disease! He waved his hand and calmly replied, "Just focus on the medicine for now," before turning and leaving.

After Ling Chen left, Li Xiao Xue stayed silent for a while before quickly picking up the phone.

“Wan Yu! Immediately tell my father to come to my place immediately no matter how important the thing he is working on is... tell him that this matter concerns the future of the entire Li family!”

.....

By the time Ling Chen returned, it was already the afternoon. While he was still quite far away, he could already hear a lot of chatting and laughing. Now that Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, and Su’Er had come here, his home had become much livelier.

As soon as he entered the house, Xiao Qi rushed over and excitedly yelled, “Big brother Ling Tian, can we stay here longer? It’s so beautiful here, and it is like a real wonderland. I never thought that such a beautiful place could exist in the world. Big sister Meng Xin and Su Su also want to stay here.”

“Mm, I also really like it here,” Su’Er walked a bit closer and said shyly.

“As long as you like it here and your families are alright with it, you can stay for as long as you’d like.” Ling Chen naturally wouldn’t refuse, and he immediately agreed with a smile.

“Yay, that’s great!” Xiao Qi cheered as she happily said, “Just then, my dad and big brother said that that they didn’t mind as long as I was willing. Su Su’s father and uncle are alright with it as well. Big sister Meng Xin...” Xiao Qi stopped speaking and thought back to how Yun Meng Xin had been cast aside by her family, and she looked at Yun Meng Xin sadly as she said in a small voice, “Big sister Meng Xin is completely fine to stay here too. This place is a hundred, if not a thousand, times better than her old home.”

Yun Meng Xin beautifully smiled without even a trace of sadness or sorrow.

“Meng Xin, Su Su, have you experienced any discomfort anywhere?” Ling Chen walked over and asked. Although they looked completely fine, he still wanted to make sure.

“Don’t worry, your medicine was quite extraordinary. No matter if it's our bodies or our minds, we feel great,” Yun Meng Xin replied with a smile.

Ling Chen nodded. “If you like it here, then stay here as long as you’d like. Let’s just pretend that the things from yesterday never happened and not think about them.”

Yun Meng Xin lightly nodded as she replied, “After experiencing the boundary between life and death, I no longer care about what happened yesterday. After thinking about it, I should thank the Isrock Disease because it showed me many things I was unable to see before. It showed me who my true family was, and it allowed me to see you and say the words that I would have never dared to say...”

Yun Meng Xin’s smile could topple a nation, and her gaze contained a familiar gentleness. However, the feelings within them were not hidden but unreservedly displayed to Ling Chen.

After walking the boundary between life and death, she realised how silly all of her reservations and worries were. Su’Er felt the same way. After Yun Meng Xin woke up, thinking back to the previous, nightmarish day, what she felt was not fear but a sense of joy. She felt as if the clouds in the sky had suddenly all disappeared.

Ling Chen, everything I said last night came from my heart; please don’t forget those words...

The Yun family’s Yun Meng Xin is dead, and she was mercilessly abandoned by them. The Yun Meng Xin from now on will only belong to Ling Chen and my good sisters...

At the same time, in the underground prison underneath the

Xuanyuan family's residence.

The lighting was dim, and the smell was so bad that it assaulted one's nose. 2 people walked through a narrow corridor towards the innermost region of the prison. The person in front had a tall and straight stature, and he walked lightly and briskly. However, his right arm hung in an unnatural way when walking. The person behind him walked with heavier steps, and he was deeply frowning as if he was thinking hard about something.

“Chief, it's here.”

At the very end of the prison was a cage used to imprison the most dangerous people. In the corner, a person was sitting against the icy copper wall, completely unmoving. His face was completely covered by his long hair, and 10 or so thick chains were wrapped around his body, tightly securing his entire body.

Long Zheng Yang wordlessly stared at this person for a while, a range of emotions flickering across his face. He raised his hand and said, “You can go up now. Tell all of the guards to leave. Without my orders, no one is to come in.”

“Eh? This... Chief! You must not do this! This person is incredibly dangerous, and even though he's locked inside, he's still incredibly dangerous.” Long Zheng Yang's words caused Xuanyuan Dao, who had escorted him here, to feel incredibly shocked, and he hurriedly refused.

Long Zheng Yang's tone became stricter, and he once again waved his hand and said, “I have some things that I want to ask him in private. All of you are to go up immediately!”

Long Zheng Yang's words caused Xuanyuan Dao to feel slightly suffocated, and he did not dare to say anything else. He only said “yes” before taking all of the guards out of the prison.

In the lowest level of this hellish prison, only Long Zheng Yang and the person in the cage remained. The person in the cage

suddenly lazily sat straight, causing the chains to clang, and his eagle-like eyes condescendingly looked at Long Zheng Yang through his long hair before he said in a mocking voice, “Hoh! Great Chief Long has finally come. After catching your elder, not only did you not kill me, but you even gave me good food and drink. Just what sort of important information do you want from your elder?”

Facing his mockery, Long Zheng Yang’s expression and gaze did not change at all. He stared at the person and said in a low voice, “I just want to know one thing: your master, Ling Chen – was his original name... Long Tian Ya?!”

Chapter 718 - The Delayed Truth

The person in the cage was called Gui Long, and he the person Gui Ya and the others referred to as 'Buggy'. After both of his legs were heavily injured, he had been captured and locked up in here the entire time. However, Long Zheng Yang had personally given the order for him to not be killed. As such, he has actually had quite a good time in prison. In actuality, as he recovered his strength, all of his wounds had already healed. At the same time, his ability to escape was one of the best out of all of the Reapers. If he wanted, Xuanyuan family's prison was unable to hold him at all. He only stayed here to fulfil his own goal.

Hearing Long Zheng Yang's words, Gui Long's breathing slightly paused, and his gaze towards Long Zheng Yang became sharper.

Even though it was a very slight change, Long Zheng Yang was, after all, the person with the most authority in China, and he had very perceptive senses. Before Gui Long could reply, he heavily sighed and lifted up his face as he sadly said, "Looks like everything was true."

"Hahaha..." Gui Long coldly laughed. "Is my answer not important? Since you had suspicions, you must have tested his blood against your own blood. Were you satisfied with the results? Hmm?"

Gui Long knew that since Long Zheng Yang had personally come to ask him for verification, he must have tried various methods to verify his suspicions. Gui Long's words hit the mark. Long Zheng Yang suspected whether Ling Chen was Long Tian Ya because the comparison between Ling Chen's DNA and his DNA gave him a great shock that made him unable to sleep. Naturally, there was a reason why he had tested Ling Chen's DNA against his own – the first time he had met Gui Long, Gui Long had spoken incredibly hatefully towards him. Back then, a faint suspicion had arisen within his heart. One day, he happened to come across Ling Chen's

age, and adding on Xuanyuan Dia Wu's actions and Gui Long's words, an 'impossible' guess formed within his mind. Although it was 'impossible', the results from the DNA test completely blew open his world.

And yet, he was still unable to feel certain about this. After all, Long Tian Ya had contracted the Isrock Disease back then, and it was impossible for him to still be alive. However, this morning, one of the Long family's moles planted within the Su family gave an unbelievable report... Su Hong Cheng, Su Yi Cheng, and the others, who had been in total despair over Su'Er's Isrock Disease, suddenly became incredibly joyful and jubilant. The only possibility was that Su'Er's Isrock Disease had been cured!

This news made it so that Long Zheng Yang could no longer sit still, and he quickly came here.

"Tian Ya... so it really is him." Long Zheng Yang's voice slightly trembled, and his emotions became extremely complicated. After confirming this 'impossible' event, even he was unable to understand just how he was feeling.

"But why... if he really is Tian Ya, how was his Isrock Disease cured... and why didn't he come home after he was cured... and why does he hate his own family so much... the Long family indeed owes him much – after he was born, I never spent even a day with him... no matter how much he hates the Long family, it shouldn't be to such a degree... after all, this was where he was born and raised..."

Long Tian Yun looked above him as he painfully muttered to himself. If Ling Chen really was Long Tian Ya, he simply couldn't understand how he had survived the Isrock Disease, why he hadn't come home, or why he would do such things to the Long family... he had gone against the Yan Huang Alliance as much as he could within the virtual world, and he had tried to destroy the Long family twice in the real world, killing countless people in the Long family.

Long Zheng Yang's words were heard by Gui Long, causing him to instantly feel infuriated. His chains clanged as he suddenly stood up and pointed at Long Zheng Yang as he cursed, "You're asking why he didn't go home? You're asking why he hates the Long family? Pshaw! Long Zheng Yang, to think that you're the highest authority in all of China. Even a pig or a dog knows shame; your words are even more shameless than even a pig or a dog's! Just from those words you said, I want to rip you up and throw you to the dogs!! The Long family used a horrible way to try and kill my master... that's right, if it was anyone else, he would have died 10 years ago. At the same time, you drove the person he loved most to commit suicide, and yet you're asking why master didn't go home? And you ask why he hates you all? Pshaw! Pshaw!! Long Zheng Yang, where's your face? Don't you feel ashamed to say such things?!"

"Bullshit!" Gui Long's words caused Long Zheng Yang to fly into a fit of rage as he yelled back, "Tian Ya was part of our Long family, and he was my own son! Why would our Long family harm him? Back then, he was infected by the Isrock Disease, and I was told that he left so that he would not burden the family. I searched for him for half a year, but I didn't find him or his corpse... he was my Long family's son, so how could we harm him?"

"Hah!" Gui Long laughed incredibly mockingly. He looked at Long Zheng Yang with a trace of pity within his eyes. "So it was like this. What a tragedy. Looks like China's highest authority, the Long family's leader, has been toyed with like a stupid pig. It has already been more than 10 years, and yet you still don't know the truth. What a joke, what a joke!"

"You only knew that he was infected with the Isrock Disease." The grin on Gui Long's face disappeared, and his face became savage as he roared, "But did you consider the fact that everyone else in the goddamn residence was completely fine? How did he, a child who never left the house, contract the Isrock Disease? At

least find the source! Heh, in actuality, the source wasn't a person but a needle. It was your own precious son, Long Tian Yun, who stabbed master with that infected needle!!”

Long Zheng Yang's eyes widened as his pupils contracted.

“Following this, those doctors appeared just at the right time. After master was diagnosed with Isrock Disease, he was locked up... after that, he was sent by your own precious son, Long Tian Yun, to be buried alive a hundred miles away! You said that he left the family? A child who was diagnosed with the Isrock Disease couldn't even walk – how could he leave by himself? And you couldn't find him after looking for half a year? Hahahaha... he was buried alive by your other son; how could you find him? Would you go down to Yama's residence to find him? Eh??”

Long Zheng Yang's body swayed, and he stumbled backwards, heavily leaning against the iron door behind him, and his face became completely pale.

“Is what you said... the truth...?” Long Zheng Yang muttered dryly.

“Is it the truth? Why don't you go back and ask your precious son? Go and ask what sort of animal you, Long Zheng Yang, have raised! And you're asking me why master hates the Long family? I want to ask you... after all that the Long family has done to him, how could he not hate the Long family? Your Long family killed him and Xuanyuan Dia Wu, who he loved so much. When he almost forgot about that hatred, you killed Ling Shui Ruo, who was even more important to him than his own life... Long Zheng Yang, what your Long family owes master can never be repaid even if the entire Long family dies!!”

Long Zheng Yang's body violently trembled. If it wasn't for his hands gripping onto the iron bars, he would have fallen to the ground. He did not speak for a long time, and he left with shaky steps and a pale face. His footsteps when leaving were incredibly

heavy and slow as if he was dragging along a giant boulder with each step.

Back then, when Long Tian Ya's tragedy had happened, he had been overseas... perhaps Long Tian Yun had chosen that time precisely because of this. When he received this news and hurried back to the Long family's residence, it was already 2 days later, and Long Tian Ya was already gone. All he saw was Long Tian Ya's quarantined room, but no one knew where he had gone. He had searched for a long time, but he could not find anything... he gave up the search half a year later because no one with the Isrock Disease could last longer than that. Even if he found Long Tian Ya, he would have only found a corpse.

Although there were many things that were suspicious about this whole ordeal, Long Tian Ya's fate could not be changed. As such, he did not bother searching anymore, and he tried to forget about his existence.

Only today did he hear the truth.

At the same time, another terrifying thought appeared in his mind... if this was all true, where did Long Tian Yun obtain the Isrock Disease? Could it be that he had been secretly developing the disease that the entire world feared?

Long Zheng Yang returned to his residence with a heavy heart, and he immediately summoned Murong Xiong Tian. "Xiong Tian, tell the Dark Eagles to quickly investigate a few things for me."

After hearing the things that Long Zheng Yang wanted investigated, Murong Xiong Tian frowned and said in shock, "Chief, this..."

"Don't ask any questions, just get the investigations done!" Long Zheng Yang's expression was as still as water. "I want answers within 8 hours! This concerns the future of my Long family."

Murong Xiong Tian did not say anymore, and he only accepted

this mission and left.

Long Zheng Yang got up and stood in front of his window, frowning as he looked outside. He stood for 2 hours, thinking again and again to 20 years ago.

“When this child was born, the Dragon’s Vein caused a great disturbance; this is an abnormal sign that hasn’t been seen in hundreds of years! I’ve looked at his fortune and found that he has a Fortune of Great Calamity that has never been seen before! No wonder the Dragon’s Vein is so unsettled. Although he possesses the Long family’s bloodline, such a Fortune of Great Calamity is a terrible disaster, and the Long family might be the first to suffer. As such, we cannot allow him to continue living!”

“What? No! He’s my son, and he possesses the Long family’s bloodline. How could my Long family do such a disgraceful and shameful deed! The disturbance in the Dragon’s Vein was not necessarily because of him; perhaps something else coincidentally happened when he was born. One’s fortune has always been something imaginary, and I’ve never believed it since I was young. How could we kill our own flesh and blood because of a ‘Fortune of Great Calamity’?!”

“Hmph, even if you don’t want to believe it, you have to believe it! Didn’t you see that his mother almost died as soon as he was born? Even though she barely survived, she’ll be sickly for the rest of her life. Moreover, although this child was born, there’s still a portion of the deathly aura within his mother. If you want her to live, you must separate the mother and son for 10 years as far away from each other as possible. If they’re too close, the deathly aura will grow as the child grows, and it may take her life at any time. If they’re far away from each other, the deathly aura within her body will disappear within 10 years... it’s up to you whether you want to believe this or not; my job is simply to protect the Long family and the Dragon’s Vein. Her life and death have nothing to do with me!”

“... No matter what, I absolutely won’t kill my own flesh and

blood!”

“... In that case, let him live in ‘silence’. Don’t teach him any martial arts, don’t give him any power, don’t give him any sense of identity or kinship... it’s best if you make him as weak, lonely, and useless as possible so that his Fortune of Great Calamity will never be released. This is as much as we can yield; if you can’t even do this, then even if he’s your son, we’ll personally kill him! This is our destiny!”

“.....”

.....

“Qing Han, you’ve hated me for more than 10 years, so that should be enough by now. Our Tian Ya hasn’t died... he’s not dead. He’s already grown up, and he has become so amazing; he’s thousands, if not tens of thousands, more amazing than me, his father.”

“I’m unable to tell you about it even though I owe you so much...”

Long Zheng Yang closed his eyes as he muttered to himself with a trembling voice.

Chapter 719 - Grief and Lament

6 hours later, Murong Xiong Tian came before Long Zheng Yang again with a box full of information and items. He also had 3 members of the Dark Eagle with him, each of them dragging a person whose face was covered with blood and tears.

Seeing Long Zheng Yang, the 3 prisoners started to tremble, and their legs shook as if there was an earthquake. The person in the middle immediately knelt on the ground as he howled, “C-Chief... everything back then... was... ordered by the young master... even if we were 100 times as brave... we wouldn’t have dared to disobey him... Chief, please spare us... if we hadn’t followed the young master’s orders, we would have died... we had no other choice...”

As he spoke, that person started to painfully weep. Seeing him fall to his knees, the other 2 people also hurriedly fell to their knees and sobbed. Long Zheng Yang’s face became ashen-grey, and he did not even bother to look through the things in the box. He stood up and coldly looked at these 3 people, who he had been familiar with over the past 10 or so years, feeling both shock and pain within his heart. He never thought that even these 3 people, who he trusted greatly, would lie to him with Long Tian Yun. He coldly asked, “Tell me everything I want to know without leaving anything out. Otherwise, I’ll make your families all disappear from this world!”

As the Chief of the 7 main forces, Murong Xiong Tian’s methods were quite extraordinary. No matter how tough someone was, he or she would not be able to endure the 7 main forces’ interrogation. This was because no matter how stubborn someone was, Long Yu’s mental espers were able to enter that person’s mind. Before coming here, they had already confessed all they knew, so now that Long Zheng Yang was questioning them, how could they dare to lie or hold anything back? They told him about everything Long Tian Yun had done, and they even fought to tell

him as if they were afraid that they would say less than the others.

Long Zheng Yang's expression darkened as he silently listened. From the beginning, he didn't say anything, but his clenched fists slightly trembled. In the end, blood even started to flow from where his fingernails had pierced into his flesh. Beside him, Murong Xiong Tian also had a heavy look on his face, and he occasionally looked at Long Zheng Yang worriedly.

As the highest Chief in all of China, there were many things that Long Zheng Yang needed to attend to, and he had countless things that he had to think about. He almost had no time for himself. He was busy to the point that he would meet up with his son, Long Tian Yun, at most once every month. As such, it was impossible for him to completely know what Long Tian Yun was up to, nor would he normally order the 7 main forces to investigate his own son. Moreover, Long Tian Yun had always performed well, and the outside world had always praised him to be one of the most excellent people in China's younger generation. As such, Long Zheng Yang had always been very happy and satisfied with Long Tian Yun. Even though he knew that Long Tian Yun's personality was somewhat dark and cruel, he did not think much about it, and he instead thought that they were traits that important people should have. As such, he did not interfere with Long Tian Yun's matters at all.

However, he never expected Long Tian Yun to be so vicious and merciless as to try and harm his own little brother, much less expect him to secretly cultivate an incredibly active Isrock Disease! One could only imagine how many people Long Tian Yun had killed using the Isrock Disease over the years, as well as how many innocent people that Isrock Disease had spread to! If this sort of thing was spread to the public, the Long family's reputation, which had been maintained for thousands of years, would be destroyed in an instant, and they would be hated by all humanity for the rest of time!

.....

Long family's great court, underground chambers.

“Dad, is there some secret that you want to talk to me about?” After the chamber doors were closed and a dim light flickered on, Long Tian Yun spoke with an uncertain tone. Long Zheng Yang was normally incredibly busy, and they rarely met. Every time they met up, Long Zheng Yang would always be smiling widely. However, Long Zheng Yang had suddenly come home today, and he had called Long Tian Yun out from the game and dragged him here. From when he had arrived, his expression had been incredibly calm without even a trace of a smile.

Long Zheng Yang coldly stared at Long Tian Yun. This son, who was now 26 years old and had always brought immense pride and joy to him, now caused him to feel a pain in his heart. He clenched his fists and trembled as he suddenly stepped forwards and savagely slapped the unsuspecting Long Tian Yun. “You animal!!”

Long Zheng Yang's slap was incredibly heavy, causing the unprepared Long Tian Yun to turn 270 degrees before falling to the ground. After crawling up, Long Tian Yun was dazed for 3 seconds before holding his swollen face and looking at Long Zheng Yang with anger. “Dad... why did you hit me? What did I do wrong?”

“You animal! You have the face to ask what you did?” Looking at Long Tian Yun's ‘innocent’ eyes, Long Zheng Yang felt even more infuriated. He walked forwards and heavily kicked Long Tian Yun's chest, causing the words that Long Tian Yun was about to say to be sent back down.

Long Zheng Yang had been trained in martial arts, and his kick caused Long Tian Yun's ribs to almost be broken, causing him to roll around and cry out in pain. Long Zheng Yang did not look sympathetic at all, and he flicked his wrist, throwing 3 sealed capsules on the ground as he roared with a dark expression, “Explain to me what these are!”

Seeing those black capsules, Long Tian Yun's eyes contracted, and cold sweat erupted all over his body, causing him to forget the pain in his body. He knew that his father had done rigorous investigations considering his personality. Even if he tried to explain things away, it would achieve nothing. As such, he could only admit it with an expression of terror, "Dad, I've... I've been keeping this a secret from you this entire time, and I was in the wrong. But I did it for our Long family... it's difficult for us to openly get rid of some of our Long family's enemies, and this method doesn't leave any evidence. If we want to do great things, we have to choose the best methods... I did it for our Long family..."

"For the Long family?" Long Zheng Yang coldly laughed as his expression became even darker. "13 years ago, did you also use this to kill your own little brother Tian Ya 'for the Long family'?"

Long Tian Yun's body trembled, and his eyes widened as he subconsciously shook his head hurriedly. "I did not..."

"You didn't?!" Long Zheng Yang once again fiercely kicked Long Tian Yun as he shouted, "The people from your secret labs have already confessed. 13 years ago, it was you who took away the first batch of highly-active Isrock Disease. You infected Tian Ya, and the 2 people who you ordered to bury him alive already confessed. Long Tian Yun, how malicious is your heart? I can't believe that my Long family birthed such an evil animal like you!!"

Long Tian Yun's face became red then white as a sheet. From when he had been born, this was the first time that Long Zheng Yang had called him by his full name and not 'Yun'Er'. It was evident how furious and disappointed Long Zheng Yang was. Long Tian Yun raggedly gulped down a mouthful of saliva and gritted his teeth as he screamed back, "Dad! Indeed, I did it, but I did it for you!"

"For me? Long Tian Yun, how can you make such a ridiculous excuse!" Long Zheng Yang looked at him in disappointment and

pain.

“That’s right! I did it all for you.” Long Tian Yun looked up into Long Zheng Yang’s eyes. “Long Tian Ya was your son, but... but from when he was born, how many times did you hug him, see him, care for him, or even allow him to call you ‘dad’? He was a son of the Long family, but did he have any status in the Long family? Even the children of attendants bullied him, and anyone from the Xuanyuan family could bully him. You knew about this, but did you ever say anything about it or stop it?”

Long Zheng Yang’s body swayed, and his face suddenly became pale.

“As long as one wasn’t blind, anyone would be able to tell that you didn’t like Long Tian Ya at all... no! You completely despised him! Even a blind man could tell that you didn’t want or love your second son and that you wanted him to disappear. As such, anyone could bully him as they wanted because they knew that you would not do anything about it and that you might even feel happy about it! In the outside world, no one even knew that you had a second son. When he was 10 years old, you were about to become the highest authority in all of China. If it came out that you had an illegitimate child, it would be a great obstacle to you, so everyone in the Long family knew that you wanted that unwanted son to disappear. Since you couldn’t do it, as your son, it was my duty to help you!”

“A load of rubbish! Tian Ya was my own son; how could I want him to disappear from the world? It was evident that you were worried about him fighting with you over your position as the successor, which was why you murdered him!” Long Zheng Yang furiously replied.

“If you really saw him as your son, why did you treat him that way? The way you treated him evidently told everyone that you didn’t want this son at all and that you wished that he would just disappear!” Long Tian Yun loudly replied.

“You!” Long Zheng Yang’s face became even paler and his entire body trembled, but he was unable to say anything. No matter the reason, everyone in the Long family had clearly seen how he had treated Long Tian Ya.

“You’re saying that I was worried about him fighting with me over my position as successor? Dad, do you even believe those words? Apart from being able to live in the Long family’s residence, he had nothing! Let alone power and authority, he didn’t even have a teacher to teach him how to read and write, and that was because of your orders. He had nothing, and even the attendants looked down on him. The Xuanyuan family’s people all called him a bastard; he didn’t threaten me at all! How could I fear him? I got rid of him for you; for the Long family’s peace!”

“Nonsense! Nonsense!” Long Tian Yun’s words sounded like thunder to him, and Long Zheng Yang stumbled back a few paces, his face as pale as a sheet. Apart from yelling, he had no way to rebut Long Tian Yun’s words. He knew clearer than anyone how he had treated Long Tian Ya back then.

Chapter 720 - An Unexpected Guest

“No matter... no matter what sort of reason you had, the fact that you used vicious methods to kill Tian Ya is the undeniable truth!” Long Zheng Yang’s voice started to tremble because he started to feel that what Long Tian Yun had said was right. He was what had caused Long Tian Yun to do what he did – if he had treated Long Tian Ya even a bit better and had been more of a father, then that would not have happened. He grabbed Long Tian Yun’s collar as he yelled with grief, “Now, I have to tell you that Tian Ya, who you infected and tried to bury alive, is actually still alive. He’s the one who has caused our Long family disaster time and time again, the person who almost killed you... Ling Chen!”

“W-What?!” Long Tian Yun’s eyes bulged, and his body froze. “Impossible! This is impossible!”

“That’s the truth!” Long Zheng Yang’s expression darkened as he gnashed his teeth. “Were the Yun family and Su family’s daughters infected by you, you animal? Today, I received news that the Su family’s daughter was cured and that the Yun family’s daughter is most likely fine. Since Tian Ya was able to cure his Isrock Disease back then, he was naturally able to help them! Luckily, they were protected by the heavens and were not killed by you, you animal!”

“Impossible... Impossible...” Long Tian Yun’s expression became blank as he shook his head, completely unable to believe what he had just heard.

Long Zheng Yang’s grip tightened on Long Tian Yun’s collar and brought him up from the ground. “Now, you’re going to come with me to meet Tian Ya and kneel down and apologise. Even though he hates you to the bone, if you truly repent, he might just forgive you. Perhaps you’ll be able to resolve the hatred towards you. However, with his hatred towards you and adding on the fact that you just tried to kill the Yun family’s daughter and Su family’s daughter, he might be thinking of ways to kill you right now!”

“Kneel down and apologise? No! I’m not going! Even if I have to die, I won’t kneel and apologise.” Long Zheng Yang’s words sounded like a demon’s curse to Long Tian Yun, and he struggled out of Long Zheng Yang’s grasp and resolutely shook his head in terror.

“You evil animal!” Long Tian Yun once again kicked him and said in a hoarse voice, “This is the only way to save you! You’ve seen clearly the power and authority he has – if you don’t do this, he’ll take your life sooner or later!”

Long Tian Yun continued to desperately shake his head. “No! I’m not going! Back then, I killed him for you and the Long family! I did nothing wrong! After Ling Tian appeared, he went against me in everything, causing me to lose all my face and dignity. If anything, it should be him kneeling to me! Even if I die, I definitely won’t kneel to him... if you’re determined to do this to me...”

Long Tian Yun took out a small pistol from his side and threw it at Long Zheng Yang’s feet. He raised his face and breathed raggedly as he said, “Then just kill me now! I want to know if the son who you’ve nurtured for 26 years is more important than the bastard who almost destroyed our Long family twice!”

“You!!!”

Long Zheng Yang felt a heaviness within his chest, and he almost coughed up blood. He pointed at Long Tian Yun, his entire body trembling. Only after a while did he lower his hand and heavily sigh before walking out of the secret chamber.

“The sins of the child are the sins of the father. I’ll go and plead with Tian Ya for your life. I’ll deal with you cultivating the Isrock Disease on another day. For the next few days, I want you to stay at home... you’re not allowed to go anywhere.”

Long Zheng Yang spoke all of these words without any strength in his voice, and each step he took felt as heavy as a thousand-kilogram boulder.

.....

The whole ordeal with the Isrock Disease did not result in anything, but this scare sent alarm bells ringing in Ling Chen's head. He realised that there were dangers that, despite being incredibly powerful, he was unable to defend against. At the same time, he completely lost all patience he had towards Long Tian Yun.

“Long Tian Yun, I'll definitely make your life worse than death!” Ling Chen muttered to himself as he gripped his fists while lying in a grassy area in Ling Tian City's Leisure District, a dangerous light in his eyes.

Before the news that Ling Tian City's beautiful Lady had been infected with the Isrock Disease could be spread, Yun Meng Xin appeared in the Lady of the City's residence, putting an end to all of the rumours. Ling Tian City's development continued to grow at an astonishing rate, and the expansions had already been half-completed. In fact, the expansions were progressing even faster than when the city had been constructed. After all, what Ling Tian City now lacked least was money. Furthermore, after establishing the 'trade route' with the Underworld, which cost almost nothing but brought massive benefits, money rapidly poured into the city.

“How are you planning to take revenge?” Li Xiao Xue elegantly walked over and did not hesitate to sit down next to him as she looked at him. “After having this done to us and almost losing 2 beautiful lovers, I'm sure that you won't just sit by and do nothing considering your personality.”

“What do you think I'll do?” Ling Chen crossed his right leg over his left as he casually asked.

“Kill Long Tian Yun?” Li Xiao Xue leaned down, giving an enchanting but dangerous smile. Anyone who heard the suggestion of killing the Long family's successor would have been given a great shock, and yet Li Xiao Xue had said it casually as if Long Tian

Yun's life and death meant nothing to her.

“Kill him? Heh, why should I kill him? Not only am I not going to kill him, but I'm also going to make sure he lives till he's 100.” Ling Chen evilly grinned.

“Oh?” Li Xiao Xue revealed an interested expression. She naturally knew that Ling Chen wouldn't let Long Tian Yun off easily. “Then are you planning on making it so that living will be worse than dying for him? This will be a bit hard. Let me guess... are you going to completely destroy the Yan Huang Alliance, completely laying waste to his efforts over the past years? Making him feel so much pain that he goes mad? With your ability to destroy even the Royal City, I'm sure you can do it easily.”

“Destroy the Yan Huang Alliance? I wouldn't do that.” Ling Chen's reply exceeded what Li Xiao Xue had expected. He looked up at the sky as he said lazily, “The Yan Huang Alliance has tens of millions of players; destroying such a power would be too much of a waste.”

Now, even the incredibly intelligent Li Xiao Xue had no idea what Ling Chen was thinking. At this moment, Ling Chen's communication device sounded out, and Yun Meng Xin's voice came out of it, “Ling Tian, are you in the city?”

“I am, what is it?” Ling Chen replied.

“Someone wants to meet you. It's... It's... Chief Long. He's in the guest hall.”

A look of shock simultaneously appeared on Ling Chen and Li Xiao Xue's faces.

Ling Chen got up, and after frowning for a while, he replied in a low voice, “I got it, I'll go over now.”

After hanging up the communication device, Ling Chen fell silent. Li Xiao Xue also stood up, tapping his shoulder lightly with her long fingers and said simply, “Go.”

After all, he was Ling Chen's biological father. She couldn't say anything as to how he should handle this.

Ling Chen started to silently walk towards the guest hall. The Leisure District was right behind the centre of the Administrative District, and it was only about 2 streets away from the guest hall.

After reaching the entrance, Ling Chen saw Yun Meng Xin standing there with a worried look. With China's highest authority coming here, she, the Lady of the City, had to personally receive him. Seeing Ling Chen walk over, she hurriedly went over to him. Just as she was about to say something, Ling Chen spoke first, "Don't worry, nothing will happen. Go do your things and don't let anyone come near here."

"But..." Yun Meng Xin still wanted to say something, but seeing the calm look on Ling Chen's eyes, she swallowed her words and nodded. "Alright. He's inside."

Ling Chen walked into the guest hall and immediately saw Long Zheng Yang. As China's highest authority, he always had a crowd of people following him wherever he went, but he was the only one in the hall. Long Zheng Yang saw him at the same time, and after their gazes met for half a second, Long Zheng Yang quickly stood up from his chair. His movements were a bit panicked, and his gaze and manner didn't give off the airs of China's highest authority. Neither his eyes nor his aura gave off even a bit of pressure.

"What do you want?" Ling Chen coldly said after entering and crossing his arms.

Facing the person who had made it difficult for him to eat and sleep, waves crashed within Long Zheng Yang's heart. He moved his lips, trying to say the sentence that he had prepared, but he was unable to say it. In the end, he could only muster out two words, "Tian Ya..."

"I'm called Ling Tian; you have the wrong name," Ling Chen

expressionlessly replied in a cold voice. He did not react at all to the name 'Tian Ya'. This was because early this morning, he had heard that Long Zheng Yang had found out that he was Long Tian Ya – of course, this was from Gui Long, who was still 'imprisoned'.

“No, I know that you’re Tian Ya...”

“I’ll say it again; my name is Ling Tian!” Ling Chen discourteously cut him off, a look of rage on his face.

Long Zheng Yang’s emotions welled up as he said in a trembling voice, “I already know what happened. Tian Ya, I let you down. The Long family owes you far too much, and I only just found out the truth about 13 years ago, I...”

“Shut up!” Ling Chen cut Long Zheng Yang’s words off coldly as he narrowed his eyes, his gaze piercing through Long Zheng Yang. “I’ll say it one last time: my name is Ling Tian! I indeed knew a person called Tian Ya, but it’s a pity that he died 13 years ago. He was killed by his family. If that’s who you’re looking for, then go ask Yama about him after you’ve died.

“Hmph, since the person you’re looking for is Tian Ya, not me, I’ll be going now!”

After saying this, Ling Chen turned and walked towards the door.

Chapter 721 - Her Name Is Gu Qing Han

Long Zheng Yang had thought that Ling Chen would have been slightly moved after he called out the name ‘Tian Ya’. However, Long Zheng Yang could only feel coldness from Ling Chen, and there wasn’t even a trace of emotions, causing his heart to chill... that’s right, he had been harmed by the Long family to such an extent – he only felt immense hatred towards the Long family, not emotions.

Ling Chen stopped walking, but he did not turn around. He calmly said, “I don’t like wasting time on people I’m indifferent towards; I’ll give you 30 seconds.”

People I’m indifferent towards... Long Zheng Yang bitterly laughed. Who else could he blame but himself for his own son treating him like this? This was what he deserved. In this sort of situation, he was unable to say any of the things he had prepared and could only say in a grieved voice, “I know that you hate Long Tian Yun to the bone, and I’m sure that you already know that the Isrock Disease was because of him, making you hate him more. I know you can’t forgive him, but based on your blood, he’s still... still... so no matter how you punish him, please at least leave him his life!”

“That’s all you have to say?” Hearing Long Zheng Yang’s words, Ling Chen remained calm as if he hadn’t heard it at all.

Ling Chen suddenly heard something falling to the ground. He subconsciously turned around and saw Long Zheng Yang kneeling there with a look of pleading in his eyes.

“You!” Ling Chen’s heart jumped, and he subconsciously jumped away, dodging away from the direction that Long Zheng Yang was kneeling in. Long Zheng Yang was the leader of the Long family, and he was the most powerful official in China, wielding the most power in the entire country. There were countless people who

kneelt towards him, but apart from his parents, no one had the right to make him kneel to them. His pride and dignity simply would not allow him to kneel to anyone but his parents.

And now, he was kneeling on behalf of his son Long Tian Yun in order to plead for mercy for his son. Ling Chen never expected Long Zheng Yang to kneel, and at the same time, he felt a strange sense of terror. After all, although he did not admit it, this was his father. Seeing his father kneel to him... anyone would feel as if they had been struck by a bolt of lightning.

Long Zheng Yang said with an expression of pain, “I never thought that in this life, apart from my parents, the first person I would kneel to would be my s-to you. However, I should be kneeling. The sins of a child are because of his father – I cannot deny responsibility for the wrongs Long Tian Yun has committed, so I am kneeling in his stead. Although I don’t dare to ask for your forgiveness even if I kneel a thousand times, please at least spare his life. Even though he simply cannot be forgiven, everyone knows that he’s the Long family’s successor. If he dies, it will bring a great shock to society, China’s politics will be greatly affected, and the Long family’s reputation will also decline...”

“Promise me 3 things and I’ll promise not to kill Long Tian Yun! In fact, I won’t even make trouble for him!” Ling Chen’s breathing became erratic as he said in a low voice.

Long Zheng Yang raised his head and revealed an excited and grateful expression, “Alright! As long as we can make it up to you, no matter what it is, I’ll try to fulfil your wishes.”

“Number 1, immediately get up from the ground. I don’t need you to kneel!” Ling Chen turned around as he quickly spoke. Every second that Long Zheng Yang remained kneeling made him feel more uncomfortable.

Long Zheng Yang stared for a moment before slowly getting up from the ground as he looked at Ling Chen’s back.

Hearing Long Zheng Yang getting up, Ling Chen silently let out a breath of relief, then calmly said, “Number 2, I want you, in your capacity as the highest official in China, to declare to all Chinese players that Ling Tian City is the Chinese players’ central city!”

In the past, China’s official power was the Yan Huang Alliance. Whenever a decision had to be made on behalf of all of the Chinese players, it would always be the Yan Huang Alliance making those decisions and presenting those speeches. During international conflicts, it would also be the Yan Huang Alliance coordinating the Chinese players. This requirement was essentially asking him to take the Yan Huang Alliance’s brightest and proudest halo away from it.

“Alright, no problem!” Long Zheng Yang did not hesitate at all. In actuality, as Ling Tian City became more and more powerful, Ling Tian City had surpassed the Yan Huang Alliance in every way, and the Yan Huang Alliance’s lustre had dimmed. Even if China’s government did not acknowledge it, the Chinese players already saw Ling Tian City as their core, as opposed to the Yan Huang Alliance.

“Number 3,” Ling Chen paused as he raised his head, a strange light flashing in his eyes. “I want Long Tian Yun to come and find me at Ling Tian City within 1 hour... no, forget it, I changed my mind. Tell him to wait for me at the Yan Huang Alliance’s headquarters within 15 minutes. There are some things that I want to say to him face to face. After saying those things, the hatred between us will more or less be resolved. In the future, let alone kill him, even if you begged me to kill him, I wouldn’t do it.”

Long Zheng Yang stared dumbly for a while before asking in disbelief, “That’s... it?”

With how much Ling Chen hated Long Tian Yun, Long Zheng Yang had thought that each of the 3 things would be more difficult than scaling the heavens. Who would have thought that the 3 things were all incredibly simple to the point that he felt that what

he heard wasn't real.

“If you're not satisfied, I can just find an opportunity to kill him!” Ling Chen coldly harrumphed.

“No, it's just that this resolution is much better than anything I had expected.” Long Zheng Yang slowly shook his head, finally able to put down the heavy weight in his heart. He was sure that Ling Chen wouldn't go back on his word. Out of the 3 things, the first 2 were trifling matters and the third was simply a meeting in the virtual world, so he didn't have to worry about him harming Long Tian Yun. Long Zheng Yang thought that it was him kneeling had made an effect... before coming here, he knew that with Ling Chen's hatred towards the Long family and especially Long Tian Yun, normal ways would not work. His only choice was to use extreme methods, so, in order to protect Long Tian Yun's life, he had chosen to use his status as the highest authority in China and as a father to kneel down to Ling Chen.

The results were thousands of times better than he had expected.

“I know that you can't forgive him, nor does he have the right to ask for your forgiveness; however, I thank you on his behalf for sparing his life. I promise that in the future, he will never do anything to harm you or your friends.”

Ling Chen still did not turn around and said, “Remember, 15 minutes. If I don't see Long Tian Yun in the Yan Huang Alliance's headquarters within 15 minutes, then pretend I didn't say anything today. If there's nothing else, I won't be keeping you company. With Chief Long's status, there are countless things you need to think about every day. I'm sure you don't have much time to waste on a national fugitive like me.”

Long Tian Yun's gaze became bitter, and he helplessly sighed, “Alright, I should be going. However, there's something I should tell you. When you were younger, I told you that your mother died when you were born. However, that was a lie – your mother is still

alive.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“The Long family has greatly wronged you, and I’ve made great mistakes. However, your mother has done nothing wrong... before you were born, all of the doctors said that she might not survive if she gave birth to you. She had a very prestigious and important identity, and her life was more important than anyone else’s, so no one wanted to see her risk her life to give birth to you. However, she, who was incredibly mild and gentle, was incredibly resolute about this and was adamant about giving birth to you. After you were born, she walked the boundary along life and death. If it wasn’t because of our Long family having a secret technique, she would have died that day.

“Although she kept her life, in the following 3 years, she was unable to even walk, and there were many ailments left in her body. Even now, when dusk falls and it rains, she experiences a terrible soreness and numbness in all of her limbs. She’s already endured this sort of pain for 20 or so years.”

Hearing this, Ling Chen’s chest heaved.

“You never saw her after you were born not because she abandoned you but because of an incomprehensible reason that made it so that you had to separate, and the further apart the better. Otherwise, she could have died at any moment.”

“What was the reason?” Ling Chen coldly interjected at this moment.

Long Zheng Yang gave him a deep look and said helplessly, “Perhaps you’ll find this reason laughable. This was because when you were born, an elder with special powers said that you had a Fortune of Great Calamity, one that had never been seen before. After she gave birth to you, some deathly aura remained within your mother, and if she was too close to you, the chances of that deathly aura growing would increase. As such, she had to be

separated from you for at least 10 years, after which the deathly aura within her would be gone.” Speaking to there, Long Zheng Yang bitterly laughed. “I know what I just said sounds incredibly ridiculous and foolish – the Long family’s leader actually believed in fortune-telling. However, the person who said these things had extraordinary power and status, and he had never been wrong before. For her life, I could only make this decision.”

Ling Chen did not say anything, but his gaze uncontrollably trembled.

Back then, before he had gone to the Lava Purgatory, he had met the Heaven’s Secrets Sect Leader, Daoist Tian Qing. Under Xiao Feng Chen’s urging, Daoist Tian Qing had looked at his fortune, but the result had caused Daoist Tian Qing’s expression to change and his forehead to be beaded with sweat. Afterwards, he had said that he was unable to tell his fortune. Ling Chen did not ask any further, but with his intelligence, how could he not tell that Daoist Tian Qing had definitely seen something? However, there must have been reasons for him not saying anything.

Afterwards, Su’Er had succeeded him as the Heaven’s Secrets Sect Leader, and he had jokingly asked Su’Er to look at his fortune. Su’Er did not refuse, and her reaction was exactly the same as Daoist Tian Qing’s. Afterwards, under his persistent asking, Su’Er only mentioned the words ‘Fortune of Great Calamity’.

Back then, he had only laughed about it. Su’Er had forced a smile and said that the fortune was something illusory and vague and should not be taken too seriously.

And now, Long Zheng Yang had uttered the words ‘Fortune of Great calamity’. What’s more, this fortune had been predicted when he was born by a mystical person.

“Although your mother was separated from you, she thought about you day and night. Because of her excessive longing, her body, which should have healed in 3 or 4 years, took many more

years to recover. Both her and I bitterly waited for 10 years to pass so that you could be reunited with her. However, who would have thought that before you turned 10... after she heard the news, she suffered a great illness, and from then on, she hated me and the Long family to the bones.

“Even her personality greatly changed, and it was said that after that day, no one ever saw her smile again. She threw herself into restoring her family, and she united the alliance in the south. I know that she did all of this to retaliate against the Long family. I owe her too much, and I have no face to meet her. Otherwise, how could I have allowed an alliance that threatened the Long family to continue existing? The hatred she felt towards me and towards the Long family was all because of her motherly love for her child. I can’t help but say that I treated you so coldly back then because of secret troubles, and all of the things you faced were because of me. However, your mother did nothing wrong. If she knew that you’re still alive, she would be so happy.

“Her name is... Gu Qing Han.”

Ling Chen’s breathing paused, and he raised his head as he took in a deep breath, coldly saying, “Tell Long Tian Yun to wait for me at the Yan Huang Alliance’s headquarters... he only has this one chance!”

After saying this, Ling Chen did not stop and quickly departed.

Chapter 722 - Soukilling Curse!

15 minutes later, Ling Chen punctually arrived at the Yan Huang Alliance's headquarters.

His arrival caused the players standing guard to be greatly dismayed, but Long Tian Yun quickly ordered, "Let him come in!"

Ling Chen coldly laughed and swaggered in until he walked into the central hall as countless Yan Huang Alliances fearfully watched on. The moment he entered, he saw Long Tian Yun sitting arrogantly.

"Cang Yan, Flame Shadow, you can all retreat. Without my orders, no one is to come in," Long Tian Yun said calmly.

Cang Yan and Flame Shadow left warily and fearfully. After the large doors closed, only Long Tian Yun and Ling Chen were left in the large hall.

"Hoh, so you actually came." Long Tian Yun crossed his legs, looking as if he did not put Ling Chen in his eyes at all, giving off a provoking air. "I never thought that you were actually my pitiful little brother. Heheh, I heard that there's something you wanted to talk about?"

"I came to say one thing," Ling Chen faced Long Tian Yun's venomous gaze and calmly laughed. Honestly speaking, when he made that decision back then, his hatred towards Long Tian Yun greatly lessened, and he even felt sorry for him, "What I wanted to say... is that you should treasure your final 10 seconds, truly. Your dad knelt in front of me to beg for your life. Heh, since the high and mighty Chief Long knelt down to me, I have to give him some face. However, I never wanted your dog life, because that would be too easy on you."

Long Tian Yun stood up with a 'whoosh' and coldly laughed as he said, "Ling Tian, do you really think I fear you? Heh, what I regret

most is sending 2 pieces of trash to dispose of you. If I had killed you myself back then, you wouldn't have caused so much trouble.

“Heheh,” Ling Chen also laughed, even more sinisterly than Long Tian Yun. As he spoke, he slowly walked towards Long Tian Yun, “Say what you want, curse as you will, and laugh your heart out, because you won't have the opportunity to do so in future!”

Whoosh!

A gust of wind swept out, and Ling Chen, who had been 10 or so metres away from Long Tian Yun, suddenly rushed in front of him in an instant. He stretched out his right hand and tightly grasped Long Tian Yun's neck.

Feeling Ling Chen suddenly grab his neck, Long Tian Yun only felt shock and fear for a second before they disappeared. He said darkly, “What, you want to kill me? Do it! A little bastard like you only has this much power in the game. So what if you kill me a thousand times in the game? You won't be able to harm even a hair on my head in the real world. Come to my Long family's residence again if you dare! Hmm? Let's see if you die first or I die first!”

Ling Chen was not angry at all. He looked at Long Tian Yun's eyes and his gaze became more and more sympathetic, “Not too long ago, I obtained a very interesting power. It's very vile, to the point that I thought that I would never use it in my lifetime. Using this power on even an unforgiveable criminal who had committed heinous crimes would be too cruel. However, today, I found the best person to test this power on. Long Tian Yun, I simply can't find a better person to use this power on, because...” Ling Chen's eyes were filled with rage and malice as he roared, “Even if I cut you into ten thousand pieces and make you die a thousand times, it would not be enough to quench the hatred in my heart!!”

“Soukilling Curse!!”

As Ling Chen shouted out, an imperceptible, strange light flashed in his eyes. Long Tian Yun, who was just about to say something,

felt his body freeze, and his pupils unnaturally dilated to the point that they were tens of times bigger than normal.

The Soukilling Curse was the second Forbidden Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse that Ling Chen had obtained at the Underworld Blood Lake. The first [Soulstealing Curse] was already quite terrifying, but this [Soukilling Curse] was cruel beyond belief. Once people fell under this curse, their soul would not belong to themselves anymore – their thoughts, actions, gazes, expressions, voices... even memories, would completely be controlled by him, causing them to turn into a complete puppet. Let alone resist, even if they wanted to die, they would need Ling Chen's permission. When Ling Chen unlocked this Feng Chen Curse, he immediately felt that the only way to describe it was something that the heavens and earth could not tolerate, something crueler than dismembering someone into a thousand pieces. At that moment, he thought that he would never use this skill in his lifetime.

He never thought that he would use this skill so soon — after all, only this [Soukilling Curse] could relieve the hatred he felt towards Long Tian Yun.

Long Tian Yun's mental energy was like a small creek in front of Ling Chen's mental energy, a boundless ocean. Even the Forbidden Feng Chen Curses, which had an extremely low base success rate, would have a 100% success rate on him. His pupils dilated more and more until they filled his entire eyes and all of his memories flooded into Ling Chen's mind.

Reading a person's memories was not something very pleasant, especially if that person's memories were filled with filth. After reading less than one-third of Long Tian Yun's memories, Ling Chen's pity towards Long Tian Yun completely disappeared. He saw ugly, disgusting, and incredibly evil things. In fact, Ling Chen even felt kind using the [Soukilling Curse] on him.

“A scum who deserves death!” Ling Chen furiously cursed as he

threw Long Tian Yun far away. The instant Long Tian Yun landed on the ground, his pupils started to contract until they went back to their original state. He hurriedly stood up, his body covered with cold sweat and pointed at Ling Chen as he shouted, “Ling Tian, w-what did you do to me?!”

“What did you call me?” Ling Chen narrowed his eyes as a strange light flashed within them.

With just this simple sentence, Long Tian Yun’s body froze. Following this, his face twisted as his expression of fear and shock instantly became a big smile. He suddenly knelt on the ground as he cried out, “Greetings master... greetings master, greetings master.”

Looking at Long Tian Yun servilely kneeling on the ground, Ling Chen grinned. He walked forwards a few steps and looked down at him as he said softly, “That’s more like it. Remember, Long Tian Yun, you’re my dog slave. Whatever I tell you to do, you’ll do. Even if I tell you to eat dung, you’ll do it without hesitation, got it?”

“Yes, yes, I’m master’s dog slave. I’ll do whatever master tells me to; if master tells me to eat dung, I’ll eat dung.” Long Tian Yun hurriedly promised, looking as if he would immediately crawl over to lick Ling Chen’s shoes.

“Very good, then what are you doing there just kneeling? Hurry up and kowtow to your master. Kowtow as hard as you can; otherwise, I won’t be happy.”

“Yes, yes!” Long Tian Yun hurriedly nodded and did not even dare to hesitate as he repeatedly slammed his forehead onto the ground.

Bang! Bang! Bang...

The sound of Long Tian Yun kowtowing sounded like a rock hitting a tree. Every time he kowtowed, he would use all of the

strength in his body to slam his head downwards. Using this much force each time would make him feel unimaginable pain, but without Ling Chen's command, he didn't dare to stop. He desperately kowtowed as Ling Chen coldly watched. Only after 10 or so times did Ling Chen icily say in a low voice, "Long Tian Yun, this is your punishment. Enjoy it well, because there's still a long time left in your life!"

After speaking, Ling Chen raised his right foot and kicked Long Tian Yun's head, sending him flying 5 or 6 metres. Long Tian Yun painfully cried out and only stopped after rolling quite a few times. His body spasmed a few times before he stood up using the pillar as support, and looked at Ling Chen fearfully. "W-What did you do to me? What just happened?!"

"Not much," Ling Chen said with a warm smile, "It's just that from today onwards, your life, your body, and your soul are no longer yours to control. In other words, your thoughts, actions, gazes, expressions, voice, memories... everything will be controlled by me. Whatever I tell you to do, you'll do, and you'll never be able to resist. However, don't worry, I didn't completely destroy your mind. This entire time, your mind will be completely awake, and you'll clearly see just how much of a loyal dog you've become. I wonder if you'll enjoy this sort of feeling?"

Long Tian Yun's pupils once again dilated, but this time, it was out of immense fear. His body trembled as he realised that Ling Chen's words weren't to simply scare him — just then, he had been completely conscious, but his body had done something that he simply could not accept. He had smiled widely at Ling Chen as if he was trying to earn his favour, kneeled down, and called himself a dog slave... he had been clearly conscious that whole time and felt so ashamed that he wanted to die. And yet, he was terrified to find that he could not control his body, expressions, gazes or voice...

"Impossible! Impossible... you're definitely just scaring me! That's right, you must be scaring me!!" Long Tian Yun hurriedly

retreated. The fear within him caused his body to feel incredibly weak, and he fell to the ground. With his status as the Long family's son, the prospect of becoming a complete puppet who would serve someone else in a humiliating manner, especially the person he hated most, all the while he was still conscious, was even more terrifying than being killed ten thousand times.

Chapter 723 - The Loyal Dog Long Tian Yun

“Hoh! Weren’t you yelling about not being afraid of me? Looks like you’ve almost wet your pants.”

“You... You...” Long Tian Yun uncontrollably shivered as if he was in a cavern of ice. “Impossible... how could such sorcery exist... you’re definitely just trying to scare me... I... I’ll take you down with me!!”

A savage look suddenly appeared in the terrified Long Tian Yun’s eyes as he suddenly jumped up from the ground, leaping towards Ling Chen like a mad dog. Ling Chen did not move, and he only smiled and narrowed his eyes.

Long Tian Yun suddenly fell in front of Ling Chen and repeatedly kowtowed as he yelled in fear, “I’m sorry master... I didn’t mean to offend you... I deserve death, I deserve death, I deserve death... please punish me master... I’ll be master’s most loyal dog, and I won’t dare to do such a thing in future.”

Ling Chen sent him flying with a kick and said, “Long Tian Yun, being a loyal dog isn’t easy so do your best to learn how to be one. Right now, your father is definitely waiting outside to ask how our meeting went. You can go to report to him now. I’m sure that you’re a smart dog, and will know how to reply.”

“Yes, yes... I definitely won’t disappoint master,” Long Tian Yun said as he hurriedly nodded and trembled.

“Also, I’ll give you 3 days to gather all of the Yan Huang Alliance’s powers and join Ling Tian City. Remember, it’s to become a subsidiary of Ling Tian City, and they will have to submit to all of Ling Tian City’s orders and arrangements. If there are any leaders who are disobedient, just continuously slap them. If there are any factions that aren’t willing to submit, just destroy them. Now that you’ve become my dog, everything that you’ve been developing all these years now belong to me, your master.”

“Yes... I will definitely make master satisfied,” Ling Tian City said as he rapidly nodded. He looked at Ling Chen with an expression of currying favour, afraid that Ling Chen would be displeased.

“Alright, now go and find your dad to report. Then, learn how to be a good dog.”

After saying this, Ling Chen wildly laughed and strode out. Long Tian Yun continued to kneel on the ground, not daring to get up, his entire body pressed against the ground. He then respectfully repeated again and again, “Take care, master, have a good day... take care, master, have a good day...”

After Ling Chen left the hall, he shakily rose, got his clothes back into order, and touched his face before yelling, “Cang Yan, Flame Shadow, get in here!”

Hearing Long Tian Yun’s summons, Cang Yan and Flame Shadow, who were right outside, immediately walked in and stood in front of Long Tian Yun. Long Tian Yun glanced in their direction with a dark expression and said, “Immediately notify all of the commanders, leaders, and the Alliance Masters of the subsidiary guilds to meet here at 5pm. Everyone is to be here.”

“Yes!” Flame Shadow immediately replied. He then raised his head and asked, “Young master, what’s the important occasion? Could it be that we’re going to act against Ling Tian City?”

“Bull crap, why would we act against them?” Long Tian Yun snorted. He then said proudly, “I’m going to bring the entire Yan Huang Alliance to join Ling Tian City in order to become Ling Tian City’s subsidiary. We will also follow Ling Tian City’s orders!”

“What?!” Both Flame Shadow and Cang Yan’s eyes bulged, wondering if they heard correctly. Flame Shadow hurriedly said, “Young master, you... you must not do this! Our Yan Huang Alliance is publicly acknowledged by China to be the central power; how can we become someone else’s subsidiary...”

Pa!!

Before Flame Shadow could finish speaking, a loud slap landed on his face. Long Tian Yun looked at him savagely, and just as he struck out with his right hand, he slapped out with his left hand. “You dare to disobey me?”

Pa!

“I must not do this?”

Pa!

“Since when do you make decisions for me?”

Pa!

“You dare disagree with me?”

Pa!

“Try saying another word!”

Pa!

“I’ll slap you to death!”

Pa!

Pa! Pa! Pa!

Long Tian Yun landed about 10 slaps on Flame Shadow’s face, causing his entire face to become swollen. Beside them, Cang Yan’s legs trembled, and he did not dare to say anything to contradict Long Tian Yun. He hurriedly lowered his head and said, “I’ll immediately notify them,” before leaving as if he was running away.

When Ling Chen had left, he had told Long Tian Yun that he was to slap anyone who disagreed. As a loyal dog, of course he would strictly carry out his master’s orders.

.....

Ling Chen could not think of a more fitting or crueller

punishment for Long Tian Yun. After leaving the Yan Huang Alliance's headquarters, he flew around Ling Tian City and checked on the expansion's progress. When it was nearly dusk, he logged off after being called by Tian Tian.

After coming out from the game, he could hear the patter of rain against the glass.

"It's raining." Ling Chen looked outside and got off from the bed. He walked out of his room and stood on the balcony, silently looking at the rainy sky.

"Although she kept her life, in the following 3 years, she was unable to even walk, and there were many ailments left in her body. Even now, when it is dusk and rain falls, she experiences a terrible soreness and numbness in all of her limbs. She's already endured this sort of pain for 20 or so years."

Ling Chen shook his head, trying to shake that voice out of his head, and he felt a trace of pain within his heart.

What's going on... even if she really is... but I've only met her a few times, and there are no feelings between us... this sort of impossible and unnecessary thing is something that I do not need... but why am I thinking of her now, when it's raining... it shouldn't be like this...

"Ling Chen, what are you doing here? Dinner is ready soon."

Shadissika smiled and walked to Ling Chen's side in her cute white pyjamas, looking at the rain outside. She muttered, "It feels great when it rains; it's so cool and refreshing. Tian Tian and I were in the rain for a bit just then, and it felt great."

"Be careful so that you don't get sick," Ling Chen said as he stroked Shadissika's hair which was still not quite dry yet.

"Hehe, I'm not afraid." Shadissika raised her hand, taking out a small bottle, "With this, no matter what sickness hits me, I'll be immediately healed."

Ling Chen stared in surprise as he asked, “Any sickness?”

When he said this, he couldn't help but think of the words Long Zheng Yang had said, as well as that figure who looked like an icy-lotus.

“That's right, any sickness. So Ling Chen doesn't need to worry about us getting sick,” Shadissika said as she smiled.

After seeing Shadissika cure the Isrock Disease and the technology she had, Ling Chen would believe her words no matter how outrageous they sounded. Looking at the small bottle in her hand, Ling Chen's gaze trembled. He was unable to forget about that figure in his mind and those words, and he said, “Sha Sha, can I have this bottle?”

“Of course you can. Ling Chen can have as many as he wants.” After saying this, Shadissika handed this bottle to Ling Chen and asked as she cocked her head, “Ling Chen, are you sick? Hmm... no, with Ling Chen's body, it's unlikely he'd get sick. Aiya, dinner's nearly ready. I should go back to the kitchen. Come and eat when it's done.”

Holding the small bottle in his hand, Ling Chen's mind wandered, and he didn't even notice Shadissika running back to the kitchen. After a while, he called out, “Ying, Xi.”

Soon, 2 beautiful figures appeared and came before Ling Chen, “What is it, master?”

“Give this to Li Xiao Xue and tell her to quickly give it to... Gu Qing Han. Tell her that this should be able to cure her of her chronic illness,” Ling Chen said as he handed them the bottle that Shadissika had just given him.

A strange look appeared on Chao Ying and Chao Xi's faces. They took the bottle and nodded, and prepared to leave.

“Wait,” Ling Chen stopped them as he said, “Tell Li Xiao Xue not to tell Gu Qing Han that this came from me.”

“Yes, we’ll deliver it immediately.”

Although it was not raining very hard, it lasted for a long time. Even after night fell, the rain did not stop, and it covered all of Su Hang City.

After receiving the medicine from Chao Ying and Chao Xi, she immediately went to deliver it to Gu Qing Han.

“Thank you, Xiao Xue, for being so considerate. You even brought it here yourself. Looks like this ordinary-looking medicine will be quite extraordinary.” After receiving the small bottle without any labels, Gu Qing Han’s expression became warmer.

Li Xiao Xue smiled as she nodded, “This medicine is from an extraordinary person, so I’m fairly certain that it will be able to fully cure Aunty Gu’s sickness.”

“All in all, thank you, Xiao Xue, I’ll try it out. Please also thank that extraordinary person for me.” Gu Qing Han lightly nodded before her eyebrows twitched. Her sickness acted up the most during rainy and dark days. Although her expression was calm, the bones in her legs were incredibly sore and numb, making her feel unimaginable pain.

“Alright, I won’t disturb Aunty Gu then. I hope this medicine will be able to help Aunty Gu make a full recovery soon.”

Li Xiao Xue got up, waved Gu Qing Han goodbye, and then began to leave. Just as she was about to reach the door, Gu Qing Han suddenly called out, “Wait... Xiao Xue, how has... Ling Chen been recently?”

Only when mentioning the name ‘Ling Chen’ would this famous and imposing Gu Qing Han reveal such emotions. Li Xiao Xue turned around and looked at Gu Qing Han, whose eyes filled with longing, and she felt an ache within her heart. After struggling with some internal conflict, she couldn't take it anymore, and softly said, “It was him who asked me to give this to you.”

The instant Li Xiao Xue turned around again, she saw Gu Qing Han cover her face with tears streaming down her face.

She knew that these words were the closest Gu Qing Han had come to 'happiness' over the past 20 years. Even if that medicine did not work, it would not matter – even if that bottle was filled with poison, she would still drink it without hesitation.

Chapter 724 - Eternal Hatred To The Long Family

A few days later, a shocking piece of news rocked the entire Chinese gaming world: the Yan Huang Alliance's Alliance Master Long Tian Yun had led the entire guild and all of its subsidiaries to join Ling Tian City. Moreover, he had publicly announced that they would not receive any power and would only become a subsidiary of Ling Tian City.

This news shocked all Chinese players, including those who belonged to Ling Tian City. They simply couldn't believe it or accept it. Even though the Yan Huang Alliance's strength was far below that of Ling Tian City's, it was still a central power that had existed for more than 10 years. What's more, it had the Long family, the family with the most power in China, backing it. Furthermore, its Alliance Master was extremely arrogant and haughty – how could the Yan Huang Alliance be willing to become another power's subsidiary?

Not too long after, another bombshell had been dropped... China's highest authority Long Zheng Yang had personally announced to media that Ling Tian City would become China's new central power and would represent all Chinese players on the international level.

The Chinese region was completely shaken. Those who heard about these things were completely dumbfounded. All sorts of doubts were soon dispelled when Long Tian Yun personally brought the entire Yan Huang Alliance in front of Ling Tian City, and completed the procedures to become a subsidiary. What caused people to feel the most shock was that during the entire process, Long Tian Yun had acted incredibly respectfully, not showing any of his usual arrogance at all. He obediently nodded when Ling Tian City's people announced all of the rules, and he

did not even say anything.

The only person who knew what was going on was Ling Chen.

.....

“Master, what’s going on? Why is the Yan Huang Alliance joining us? Master, you never allowed us to work with them. What’s going on?” The Reapers were all confused and they turned to look at Ling Chen.

“Work together? Of course we’re not working together. I just took a new loyal dog, that’s all,” Ling Chen said as he smiled.

The incredibly intelligent Reapers were completely dumbfounded by his word. Gui Ya tapped his ears as he came closer and asked uncertainly, “A loyal dog?”

“That’s right”! Ling Chen nodded as he smiled, “I already told him that all of you and the leaders of Ling Tian City can order this loyal dog around as you want. You can send him on errands, discipline him, curse at him, and he won’t refuse or retaliate. Furthermore, don’t forget about Ying Ya and Gui Dao’s deaths – you can vent your anger on him however you like, for as long as you like!”

The Reapers were all completely flabbergasted. After a while, Gui Ya finally hesitantly asked, “Could it be... some kind of mind control? Master’s mental energy is unrivalled in the world, but master doesn’t seem to have this sort of ability. Even if this sort of ability existed, wouldn’t it be too ridiculous?”

“Heh,” Ling Chen did not immediately reply, and instead strangely smiled. “Long Tian Yun’s coming over. If you want to vent out your anger on him, you’ll be able to do it soon.”

After Ling Chen finished speaking, Long Tian Yun ran over. Seeing Ling Chen, he leapt over and knelt down in front of Ling Chen, giving a loud kowtow as he said with an expression full of respect that tried to curry favour, “I respectfully greet master. The

Yan Huang Alliance is now a subsidiary of Ling Tian City. Please check over it, master.”

Even though Ling Chen had hinted at this, the Reapers all stared with wide eyes, their jaws almost dropping to the ground, when they saw Long Tian Yun laying there like a dog. This person was the high and mighty Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance. He was famous throughout all of China, and put nothing in his eyes – the young master of the Long family!

“Well done,” Ling Chen said with a look of appreciation on his face. He turned to Gui Ya and the others and said, “I believe you all know about Long Zheng Yang coming to find me a few days ago. Don’t worry. Long Tian Ya, who was related to the Long family, died 10 or so years ago, and was killed by them. Now, my surname is Ling, and I’ll always be your ‘Adam’, not Long Tian Ya! I’m not so stupid and merciful as to forget all of the pain and hatred! What they owe me, I will take back completely, regardless of why they did everything back then! I will never forget Ying Ya and Gui Dao’s deaths.”

.....

Ling Chen stretched out a finger and pointed at Long Tian Yun on the ground, “Now, go and do what you want to this young master of the Long family. Vent all of your anger, through any means you’d like, on his body... heh, his life is still long, and he won’t be able to die even if he wants to. You have unlimited time to torment him so don’t hold back!”

Ling Chen’s words caused all of the Reapers’ gazes to fall on Long Tian Yun’s body, and their eyes became red.

“I definitely won’t let master die before me!! No, even if I die, I won’t let master die!! Old bastard, don’t you dare die either!!”

“Die, my ass! I still haven’t gotten a wife yet; how can I die now? Hurry up and piss off!”

Gui Dao's final words sounded out in Gui Y a's ears. However, back then, he never thought that those would be Gui Dao's last words. During that night, Ying Ya, the youngest among them, , had trapped the Savage Tiger Corps' leader in a deathly bear hug after his legs had been broken, and ignited the explosives on him. He roared, "Hurry up and go! If you don't go, I won't call you guys my big brothers in the next life!" After that, amidst an explosion of fire, he blew himself up along with the Savage Tiger Corps chasing after them...

.....

Ling Chen's words caused the events of that night to surface in the Reapers' minds. Their eyes became red with grief and hatred. They madly rushed towards Long Tian Yun, raining down blows on his body and face...

"You bastard! Give us our brothers' lives back!!"

"You animal! Bastard! I'll make you wish you were dead!!"

"This punch is for Gui Dao... this punch is for Ying Ya... your life isn't worth as much as even a single strand of hair on their heads! I'll torture you every day so that their souls in heaven will feel happy, haha..."

"You dared to kill my brothers; I'll make you wish for death every day!!"

They hit Long Tian Yun incredibly savagely. Punches and kicks were unlike attacks from weapons – there was no pain reduction. The damage they dealt was quite small, and their only Priest continuously healed Long Tian Yun to prevent him from dying. Even if he wanted to die and escape these attacks, he simply wasn't able to. At the beginning, Long Tian Yun's screams had been incredibly pitiful, but soon, his throat became so hoarse that he couldn't make a sound anymore.

Ling Chen clenched his fists as he watched the Reapers madly

attacking Long Tian Yun. It had been a long time since that night, but he had not done anything to take revenge. He was afraid that these Reapers would be injured again or die – after all, they could not fight against the Long family’s strength. He knew that many of them had been heavily injured, and Gui Dao and Ying Ya’s deaths had weighed heavily on their hearts, making them loathe the Long family. They could now finally vent out that hatred and receive some peace.

.....

“Long Zheng Yang, did you really think that calling me ‘Tian Ya’ and saying that you had ‘secret troubles’ while kneeling would make me forgive all of you?” Ling Chen coldly smiled. “The coldness I was shown when I was younger, all your attempts to harm me, the pain I suffered in heaven and hell, Dia Wu’s suffering for 10 years, Shui Ruo’s passing, Ying Ya and Gui Dao’s deaths, and Meng Xin and Su’Er’s incidents... how could you pay all that back with just a few words and some kneeling?! I don’t care what sort of secret troubles you had; all of the suffering in my life was because of your Long family! I’ll make your Long family fall from the highest heights... so that you have nothing!”

Ling Chen slowly raised his head, looking up at the blue sky. When the words ‘Long family’ appeared in his mind, there was no mercy in his eyes or heart at all.

Long Tian Yun was beaten up by the furious Reapers for a whole 2 hours. After venting out their anger, the Reapers all looked incredibly refreshed and at peace. They happily went to carry out their duties. Long Tian Yun, whose body had been continuously violated, lay in a tangled heap on the ground. His entire body spasmed. He could not even stand up, his face so swollen that even his own father would not recognise him. Luckily, this was in the virtual world – if it was in the real world, he would have become a meat paste after all of those savage hits from the Reapers.

Collecting this debt felt quite good. Ling Chen laughed and

clicked his fingers, allowing him to come back to his senses as he said slowly, “Long Tian Yun, how does it feel?”

Long Tian Yun’s body trembled as he regained control of his body and mind. He endured the pain throughout his body and looked at Ling Chen with his eyes that were so swollen that they could barely open. However, there was no hatred or arrogance in them: only despair and pleading. “Spare me... Ling Tian... I beg you, please spare me... please... I won’t offend you ever again...”

“Hoh! You’re the high and mighty young master of the Long family, and yet you know how to beg to someone like this?” Ling Chen laughed. He felt quite pleased upon seeing Long Tian Yun’s appearance and felt no pity or mercy at all.

For an instant, a slight hint of animosity appeared in Long Tian Yun’s eyes before transforming back to a look of deep fear and pleading. After experiencing all these things over the past few days, it was thousands of times worse than his worst nightmare. He felt as if he was living in a dark dream, making him want to die. However, although his mind was clear, he was unable to do anything he wanted, and dying was simply a pipe dream.

“Ling Tian... I beg you... just spare me... I’m your big brother... Ling Tian... let me go... I’ll do anything...”

Long Tian Yun desperately pleaded in despair, but Ling Chen only mockingly laughed, “Aiya, how pitiful. The young master of the Long family actually fell into such straits. But why don’t I feel any sympathy at all?”

Click!

Ling Chen once again clicked, bringing Long Tian Yun under his control again. He didn’t even bother to look at Long Tian Yun, because that would dirty his eyes. Ling Chen turned around as he said, “Stop lying on the ground like a dog; go and work hard for me. There’ll be many more ‘rewards’ like this in future!”

“Yes... Yes, master.” Long Tian Yun looked like an obedient little dog, enduring the pain as he got up and rushed towards the Yan Huang Alliance’s headquarters.

Chapter 725 - A Big Scare

With the Yan Huang Alliance as a loyal subsidiary, Ling Tian City's strength grew to a level where nothing could shake it. Chinese players also raced to join Ling Tian City, and soon, joining the Ling Tian City became a type of glory.

Even though the Lady of Ling Tian City was extremely kind and beautiful, the rules that she set were not 'gentle' at all. Even though Ling Tian City was extremely powerful, it never bullied players or other powers. If a player violated any of the city's rules, the most severe punishment was being kicked out or even being permanently banished from Ling Tian City. The [Dark Night], which had joined Ling Tian City, no longer took assassination jobs. Instead, their targets became evildoers who disrupted the peace in Ling Tian City. Once targeted by the Dark Night, unless one never went back into the game, it was impossible for them to escape.

As such, Ling Tian City's reputation was also quite good, and its status rose day by day. At the same time, the development of Ling Tian City caused some of the other countries' players to feel terror. Ling Tian City was filled with Gold grade equipment and high quality potions, making the average strength of Chinese players to rise above those of players of other countries. The speed at which they levelled up, and their average level, started to rise above those of other countries' players more and more so. After becoming China's central power, more and more Chinese players gathered at Ling Tian City, causing China's enemies to become more and more unsettled.

As such, the pressure from various governments in the real world became greater and greater, and many worried countries started to ally together. In the real world, movements to assassinate Ling Tian City's beautiful Lady began... but they were unable to even find Yun Meng Xin's shadow.

Because of how powerful Ling Tian City had become and how

quickly Chinese players were now levelling up, those who had acted arrogantly towards China completely changed their attitude. Despite allying together, no one was willing to enrage this ferocious lion because the World Barriers could be opened at any day, and no one wanted to become China's first target.

A week later, Su'Er's Heaven's Secrets power could finally be used again. This time, 3 words were revealed to her, and these 3 words caused Ling Chen to feel so shocked that he jumped up into the air.

“Moon... God... Palace?! Are you sure it was those 3 words?” Ling Chen grabbed Su'Er's slim arms as he stared at her.

“Yes... it was those 3 words.” Su'Er nodded as she looked at Ling Chen with her innocent eyes. She had helped him locate his things many times, but she had never seen such a reaction from him before. She weakly asked, “Big brother Ling Tian, what sort of place is the Moon God Palace? Is it very scary? But it sounds like a very pretty place.”

“The environment itself might be very beautiful,” Ling Chen said as his mouth twitched... goddamit, how could it not be pretty? That was where the most powerful clan in the Mystic Moon world, the Moon God Clan, lived! That was where the 3 Moon Goddesses were!!

The places where the Lunar Scourge's orbs were were all strange and dangerous places. Ling Chen was mentally prepared for something like this, and he expected somewhere even more extreme than the Underworld Blood Lake. However, that place had still given him a big scare. The Moon God Palace was separated from the continents, and it was the most secret, holy, and closely-guarded place in the Mystic Moon world. It was a place of absolute power and faith! The peak existence in the Mystic Moon world!

Even the Shura, that had destroyed a tenth of a continent, had been suppressed by the Moon God Clan. Even though Ling Chen

was powerful, in front of the Moon God Clan, he was like an ant in front of a mountain. Let alone the 3 Moon Goddesses and the guardian beast Eight-Winged Heaven Tiger, even a Moon God Representative would be able to send him running.

Let alone him, even the Underworld King would not dare to charge in there.

Putting all this aside, if the Moon God Clan discovered that the Lunar Scourge was on him, he would be hunted down by them. Just this reason alone was enough to make him not want to go.

The information that the next orb was in the Moon God Palace made Ling Chen feel as if he had been struck by lightning, and he almost coughed up blood.

The Moon God Clan knew better than anyone how terrifying the Lunar Scourge was, and they feared it more than anyone else. If one of the orbs was in the possession of the Moon God Clan, they would definitely have it locked up in the most secure and secret place. The Moon God Palace was one of the most powerful places in the Mystic Moon world, and its location was extremely secret... let alone a player like him, even the rare Saint Destroyer experts might not be able to succeed.

Goddamit... Ling Chen scratched his head, feeling distraught to the point of tears. A long time ago, Qi Yue had raised the possibility of one of the Lunar Scourge's orbs being with the Moon God Clan, but he had never thought that he would have to face them so soon. He knew that he would have to fight against the Moon God Clan because he had the Lunar Scourge, but it should at least be when he was max level, had maxed out his equipment and skills, and had completely restored the Lunar Scourge. Even then, he would feel unprepared.

“Big brother Ling Tian, are you going to leave for a while again?” Seeing the complicated look on Ling Chen's face, Su'Er asked worriedly. After waiting for a while, Ling Chen still did not reply,

so she shook Ling Chen's arm. "Big brother Ling Tian, will it be dangerous this time? Don't worry, I'm sure there's nothing that big brother Ling Tian can't do. I'm sure that you'll definitely find what you want this time as well."

Su'Er's words caused Ling Chen to feel a warmth within his heart. Looking at Su'Er, he remembered how she had almost died from the Isrock Disease not too long ago, and the fear he felt towards the Moon God Palace immediately decreased... indeed, even the Isrock Disease, which could cause anyone to despair, was overcome with Sha Sha's miraculous medicine. As long as he believed in himself and persevered, he would be able to create a miracle. Moon God Palace... so what if it was the Moon God Palace? He had passed through many dangerous places before, so why wouldn't he be able to survive the Moon God Palace? Moreover, he was only going in to find something, not fight countless Moon God Representatives and the 3 Moon Goddesses. With the Feng Chen Sect's escaping skills, he did indeed have a chance at success.

Moreover, for Shui Ruo, even if he had to fight with the Moon God Clan, he would not retreat. Ling Chen's gaze became resolute as he nodded and said, "Yes, I'll have to leave for a while. However, what Su Su said is right – there's nothing I can't do. This time I'll succeed again... I must succeed!"

"Mm! I believe in big brother Ling Tian," Su'Er said with admiration and worship.

Ling Chen lowered his head and repeated the words 'Moon God Palace' to himself. Apart from knowing that it was the central place of the Moon God Clan, he knew nothing about it, and he didn't even know where it was, let alone the situation within it.

After thinking for a while, Ling Chen went to a place with no one around and took out a white hairpin. This was the hairpin that the Forgotten God Representative had given him after he had successfully used the [Soulstealing Curse] on her, and it could be used to contact her. He said in a low voice, "Mu Cai Ling, come to

where I am!”

Ling Chen did not have to wait for long. Less than a minute later, a pure white woman’s figure appeared above Ling Chen. She was wearing a moon-white dress, and there was a white fog around her, giving off an ethereal air. It looked as if she was standing on clouds, looking down at creation like an inviolable goddess.

She immediately noticed where Ling Chen was, and she quickly came down to him. The fog around her disappeared, revealing her beautiful appearance, and she said with happiness and respect, “Ling Tian, did you call me?”

“Mm, there are a few things I want to ask you. Do you know where the Moon God Clan’s Moon God Palace is?” Ling Chen asked seriously.

Everything about the Moon God Clan was a secret to outsiders. As a Moon God Representative, she would never reveal the Moon God Clan’s secrets. However, even though the [Soulstealing Curse] was not as cruel as the [Soukilling Curse], it was still quite powerful. After using [Soulstealing Curse] on her, the Forgotten God Representative did not resist Ling Chen’s words at all, and she unhesitatingly replied, “The Moon God Palace is located on the Moon God Island at the centre of the Mystic Moon’s ocean, and it is about... 30,000 kilometres away from the Forgotten Continent.”

“The centre of the ocean?” Ling Chen was quite surprised. 20% of the Mystic Moon world was land, and 80% was water. If it was at the centre of the ocean, it would be considerably far from any continent... wait! Fudge... 30,000 kilometres?!

If he flew over, just when would he be able to arrive?!

“If it’s so far away, how do you go to and fro? Could it be that you have to travel 30,000 kilometres every time?” Ling Chen frowned as he asked.

“Of course not. At the boundary of every continent, there’s a

teleportation channel created by the Moon Goddesses. Entering any of those teleportation channels will bring us back to the Moon God Palace. However, only Moon God Representatives with Moon God power will be able to use these teleportation channels; other living creatures will not be able to use them,” the Forgotten God Representative said earnestly before she hesitatingly asked, “Is master asking these things because he wants to go to the Moon God Palace?”

“That’s right,” Ling Chen replied. “I also want to know about who resides in the Moon God Palace, as well as how it’s structured and any secrets it possesses. Oh, and any weaknesses that the Moon Goddesses might have.”

The Forgotten God Representative looked quite shocked as she hurriedly said, “Please don’t do it! That place does not allow any outsiders to enter or even go near. Moreover, you have the Lunar Scourge on you, and if you’re found out by one of the Moon Goddesses or a Moon God Representative, you’ll be hunted down by the entire clan. If that happens, you won’t be able to escape even if you run to the edge of the world, so please don’t go... that’s right, there’s also a Spatial Restriction that the Moon Goddesses set up around the Moon God Palace. Only Moon God Representatives will be able to freely enter and exit, so even if you go, you won’t be able to go near.”

She genuinely cared and worried about Ling Chen because her soul now belonged to Ling Chen.

Chapter 726 - News About A Saint Orb

“Don’t worry, I know what I’m doing. I’m not stupid enough to do something that would bring me great danger,” Ling Chen replied.

The Forgotten God Representative committed all of Ling Chen's questions to memory before starting to answer them, “Apart from the 3 Moon Goddesses, there are 283 official Moon God Representatives. 180 or so of them have been sent to the various continents to keep the order there, so there are around 100 or so left in the Moon God Palace. There are also 2,000 Moon Ladies who are weaker than the Moon God Representatives, as well as 200 or so Apprentice Moon God Representatives.”

“Wait, how strong are the Moon Ladies and Apprentice Moon God Representatives?”

“The weakest Moon Ladies are Heaven’s End grade; those who are below Heaven’s End grade are not qualified to enter the Moon God Palace. Most of the Apprentice Moon God Representatives are quite young, but after receiving Moon God power, they’re all at least Heaven’s End grade, and some geniuses are close to Mysterious God grade,” the Forgotten God Representative replied.

“Fudge...” Ling Chen inwardly groaned. In the human world, Heaven’s End grade beings were almost invincible, and they were super-existences in the Mystic Moon world. And yet, they were the weakest in the Moon God Palace!

“C-Continue,” Ling Chen’s voice started to slightly tremble as cold sweat started to drip down his forehead. Was he really going to go to that absurd place? With his strength, he wouldn’t be qualified to even deliver vegetables.

“There are 81 Moon God Shrines in the Moon God Palace, and each Moon God Shrine has hundreds of Moon God Pavilions. Every official Moon God Representative has their own Moon God

Pavilion. Even after they die, their Moon God Pavilion will be maintained. The Moon God Palace's structure is like the stars in the sky, with Shrines everywhere, and the Moon God Pavilions are also chaotically organised within the Moon God Shrines. It's very easy for those who aren't familiar with that place to get lost.

“As for any secrets... I rarely return to the Moon God Palace, so I don't know.”

“The 3 Moon Goddesses are usually in the First Shrine, and they almost never leave. This is because there hasn't been anything that has required them to come out over these past years. As for their weaknesses... the 3 Moon Goddesses have peerless power, and they don't have any weaknesses. However, there are 2 people who they fear: one is the Underworld's Underworld King, Ming Sa... your father-in-law, and the other is the Sea Emperor Helos.”

“There isn't much else that I know. Over the past 100 years or so, I've only gone back to the Moon God Palace 3 times, and each time I've only stayed for a short period of time. Perhaps much has changed since I've gone back. Are you... really going to go there?” The Forgotten God Representative suddenly remembered something and said anxiously, “Could it be that you're going there to retrieve the Lunar Scourge's Saint Orb?”

“Saint Orb? There's a Saint Orb in the Moon God Palace?” Ling Chen felt incredibly excited as he walked forwards. “That's right! Since you were able to tell that I had the Lunar Scourge on me, you should have some understanding towards the Lunar Scourge and its orbs, right? Have you seen that orb before? Are you sure it's a Saint Orb? Which one is it? And where is it kept?”

“I... I...” The Forgotten God Representative felt at a bit of a loss, but she did not hide anything. “About 2 months ago, the Goddess Fate summoned me to the Moon God Palace and told me that it was likely that the Lunar Scourge was going to re-emerge. She gave me something that would react when I came close to the Lunar Scourge, which allowed me to find out that it was on you. The

Goddess Fate was able to sense that the Lunar Scourge was going to re-emerge because of the Saint Orb in the Moon God Palace. From about a year ago, the Saint Orb would occasionally light up, and it has been doing this more and more frequently.”

“Saint Orb? So it’s really a Saint Orb? Which one? The Star God Orb? Moon God Orb? Sun God Orb?” The words ‘Saint Orb’ caused Ling Chen’s blood to boil, and he began to feel much less fear towards the Moon God Palace. Over time, he had realised just how powerful the Lunar Scourge’s orbs were, and despite obtaining 11 God Orbs, he had not obtained a single Saint Orb. If the God Orbs were already so powerful, just how heaven-defying would the Saint Orbs be?! He had always been anticipating the day that he would obtain a Saint Orb.

And this was the first time that he had heard about the location of a Saint Orb!

“It’s... the Moon God Orb. That’s what the Goddess Fate told me.” Facing Ling Chen’s burning gaze, the Forgotten God Representative hurriedly replied.

“Moon God Orb... Moon God Orb... one of the 3 Saint Orbs!” Ling Chen instantly grinned, then asked, “Where is it kept?”

The Forgotten God Representative looked at Ling Chen worriedly and lowered her head as she said in a soft voice, “That orb was stored in the Moon God Palace since a long time ago. However, it is kept by the Goddess Fate in the First Shrine, and only the 3 Moon Goddesses can enter.”

Ling Chen frowned. Only the 3 Moon Goddesses could enter the First Shrine – not even Moon God Representatives had the right to go in there. Evidently, that was the most difficult place in the Moon God Palace to enter.

The fact that the Saint Orb was in the Moon God Palace was already difficult enough, but it was also in the toughest place to get into... no matter how well-tempered Ling Chen was, he felt the

urge to curse loudly. He committed what the Forgotten God Representative had said to memory, then slowly nodded. “Alright, I understand. You can go back now.”

“Mm, if there’s anything you need, feel free to summon me whenever.” The Forgotten God Representative said reluctantly as she gave a small bow. Just as she turned around to leave, a slight struggle appeared on her face, and she finally turned to face Ling Chen again as she took out a white hairpin and gave it to Ling Chen. “If... If you really must go to the Moon God Palace, take this with you. You will only be able to break through the Spatial Restriction around the Moon God Palace with this.”

Ling Chen looked at the hairpin in her hands, then slowly shook his head. “It’s alright. If you lose it, you’ll be punished by the Moon God Clan. Plus, I don’t need it.”

“Eh? How did you know?” The Forgotten God Representative was quite surprised and felt quite touched by his concern.

“It’s because I already have one.” Ling Chen smiled, then took out a hairpin that looked exactly the same as the Forgotten God Representative’s apart from the fact that it looked slightly older.

“That’s one of our clan’s Moon God Hairpins!” The Forgotten God Representative cried out. “How do you have one?”

“Don’t worry, I didn’t take it from one of your clan’s people. I obtained it at a place called the Moon God Ruins. It was left behind by a deceased Moon God Representative, and the power it contains should be enough to break through the Spatial Restriction around the Moon God Palace,” Ling Chen said as he waved the Moon God Hairpin. He had obtained this from a Dark Undead Moon God Representative, and he had not thrown it away because the description had said that it could allow him to pass into the Moon God Palace. It seems like he will finally use it now.

Seeing the Forgotten God Representative’s reaction, it seemed that it would be possible for him to use the one in his hands.

“In that case, if you have to go, please be careful. If something happens to you, I... I...” As she spoke, the Forgotten God Representative almost began sobbing. This high and mighty Moon God Representative, who had seemed so cold and domineering when he had first met her, was now acting so meekly and gently.

The [Soulstealing Curse] was simply too powerful!

Ling Chen did not have to worry about her revealing that he had a Moon God Hairpin either.

He had indeed received some information from summoning the Forgotten God Representative. At the very least, he had confirmed that the Lunar Scourge’s Orb was in the Moon God Palace. However, putting aside whether he could obtain the orb or if he could successfully enter the Moon God Palace... Ling Chen first had to solve the problem of how he was going to get to ‘Moon God Island’!

In order to reach the ocean, he needed to leave the Forgotten Continent, and in order to leave the Forgotten Continent, he needed to pass through the World Boundary! The World Boundary had not been opened yet, so just finding a way through that was a big issue. Last time, he had gone to the East Ocean Continent using the Dwarves’ World Boundary Scroll, and he had already used that.

Ling Chen tapped his chin and left for the Dwarves’ District.

[Author’s Note: The Moon God Orb of the 3 Saint Orbs is about to appear. Eh? There are only 11 God Orbs so far, and there’s still 1 left? Actually, the Aries Orb’s effects are too ‘trash’, so it’s fine to forget it for now!!]

Chapter 727 - Fey Returns

All of the most talented Dwarves, including Chief Dilo, were closed off from the rest of the world while earnestly studying the Underworld God Cannon.

“World Boundary Scroll?” Elder Dita thought for a while before slowly nodding. “If we have the materials, it won’t be too difficult to create a World Boundary Scroll.”

“Really?” Ling Chen grinned before marvelling, “No less than expected from the Dwarf Clan; I knew that this sort of thing would not be too difficult for you. Do you have the materials? Let me know if you need anything.”

Elder Dita thought for a moment before replying, “We have all of the normal materials, but the core materials... Gold Pattern Scrolls can be bought at a high price, and we have quite a few Skybreak Underworld Stones from the Underworld. The only things that we’re missing are the precious Spatial Stones.”

“Don’t worry; I just so happen to have a Spatial Stone, though it’s a bit small.” As Ling Chen spoke, he took out a fist-sized Spatial Stone and handed it over to Elder Dita.

“Oh! That’s enough, that’s enough. The spatial energy that this Spatial Stone contains will be enough to create 10 World Boundary Scrolls. It’s just that...” Elder Dita’s expression became somewhat embarrassed. “The ones who are not working on the Underworld God Cannon are not very talented and adding on the fact that creating the World Boundary Scroll is very difficult, it will take a bit longer than normal.”

“How long will you need?”

“About a month,” Elder Dita replied truthfully.

“A month...” That was quite long, but he could afford to wait. Ling Chen nodded. “No worries, a month it is. Let me know as

soon as it's done.”

“Alright, no problem. Working for you is our joy and honour,” Elder Dita happily replied.

After leaving the Dwarves' District, Ling Chen's calm expression crumbled as he moaned, “A month, a whole month! *Sigh* Forget it, I'll just wait a month then.”

Ling Chen took out a map of the Forgotten Continent, and after looking at it, his gaze fell on a region about 50 kilometres South of the Fairy Forest. “Right there. Since I can only leave after a month, I'll level up as much as possible during this time. I'll try to reach LV80 after a month!”

After making this decision, Ling Chen took out a Spatial Orb and directly went South of the Fairy Forest. As levelling up in the Mystic Moon world became more and more difficult, wanting to level up from LV62 to LV80 in a single month was simply a pipe dream to most players. Let alone LV80, even LV70 would not be possible. What's more, Ling Chen had the Heaven's Jealousy debuff, so wanting to level up from LV62 to LV80 was simply ridiculous. With his own strength, this would simply be impossible.

However, he had Xi Ling, a super pet who could instantly wipe out an entire mob of monsters with a single attack!

[Mutant Purple-Scaled Snake]: Type: Demonic Beast, Level: LV80, HP: 5000. A strangely-shaped snake that is covered with purple spots. Its body is long and thin, but it possesses incredibly powerful venom. It moves as fast as lightning, and it is feared by all creatures as a very dangerous creature.

Passive Abilities: All attacks have a 100% chance of applying [Lethal Poison], and it has incredibly fast attacks and Movement Speed.

Attack Skills: [Violet Extreme Poison Lightning], [Deadly Snake

Saliva]

Weaknesses: Has weak HP and Defence, and fears Wind and Fire attacks.

[What A Big Cow]: Type: Beast, Level: LV80, HP: 66,000. A normal mountain cow that has mutated. It has always wanted to lose weight, but it has never been able to succeed, causing its personality to become violent. It will ferociously attack any animals smaller and thinner than it.

Passive Abilities: Fairly strong Defence, and its attacks have a chance to knock down the target, as well as a 20% chance of interrupting the casting of magic.

Attack Skills: [What A Big Cow], [Ten Thousand Cow Surge]

Weaknesses: Low intelligence, and it cannot attack for a while after launching an attack.

The vast map was densely populated with small purple snakes and large cows, and it was surprising to see such different monsters occupying the same space. However, within the nearest 50 kilometres, there was no other place where monsters were gathered so densely.

There would definitely be no one coming to interrupt him in territory that contained dangerous LV80 monsters. Ling Chen found a safe region and relaxedly sat on the grass as he summoned Xi Ling and Xiao Hui while waving his hand. “Go, Xi Ling and Xiao Hui!”

A piercing cry sounded out as Xi ling rose into the air. She flapped her wings, sending down a [Nine Inferno Heavenly Flames]. In an instant, the cloudless sky was dyed golden by the flames.

-356,000, -356,000, -356,000, -356,000...

With Xi Ling’s terrifying destructive power, killing these normal monsters was simply a waste of her strength. In just a second, the

surrounding 100 metres of purple snakes and giant cows were completely annihilated. If it wasn't for Xiao Hui devouring the corpses, Xi Ling would have used even more powerful flames to incinerate these monsters into nothing.

In just a moment, Ling Chen's LV62 EXP bar greatly swelled. Xiao Hui quickly ran around, quickly devouring corpses and picking up the dropped items. Xi Ling moved around, raining down a [Nine Inferno Heavenly Flames] wherever she went.

Ling Chen looked at his rapidly-increasing EXP bar with satisfaction and nodded... from this, it seemed that it would take less than a month for him to reach LV80. What should he do during this period of time?

“Master, I want to listen to a story.”

Leng'Er, who had also come out, instinctively stuck to Ling Chen and started shaking his arm. Now, not only did Leng'Er's personality become even sweeter, but she also gave off an enchanting air. Adding on her innocent and timid nature, any man's bestial nature would be aroused upon seeing her.

However, the only one who could enjoy being with this beauty was Ling Chen. He put his hands around Leng'Er's slim waist and gently pushed her down onto the grass as he whispered in her ear, “Do you want to listen to a story or play the game?”

“Play the game...” Leng'Er jet-black eyes blinked as she nodded. “Okay...”

After speaking with her tender voice, her clothes disappeared... because playing the game with her master was now her favourite thing to the point that she liked it more than her dolls.

Underneath Ling Chen, Leng'Er's naked body looked like a jade doll. Her waist was incredibly slim, and her butt was small but perky. Her small legs were supple and tender, and the pinkness between her legs was incredibly cute.

“Let’s start!” Ling Chen pressed down with his body, his evil hands rubbing her soft chest. Leng’Er moaned in her cute voice, and she wrapped her snow-white arms around him, her toes clenching in excitement and anticipation.

.....

In the air, Xi Ling continuously cried out as the countless monsters below howled as they were killed. A light breeze blew across the plains, bringing with it the sounds of a girl’s moans.

To Ling Chen, there was nothing more enjoyable than playing the game while rapidly increasing his EXP and Leng’Er’s favourability towards him.

These days, most of Ling Chen’s time was spent letting Xi Ling farm EXP for him. He spent most of his time playing the game with Leng’Er – her cute body made it so that he couldn’t stop even if he wanted to. He did it with her at least once every day, and it was to the point that it almost became part of his daily routine. Over the past few days, he tried almost every position he knew on her, and Leng’Er, who enjoyed playing the game, obediently did whatever she was told. Of course, he made sure that the little Cai’Er was not around. Otherwise, she would be corrupted. As for Xi Ling... she was most likely used to seeing it by now...

10 days alter...

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV70, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has levelled up to LV70, skill [Holy Spirit’s Aura] has levelled up to LV5, skill [Holy Spirit’s Pearl] has been levelled up to LV3, and a new Holy Spirit’s Pearl will be created.”

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has created a new Holy Spirit’s Pearl, which has been transferred into your item space.”

“Ding... your pet Xi Ling has levelled up to LV70... skill [Phoenix

Sky Dance] has been levelled up to LV7, and she will be able to create 7 golden Phoenixes at most.”

“Ding... your pet Leng’Er has levelled up to LV70... skill [Soul Lock] has been levelled up to LV3.”

“Ding... your pet Leng’Er’s favourability towards you +2 to 69 (Infatuation).”

“Ding... your mount-type pet Snow Cherry has levelled up to LV70... she now has 7 tails and can transform into any appearance.

“Ding... your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV70, and all stats and skills have become stronger...”

After Xi Ling continuously insta-killed her way through the map time and time again, Ling Chen reached LV70 in just 10 days and reclaimed the number 1 ranking on China’s Player Level Rankings.

After reaching LV70, a stream of system announcements woke Ling Chen up. He rubbed his eyes and looked at his level before muttering, “Oh, I’m at LV70 already.” He then looked at his pets’ skills and stats before falling back and preparing to continue napping. Since he had decided to go to the Moon God Palace to retrieve the Moon God Orb, levelling was a must... as well as resting!

Just as Ling Chen closed his eyes again, his communication device sounded out, and as soon he picked up, he heard Gui Ya’s excited voice, “Master, it’s Fey! She’s back, and Yola is also back too! And Saros! There’s also Hannah, Disha, Green Eyes... they’re all here!”

Ling Chen’s eyes shot open, and he stood up with a ‘whoosh’, feeling incredibly excited as he hurriedly asked, “Where are you all?”

“Ling Tian City’s Central Meeting Hall!”

“I’ll be there soon!”

Ling Chen immediately hung up and took out a Spatial Orb and yelled out, “Xi Ling, Xiao Hui, let’s go!”

Chapter 728 - The Long-Awaited Reunion

At this moment, Ling Tian City's Central Meeting Hall was incredibly lively and raucous.

“Are you... really... really... going to join Ling Tian City?” Yun Feng's voice trembled, and he had to gulp down a mouthful of saliva with every word that he spoke... Heavens! Oh, heavens! This is Eve, as well as the Golden Eyed War God... and the entire Demon God Group... they're joining Ling Tian City? I'm dreaming, right?!

“What, you don't welcome us?” Fey crossed her arms and calmly looked at Yun Feng.

“O-Of course we welcome you! Of course!” Yun Feng gulped down another mouthful of saliva, unable to stop trembling at all.

Eve was a peerless player who held the title of 'Demon God', and she was someone who was worshipped by countless players. The Demon God Group that she led was a legendary group, and 'invincible' was the only way to describe them. Even though they only had 100 or so people, they were publicly acknowledged to be the strongest player group.

And now, Eve had brought her entire Demon God Group to Ling Tian City and had announced that they were joining Ling Tian City.

When Yun Feng confirmed that this was not a dream, his heart beat so fast that he almost couldn't take it anymore.

“You're all infinitely welcome; this is Ling Tian City's glory!” Yun Meng Xin walked over and gave a heartfelt smile. She knew that Fey and the entire Demon God Group was joining Ling Tian City because of Ling Tian, and she more so knew what this meant for Ling Tian City.

With Eve, the Golden Eyed War God, and the Demon God Group, Ling Tian City's name would once again shake the world. In terms

of battle strength, they would be completely invincible! Ling Tian City was already publicly acknowledged to be the most powerful player's city in the East, and now that the strongest player in the West was bringing the strongest group in the west to join them, this news would shock countless players in the world. At the same time, the position of Ling Tian City within players' hearts would be elevated to a new level.

“That... That... will you be joining permanently or temporarily?” Even though Fey might not be happy with this question, in order to make future plans, Yun Feng mustered up the question to ask that question.

Fey gently swept some of her flame-red hair behind her ears as a frustrated expression appeared on her face. “I made this decision somewhat rashly, but surprisingly, when I let everyone else know, none of them objected. In fact, they've been even more eager than me to come.” She slightly pursed her red lips. “Look, do you think they'd be willing to leave after I brought them here?”

At the other end of the meeting hall, laughter, crying, cursing, and sounds of fighting could be heard.

“Saros! It's been more than 7 years; we brothers can finally fight side by side again!”

“Heh! Good brother, I've been waiting for this day over the past few years.”

“Old Gui, oh, Old Gui, we haven't seen each other in 7 years. Back then, you were acknowledged to be the ugliest among all of us, and now... you're even uglier, bahahaha!!”

“Screw your ancestors! You dare to insult me? Looks like your body's been itching for a beating after 7 years... take this attack!!”

“Godo brother, who would have thought that we'd be reunited one day; this is great. Over the past week, I've been thinking about you all the entire time... especially that time we burned your

clothes while you were all showering. Those white butts appeared in my heart, mind, and dreams...”

“Fudge! You still dare to mention that... brothers, go and beat him up! If we don’t beat him up to the point that his own mother won’t recognise him, I’ll start walking backwards!”

Bang, slap, crash... a torrent of punches, slaps, and kicks were launched.

“Little Hannah, after all these years, did you miss your big brother Gui Jian?”

“Hmph! I’m Adam’s woman; who has the time to think of you? Where’s Adam, and why isn’t he back yet?”

“Cheh! Of course master’s with his women; he’s definitely forgotten about little Hannah already.”

“I’ll beat you up!”

.....

.....

Black Demon, White Demon, Purple Demon, Star Demon, Murder Demon, Green Demon... looking at these legendary experts, who he could only look up to in the past, Yun Feng continuously looked around at them, still doubting whether or not he was in a dream. Not only had they appeared in front of him, but they had also joined Ling Tian City, and they were laughing, cursing, and even crying, just like normal people...

“Looks like they’re very close. They must have known each other since a long time ago,” Yun Meng Xin said as she smiled.

Fey nodded as she said calmly, “The relationships between them have been forged from walking the boundary between life and death time and time again. Without experiencing everything that they went through together, it will be impossible for you to understand what sort of relationships they possess.”

Yun Meng Xin fell silent, then deeply nodded.

“Perhaps splitting up 7 years ago was a mistake... but we had no other choice. Everyone had things that they needed to go back to and families they wanted to see. After all these years, they’ve all completed the things that they wanted to do, so it’s time for us to reunite. They’ve waited for this day for a long time.” Fey looked at Yun Meng Xin and said in a deep manner, “None of you Chinese players knew that our Demon God Group was only able to dominate the International Mock Battles because your Dark Night never participated. Otherwise, the International Mock Battles would have been much more exciting.”

“Haha,” Yun Feng dryly laughed as he scratched his head. “The main reason is because Ling Tian hid too well, and we only just found out that the Dark Night belonged to Ling Tian this whole time.”

At this moment, the sound of rapid footsteps running towards the door sounded out. Following this, the doors were opened as Ling Chen rushed in, staring at the hall full of people... following this, he lightly stretched out his hand and took the Evil God’s Mask off his face.

The incredibly raucous hall instantly fell silent, and everyone stared at Ling Chen. After a whole 3 seconds, the hall was once again drowned in sound...

“Adam!”

“Adam!!”

“Adam!!!”

Those who had been standing up, sitting down, lying down, or even sprawled on the floor instantly rushed over to the entrance and leapt at Ling Chen. Soon, they formed a massive pile, solidly locking Ling Chen in the middle. They all yelled, cried, and laughed...

Yun Feng was completely stupefied, and Yun Meng Xin stared in shock before muttering, “Looks like their relationship with Ling Tian is quite extraordinary.”

“Of course.” Fey pursed her red lips as she smiled while looking at the massive pile of people. “Over the years we were together, his power, charisma, and incredibly stubborn personality won everyone over. He also saved many of their lives, and he took many stabs for them during training or dangerous missions. In the end, it was because of him that they were able to escape from that hellish prison. As such, he holds a very special position in their hearts. Even if they were asked to immediately give up their lives for him, none of them would even hesitate.”

“So it’s... like that,” Yun Meng Xin muttered in awe. She didn’t know anything about Ling Chen’s past, and she didn’t ask. However, she knew that it was even more legendary than a legend, an experience that was crueller than hell. Otherwise, how could he have such shocking strength and such loyal companions?

He was incredibly cold, cruel, and merciless towards his enemies, but he was incredibly good to those around him. He did not want them to be hurt at all, and after Shui Ruo passed away, he was grieved to the point that he was willing to die... this sort of person would have many enemies, but he would never abandon or betray his companions.

“However, it also looks like there are many debts of love that he needs to pay back.” Looking at the girls who were unable to squeeze in and almost in tears, Yun Meng Xin lightly laughed.

“Of course.” Fey rolled her eyes. “Out of the 19 girls I brought, there are 12 who are thinking about him every day. Even the cute little Yola by my side needs to mention him tens of times every day. You have no idea how excited they were when I said that I was going to bring them over... hmph, all good things are always taken by that demonic pervert.”

“Eh? 12? So... many?” Yun Feng’s eyes widened.

“Is that a lot?” Fey smiled. “There are about 30 or so girls in the Dark Night, and at least 20 of them are his. Didn’t you know about that?”

“Ehhhhhh? T-T-T-T-T-T-This...” Yun Feng’s jaw nearly dropped to the ground, and Yun Meng Xin’s eyebrows leapt up.

“There’s nothing to be shocked about. Back at the place where we were before, the winner of the competition of strength every month would be able to choose a woman of their choice. He won every time, so those girls were all his for the taking. Moreover, that demonic pervert’s very picky, and he only chooses the prettiest ones. Moreover, his appetite was massive, and all of the pretty ones have all been done by him before. Mmm, whether it’s the Dark Night or the Demon God Group, any girl who you think is pretty has definitely been taken by him before. Ai, I don’t know what sort of sorcery he used, but all of the ones he’s taken have fallen completely in love with him as if they’ve taken a medicine that lasts permanently.”

“Including you?” Yun Meng Xin asked with a smile.

“Me? I’m different from them. He didn’t pick me; I picked him. The girls also had a competition where the victor could pick a man every month. Just like him, I always won, but unlike that demonic pervert, I only chose him every time,” Fey narrowed her eyes while speaking in a calm voice that betrayed no jealousy at all. Evidently, she had become used to this, and she looked at Yun Meng Xin with great interest as she asked, “Come to think of it, after hearing about all of this and finding out about how big of a pervert he is, do you feel any jealousy or heartache? Don’t tell me that you don’t feel anything for him at all after such a long time.”

Yun Meng Xin slightly lowered her head, then raised it after a while and lightly smiled. “Just a little...”

Only then did Yun Feng completely digest what Fey had said, and

he stared with wide eyes as he asked, “T-Then... you’re also Ling Tian’s woman?”

Fey glanced at him and said charmingly, “You can think of it that way. However, strictly speaking, he’s my man. However, he’s not very obedient, and he’s very unfaithful.”

“So... it’s like that.” Yun Feng’s eyes became even wider, and he stuttered, “So according to your words, o-only the p-p-prettiest ones... so M-Mu Bing Yao... and Golden Eyed War God Yola...”

“Of course.”

“Holy fudge!!!” Yun Feng felt as if his heart was going to explode... the Demon God Group was so loyal towards Ling Tian, and Eve was actually Ling Tian’s woman, and... and... and... Ling Tian!! Anyone would be envious to death of this man!!!!!!

Chapter 729 - Beg Me

Fey and the Demon God Group's arrival caused the Dark Night and Ling Tian City's leaders to feel excited for a long time.

"The visas and documentation for so many people will take some time to organise. When the time comes, you can announce it as you wish," Fey said casually when she was finally alone with Ling Chen.

"You want to come over in the real world as well?" Ling Chen asked in delight.

"Of course. Since we've decided to reunite, we should do it properly and not just in the game. Moreover, we want to come to China legally and properly," Fey said as she gave him an emphatic eyeroll. "Even though neither of us won our bet, you still won in the end... are you happy now you big demonic pervert?"

"Heheh," Ling Chen laughed, feeling very pleased. "No matter how domineering you are, you're still a woman. No matter how domineering a woman is, she's still destined to be dominated by a man. Submitting to me is what you should be doing..."

"You ass!" Fey was furious, and her hands grabbed Ling Chen's collar like a streak of lightning. She applied some force, immediately knocking him down to the ground. She moved her legs over and sat on Ling Chen's midsection before she savagely said as she narrowed her eyes, "To make it up to me, I want to always be on top in the future!"

"Fudge!" Ling Chen glared at her and flipped her over, pressing Fey's soft body on the ground. He grabbed at her large, soft breasts with his right hand and rubbed them as he lewdly smiled. "No way! As a man, I can give in to anything but that!"

A numb feeling spread from her chest, bringing a red glow to Fey's face. Her body also softened, but she did not give in at all.

She unreservedly kicked upwards with her right foot, knocking Ling Chen off of her, and she immediately sprang on him again. She grabbed out with her hands onto his vital area between his legs and said, “If you don’t let me be on top, I’ll crush them!”

“Hmph, you wouldn’t be willing... fudge! You’re actually squeezing hard! If I allow you to do this, what will you not dare to do? If I don’t make you beg for mercy today, I’m not a man!”

“Come at me! You think I would be afraid of you?”

A battle between Adam and Eve erupted. The battle began on the floor, then moved to the bed, then moved back to the floor. The sounds of pounding, spasming, moaning, and liquids shooting out could be heard, accompanied by a thicker and thicker smell.

A whole 3 hours later, the battle finally ended. Yola, who had been standing outside the door the entire time, fell to the ground, her legs pressed tightly together and her small hand vigorously pressing down on the wet patch on her dress.

Fey rested her head on the headboard, her red hair cascading down her shoulders and her large, snow-white chest heaving. The legendary Eve’s face was completely pink, her eyes hazy, and she gave off an enchanting air.

“You asked for it; don’t blame me.” Ling Chen was sitting in between Eve’s long legs. He stretched his neck as he spoke in a refreshed manner.

“A big demonic pervert like you would only use such demonic and perverted methods. You’re just as shameless and despicable as before,” Fey said in a soft and breathless voice while her eyes were half-closed. She could not remember how many times she had climaxed, and she only knew that she had been intoxicated by this demonic pervert pounding her time and time again, bringing her in and out of consciousness. The domineering front she had put up... had completely crumbled.

“I’m sure the only one who can mess around with you so long is me, right?” The defeated Fey smiled, giving off a bewitching air. “Refreshed?”

“Very refreshed!” Ling Chen replied as he grinned.

“As a reward, kiss me for a bit longer.” Fey closed her eyes as she parted her lips.

Ling Chen took Fey into his arms, his chest pressing against her large breasts, and he kissed her soft, moist lips. Fey wrapped an arm around Ling Chen’s neck, passionately returning the kiss. The 2 of their tongues continuously darted back and forth, exchanging their saliva. Ling Chen suddenly opened his eyes and let go of Fey as he hurriedly asked, “That’s right, Fey! How did you bring them over? Are you able to easily pass through the World Boundaries? And are you able to bring other people with you?”

For Ling Chen to suddenly ask such a thing while they were just getting intimate, Fey was infuriated and viciously kicked Ling Chen off the bed. The ‘bang’, as well as Ling Chen’s cry of shock, caused Yola, who had just stood up, to fall down again.

“Lachesis’ spatial power can be used to pass through World Boundaries.” Even though Ling Chen had coaxed her for a while, Fey was still quite angry. “After coming last time, we had to wait for a while before passing through the World Boundaries again. In order to bring them here as quickly as possible, I focused all of my efforts into awakening the Lachesis’ power. Now, the Lachesis is able to pass through World Boundaries with ease, and I can take 30 people each time. I brought Yola and the others in waves to Ling Tian City. What, do you need to pass through the World Boundary?”

She could pass through World Boundaries as she wished and even bring people with her?!

Ling Chen’s eyes immediately lit up... what he had been searching for had showed up right in front of him! He should have

realised last time that they had definitely passed through World Boundaries to get here! With Fey's Lachesis, why would he need to wait for a consumable World Boundary Scroll?

"Fey, I need you to help me with a little something using your Lachesis!" Ling Chen went over and held Fey's hand.

"A little something?" Fey turned to look at him, playing with her dishevelled hair as she said haughtily, "Since it's just a little something, the invincible Adam can go do it himself; why would you need to rely on a woman like me?"

"Alright, it's a big something."

"What do I get in return?" Fey grinned.

"... You can be on top next time..."

"Deal~~ what do you want to do?" Fey looked incredibly pleased, waving her Lachesis rings in front of Ling Chen.

"A place called the Moon God Island," Ling Chen truthfully replied. With Fey's help, the issue of passing through the World Boundary would be easily solved even though he had to pay a great~~~ price.

"Moon God Island?" Fey's expression became strange. "Why do you need to go there? That's the Moon God Clan's territory, and it is a place of utmost authority and holiness. It is also acknowledged to be the most dangerous place in the Mystic Moon world. Don't tell me you're desperate to get through the World Boundary because you want to have a change of scenery."

Ling Chen was not at all surprised that Fey knew about Moon God Island. Before he even knew about the Lachesis, she already knew a lot about the Lunar Scourge. Ling Chen nodded and said, "Of course it's for something very important. One of the Lunar Scourge's orbs is there, and it's a Saint Orb, so I have to go."

"So it's like that." Fey tapped her snow-white chin and thought for a moment before she slowly said, "The Moon God Island is

located at the centre of the Mystic Moon's ocean, and it is about 33,000 kilometres from the Forgotten Continent's boundary. Putting aside everything else, even if you travel in a straight line at full speed without stopping and do not meet any obstacles, it will still take you more than a month. Factoring in all sorts of problems, it's safe to say that it will take you roughly 3 to 4 months." She calmly looked at Ling Chen and said in amusement, "From what I understand about you, you're not such a patient person, right?"

In this world, Fey was definitely the person who understood Ling Chen the best. Anyone else who heard that he was going to such a dangerous place like the Moon God Island would definitely try to stop him because no matter how powerful Ling Chen was, he was not able to fight against the Moon God Clan. However, only Fey would not because she understood Ling Chen's personality, and she knew that he would become more excited the more 'impossible' a battle was.

"It's indeed quite a long time," Ling Chen helplessly waved. "I don't have any other choice though. You should know how hard it is to find equipment that increases Movement Speed."

"Beg me." Fey suddenly bewitchingly smiled and spread out 3 fingers. "I can let you get there in 3 hours."

"3 hours?! Are you serious?" Ling Chen's mouth widened in surprise.

"My Lachesis can control space; traversing 1,000 kilometres takes but an instant. What do you say? However, that's not the important thing... what's important is that you need to beg me! If you don't beg me, I won't be so kind-hearted as to take you there for free." Fey blinked her misty eyes, and her delighted smile looked so beautiful that it could topple a country.

Ling Chen had personally seen the Lachesis' power. It could completely shatter and traverse space, so travelling through a

World Boundary would be no problem. Moreover, Fey, this terrifying and proud woman, would never say something that she wasn't sure of.

What's more, just like him, this woman was incredibly stubborn. If he did not beg her, it would be impossible for her to help him.

Ling Chen's expression immediately became one of flattering as he gently rubbed her large breasts while pleading, "Alright, my little Fey Fey, please take me there."

Fey slapped Ling Chen's hands away and smiled as she replied, "Since when was there such a lewd way of begging? It's the first I've seen something like that. I seem to remember that I've taught you how to beg before, but it seems like you've forgotten. I'll help you remember then. First, call me 'My Great Wife'."

"No way!" Ling Chen righteously shook his head and refused. "Since you can't dominate me in bed, don't try to dominate me in terms of addressing each other! This has to do with a man's principles, and I definitely can't give in."

"Alright, looks like my Lachesis will have to rest for 3 or 4 months then." Fey played with her fingers then flicked her head back as she equipped all of her equipment, hiding her snow-white body.

"My Great Wife!" Ling Chen immediately yelled out the words that he had refused to say.

"Good boy." Fey smiled as she twisted her hips and jumped off the bed, and she said, "Let's go now then."

Chapter 730 - 'Sea Cat'

“Right now?” Ling Chen stared at her in surprise... this woman was so decisive that he almost didn't know how to react!

“What? Do you still need to make preparations?” Fey looked at him flirtatiously.

“Not really...” Ling Chen replied after thinking. The main thing was that he had thought that he would only be able to leave after a month, and he had forgotten about the Lachesis' spatial powers. This time for set-off was much earlier than he had anticipated. “Leaving now isn't too bad either. Let's go.”

As he spoke, Ling Chen also equipped his equipment and walked out of the room with Fey. Outside the door, Yola was standing there, looking incredibly embarrassed. Seeing them come out, she lowered her head as a redness quickly spread from her face to her neck. “Big sis, there's...”

“Little Yola, tell Saros and the others that I'm going to be leaving with Adam for a bit. It might take a long time, or it might be a short time. Even if we don't come back for half a month, don't worry about us, and don't go and do anything 'big'. Just familiarise yourselves with Ling Tian City and the Forgotten Continent,” Fey said.

“Okay, big sis, I'll go let them know immediately.” Yola hurriedly nodded, unable to raise her bright red face at all.

“That's right. Can you also help me tell Yun Meng Xin and the others that I'll be leaving for a while and tell the Dwarf Clan's Elder Dita that I won't need the World Boundary Scroll anymore.” Ling Chen smiled as he spoke to Yola. He didn't feel embarrassed at all seeing Yola like this because Yola peeping on the 'battles' between him and Fey had become a normal occurrence. It was just that it had been a long time since the last time. At the same time, the little Yola from before had grown up, and now knew how to be

shy.

“I... I got it.”

“Also,” Fey suddenly grabbed Yola’s little hand and whispered in her ear, “next time, we’ll let little Yola join in as well, so don’t run off...”

“Ahhh.... I-I-I’ll immediately go find Saros and the others...”

Yola covered her redder-than-red face as she rushed off.

Just like that, the journey to invade the Moon God Palace, something that others would spend 8 to 10 years preparing for, was decided upon by this man and woman in just a few short sentences, and they didn’t even tell the others beforehand. This was exactly how Adam and Eve had operated in the past.

“Will it really take just 3 hours?” Even though Ling Chen trusted Fey, he simply couldn’t help but ask.

“If it takes longer than 3 hours, I’ll always be on the bottom in the future!” Fey said grumpily.

“I see. Hmm...” Ling Chen nodded pensively.

Fey looked over and calmly asked, “Are you thinking about how to drag it out for longer than 3 hours?”

“Y... ah, no, no, no, of course not.” Ling Chen hurriedly shook his head, saying righteously, “How could such a pure and kind-hearted man like me have such shameless thoughts. I was just thinking that... hmm... err... the weather’s pretty good today.”

“Hmph!” Fey condescendingly rolled her eyes at him and grabbed his arm, saying, “We’re going now. It’s best that you close your eyes.”

Without waiting for Ling Chen’s response, Fey spread out her hand, and a blue light flashed as she and Ling Chen disappeared.

A strange feeling of travelling through space assaulted Ling Chen’s body, and the extreme speed that they travelled caused

Ling Chen to subconsciously close his eyes. When he opened them again, the strange feeling was gone, and Fey's voice sounded in his ears, "We're here."

"We're here already? Didn't you say it was 3 hours?" Ling Chen looked at Fey in surprise.

"We're at the Forgotten Continent's border!" Fey looked at Ling Chen as if he was an idiot and then sat down, cupping her cheeks with her hands as she looked ahead of her. "Looking at the sea peacefully like this isn't too bad."

Only now did Ling Chen realise that in front of him was an endless sea. Seabirds flew around them, and waves rolled onto the beach as the sound of the sea breeze resounded around them. Beneath their feet was a soft, warm sand.

Ling Chen immediately took out the map of the Forgotten Continent and found that they were at the Forgotten Continent's southern sea, about 200 kilometres to the south of the Lava Purgatory. This was the southernmost part of the Forgotten Continent.

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded... in just an instant, they had travelled from Ling Tian City to the Forgotten Continent's southernmost boundary. This sort of terrifying spatial ability was more than 10 times better than Spatial Orbs.

"After entering the Ocean Region and continuing on for 12 nautical miles, we'll reach the Forgotten Continent's World Boundary," Fey said as she looked ahead of her. The 12 nautical miles of sea around a continent belonged to that continent, and beyond that was the World Boundary.

"From Ling Tian City to this place, it is about 1,500 kilometres even when travelling in a straight line, and yet we reached this place in an instant. In that case, traversing 33,000 kilometres won't take 3 hours; only a mere while!" After think about that, Ling Chen became excited.

Fey once again looked at Ling Chen like he was an idiot as she said, “Think about it with your pig-brain. Do you really think I can continuously use this sort of long-distance spatial ability into unknown regions? Even if it’s the Lachesis, it has a cooldown!”

“How long?”

“5 minutes.”

“5 minutes... that doesn’t sound too long.” Based on the speed and distance they had travelled and the cooldown time, Ling Chen calculated that it would indeed take about 3 hours.

As Ling Chen was calculating, Fey looked ahead and said in a soft voice, “I say, do you think there’s a creature called a ‘sea cat’ in this world?”

“I’ve heard of things like sea lions and seagulls, but I’ve never heard about a sea cat.” Ling Chen looked at Fey strangely. “Where did that come from?”

Fey pointed ahead of them and said with narrowed eyes, “If there’s no such thing as a sea cat, what’s with that cat in the sea?”

“There’s a cat in the sea?” Ling Chen looked over and found a golden, fat body in the shallow area about 100 metres away from them. Its butt was twisting and turning, and it had a furry and thick tail. Its limbs were short and thick, and its paws were incredibly large. As its body twisted and turned, its face occasionally turned, and it was possible to see that it was indeed a cat’s face. Around its incredibly short neck was a big, golden bell.

At that moment, its 2 front paws were digging around in the sea water, creating many splashes. Evidently, it was looking for something in the sea water.

Even though its body shape was a bit ridiculous, from its face, it was definitely a cat.

However, Ling Chen did not believe that it was some ‘sea cat’ because it did not live in the sea... this was evidently the treasure

creature Lucky Cat that he had met many times!!

“It’s a Lucky Cat, a Lucky Cat!” Ling Chen covered his mouth, almost screaming out loud, his eyes widening as he spoke in a low voice.

“Lucky Cat?” Fey looked over at Ling Chen and said, “A cat can evoke such a great reaction from you? Looks like it’s not ordinary at all.”

“Of course it’s not ordinary; it’s a treasure creature!” Ling Chen gazed at the Lucky Cat, afraid that it was going to run away.

Just as he was going to explain to Fey what it was, she said in surprise, “Eh, your continent has these treasure creatures as well?”

“Hm? You’ve seen them before?”

“Of course.” Fey’s gaze towards the Lucky Cat became dubious as she made a gesture of interest with her hand. “In my continent, we also had a treasure creature, but it was not as cute as this fat cat. I caught it many times, and each time it handed over a piece of treasure. I thought that I wouldn’t be able to catch treasure creatures anymore after leaving that continent, but now it seems that I can continue with this hobby of mine.”

“You can catch treasure creatures? And you did it many times?” Ling Chen looked at Fey doubtfully, feeling quite glum... because even though he had met the Lucky Cat quite a few times, let alone catch it, he hadn’t been able to touch a single fur on its body.

“Of course. Oh? Could it be that the invincible Adam has never caught a mere treasure creature before?” Fey looked over while smiling.

“No way! It’s just a treasure creature; catching it is like child’s play! I’m already bored from catching it!” In front of women, and especially a woman like Fey, Ling Chen couldn’t afford to lose any face. He stood up with a ‘whoosh’. “I’ll go catch it now!”

After saying this, he walked neither too fast nor too slow towards

the Lucky Cat.

Qi Yue had said that the Lucky Cat had incredibly sharp senses, was incredibly cowardly, and would never allow any creature that could threaten it to come within 50 metres of it. However, Qi Yue had also said that after he was above LV50, catching the Lucky Cat would not be so difficult. This was because after he passed LV50, the range of Moon Shadow would increase above 50 metres, allowing him to fix it in place despite being further than 50 metres away. Now, he was LV70, meaning that he would be able to use Moon Shadow from 70 metres away.

Ling Chen came closer and closer, and soon, he was around 70 metres away. The Lunar Scourge on his right wrist shone with a mysterious silver light as he smiled delightedly. “Heheheh, Lucky Cat, let’s see how you get away this time!”

Chapter 731 - Catching The Lucky Cat

“Moon Shadow!”

Once Ling Chen was within 70 metres of the Lucky Cat, he released the light of Moon Shadow from the Lunar Scourge. Everything within 70 metres of him stopped moving – the waves completely froze in place, and the Lucky Cat also did not move anymore.

“See, catching this guy is as easy as taking candy from a baby,” Ling Chen said to Fey in a pleased manner as he picked up the Lucky Cat. This was the first time he had been so close to the Lucky Cat before, and he had to admit, this cat... was incredibly heavy!!

At that moment, he suddenly felt the Lunar Scourge slightly tremble. Ling Chen looked down and found that the Lunar Scourge’s 11 orbs were faintly glowing.

Ling Chen’s eyes widened... could it be...

Hearing Ling Chen’s words, and seeing how he had grabbed the Lucky Cat, Fey’s expression became strange. “Are you sure... you can catch treasure creatures like this? Is this how you caught them in the past?”

At that moment, Moon Shadow’s effects disappeared, and the Lucky Cat started to struggle within Ling Chen’s grasp, crying out ‘meows’ in fear and shock. Just as Ling Chen was about to reply, he felt the Lucky Cat disappear from within his arm, and it slammed into his body.

Just like that, the Lucky Cat vanished into thin air.

Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded, and he looked around. However, no matter where he looked, he could not see the Lucky Cat anywhere. He noticed that there was a small pile of golden coins by his feet, and after staring in surprise, he suddenly

remembered the Lucky Cat's [Money Escape] skill. He immediately cursed, "Fudge, Money Escape!"

[Author's Note: [Money Escape]: Throws out 100 gold coins and uses Nature energy to teleport to another place in the Forgotten Continent. However, because the Lucky Cat views money to be as important as its own life, it will not spend the 'heavy price' of 100 gold coins to run away unless it is in great danger.]

"Pfft... hahahaha..." Fey could not hold it anymore and started to laugh loudly, her full chest bouncing up and down. If it was before, he would have savagely glared at her and might have even pounced at her. However, at this moment, he was in no mood for that, and he felt quite depressed.

"From how you 'caught' it, I thought the treasure creatures in your continent didn't know how to teleport. So it was... hehehehe, my dear Adam, did you really think you could catch that treasure creature like this? Treasure creatures are creatures of Nature, and they all have lived for tens of thousands of years. If they were so easy to catch, they would have become someone's dinner tens of thousands of years ago."

It was rare to see Ling Chen fail so miserably and seem so depressed afterwards, so Fey definitely would not let this rare opportunity go, mocking him in all sorts of ways. After a while, she finally stopped laughing. Her expression became earnest as she looked at Ling Chen and said, "However, it's only a treasure creature, so why are you so upset over it?"

Fey understood Ling Chen too well. No matter what sort of emotions he was experiencing, she was able to tell at a glance. Ling Chen frowned and said, "No! I have to catch it!"

"Oh?" Fey raised her eyebrows. "Even though you haven't been able to catch it before, you must have met it a few times... did you discover something when you touched it?"

"That's right!" Ling Chen nodded and raised his right wrist as he

said, “Just then, when I was holding the Lucky Cat, the Lunar Scourge reacted. In other words, there’s a Lunar Scourge orb on it! It’s something that I must obtain no matter what!”

“So it’s like that.” Fey’s expression also became serious. She raised an eyebrow as she smiled. “I’ll help you catch it then.”

“You have a way to catch it?” Ling Chen asked in surprise. He knew exactly how difficult it was to catch – putting aside its ridiculous Movement Speed, its teleportation made it almost impossible to catch!

Fey’s bewitching smile grew wider as she said casually, “It’s just simple teleportation; it’s nothing in front of the Lachesis’ spatial power. As long as I use Lachesis to follow its trail through space, catching it will be as easy as flipping over my palm. After I caught my continent’s treasure creature 7 or 8 times, when it saw me, it simply obediently handed over a piece of treasure.”

“That’s amazing!” Ling Chen was dumbfounded. “Hurry up and catch it for me then! What will you do if you wait too long and its trail disappears?”

“Beg me.” Fey’s eyes narrowed as she smiled. “If you don’t beg me, why would I be so kind as to catch it for you?”

“Fudge!” Ling Chen cursed.

“Hmm? What did you say?”

“I said... I said... my most beloved, greatest little Fey Fey; my gentlest, kindest, most intelligent, and greatest wife, you’ll definitely help me catch that Lucky Cat, right?” Ling Chen was almost pressed up against Fey, and his forehead was covered with sweat... ohmygoodness, after saying all those things that he did not mean at all, he was worried that he would be struck by lightning!

Fey’s eyes almost narrowed into slits as she smiled. She stretched out a white finger and stroked Ling Chen’s forehead as she said in a soft voice, “My little Adam, if you’re always so meek and obedient,

your great wife will always treat you well.”

After saying this, Fey laughed as a blue light flashed on her hand, and she disappeared.

“Fudge! That arrogant woman!” Ling Chen immediately straightened up as he roared, “Next time, I’ll screw you so hard that you won’t be able to get off the bed for 3 days. Then, we’ll see who’s the boss of who... eh... s-so fast?!”

Before Ling Chen’s words had died out, Fey’s seductive body had reappeared before him. She gave him a beautiful but dangerous smile. “Alright, I heard that... if you don’t screw me so that I can’t get off the bed for 3 days next time, I’ll be the boss in future.”

“Ah... err... this... did I say something? You must have heard incorrectly. Mm, you definitely heard incorrectly! How could I say something like that?” Ling Chen frowned as he spoke in a serious manner.

“Hmph!” Fey glared at him as she said, “After a few years, your skills in bed haven’t improved by much, but your skin is 250 times thicker than before. However, since I’m your ‘Great Wife’, I won’t bicker with you. Here, your big fat cat.”

After saying this, Fey flicked out a finger, and the blue ring on her index finger glowed. The space in front of Ling Chen twisted as a golden fat cat suddenly appeared in the air. It fell on its bottom, its 2 paws desperately hiding its face... from the way it seemed, it was trying to cover its head, but because its arms were not long enough, it gave pitiful ‘meows’.

“Lucky Cat!” Ling Chen felt delighted. “You really caught it? How did it appear just then?”

Fey waved her hand and casually said, “I tracked it first, sealed the space around it, and then teleported it back. Just like that.” She then added, “Even though it seems like it’s freely sitting there, the space around it has been completely sealed by me. Unless I

unseal it, it will be impossible for it to run or teleport.”

Without Fey having to explain it, Ling Chen had already guessed that this was the case. Otherwise, how could this incredibly cowardly cat that had unparalleled escaping abilities obediently sit there?

Honestly speaking, without Fey, even if Ling Chen could move 10 times as fast and Moon Shadow's range was 10 times as big, he would still not be able to truly catch the Lucky Cat. This was because even if he grabbed it, it would be able to escape with a [Money Escape]... it would be more likely for him to instantly kill the Lucky Cat.

Ling Chen squatted down in front of the Lucky Cat and rubbed his hands as he chuckled, saying, “Lucky Cat, you can't run away this time. I still haven't dealt with you for stealing all of my money last time.”

This Lucky Cat most likely had never been caught before. When Ling Chen spoke to it at such a close distance, it was so scared that all of its fur stood on end, and its fat body desperately retreated as far as it could within the enclosed space. After being stared at with Ling Chen's terrifying gaze, it finally thought of something and moved its paws to its bell.

“Treasure creatures all have their own spatial items, and they normally keep their treasures within those spatial items,” Fey said as she looked at the Lucky Cat's actions. “Its bell should be its spatial item. When a treasure creature is caught and can't escape, it will take out money or treasure and give it to the person who caught it to buy its freedom.”

“Ohh!” Ling Chen nodded, his gaze fixed on the Lucky Cat's paws. Even though he had asked Fey to catch the Lucky Cat for the Lunar Scourge orb on its body, as a treasure creature, it definitely had countless items. Anything it took out would definitely be quite extraordinary, so Ling Chen waited with great anticipation.

The Lucky Cat's paws trembled for a while as if it was making a very difficult decision. After a while, it finally moved its paws away and stretched them out to Ling Chen... even though it had the face of a cat, Ling Chen was shocked to see that it had a devastated and heartbroken look on its face.

Goddamn, just what had it taken out for this big fat cat to be so sad.

The Lucky Cat slowly opened its paw, and within it, a single gold coin glittered, almost blinding Ling Chen's eyes.

Ling Chen almost fell right onto the Lucky Cat's big stomach.

Fudge!!

A single gold coin!!

Was it taking him for a beggar?!

Chapter 732 - The Incredibly Trash Aries Orb (1)

If it wasn't for the fact that the Lucky Cat had been sealed in place, Ling Chen really would have kicked it into the sea in anger.

Seeing that the Lucky Cat was treating him like a beggar, Ling Chen felt incredibly furious, and he roared at the Lucky Cat, "A single gold coin? Do you think I'm begging for money? You took more than 1 million gold from me last time! And now, you want to get rid of me with a single gold coin? If you don't take out a decent treasure, don't ever think of escaping!!"

"Hoh!" Fey laughed. "The high and mighty Adam actually got angry at a cat. This is quite the show!"

"Cheh," Ling Chen pouted. "Try catching an incredibly rich tycoon someday and experiencing the feeling of him giving you a single coin to release him..."

Fey shrugged and continued to grin. "I should remind you that based on my experience catching treasure creatures in the past, they will only give you 1 piece of treasure every time you catch them. At the very least, the ones I've caught have never handed over a second piece of treasure. No matter how long I trapped it for, it would never hand over another piece of treasure. Perhaps this is a principle they hold on to. If you want to get the Lunar Scourge's orb from it, you should be more direct."

"I see," Ling Chen replied. In actuality, he had been wondering how to obtain more than 1 piece of treasure from the Lucky Cat. However, after hearing that from Fey, he realised that he had been too greedy. Seeing how miserly this Lucky Cat was, it seemed that it would not hand over an extra piece of treasure even if he chopped it up.

The 11 orbs on Ling Chen's right wrist were all glowing with a

faint light, reacting to an orb nearby. Even though Ling Chen had seen the Lucky Cat many times, he had never been able to get close to it, so he had never detected that it had an orb on it. After thinking about Fey's words, Ling Chen started to think. He took the Libra Orb off the Lunar Scourge and waved it in front of the Lucky Cat and said fiercely, "I know you have an orb that looks like this! Do you want your freedom back? Hand over this orb, and I'll let you go. Otherwise, heheh... now that I think about it, I've never tasted cat meat before."

Facing the demon-god-like Ling Chen, the incredibly timid Lucky Cat started to tremble. It desperately leaned back, its short arms trying to protect the golden bell in front of its chest... it did not forget to take back the gold coin that Ling Chen had rejected.

Ling Chen was completely certain that it had the Lunar Scourge's Orb in it – the Lunar Scourge's reaction was proof of that.

However, even though the Lucky Cat looked incredibly scared and stared at the Libra Orb in Ling Chen's hands, after a long time, it still did not take out the orb.

Ling Chen's frown became deeper, and he became completely furious, scaring even Fey who had walked over. "Hurry up and hand over the orb that you have! Otherwise, I won't show you any more mercy!"

"Meow... meow meow meow meow!!" The Lucky Cat gripped the bell in front of its chest, its fat body shrinking into a ball. However, it still did not take anything out.

"ARGHHHHHHH!!!" The Lucky Cat's stubbornness completely enraged Ling Chen, making him want to tear that fat cat apart. After watching for a while, Fey couldn't hold it anymore and started to laugh loudly, "Hahaha... my little Adam, have you really~ really~ caught this treasure creature before? You don't seem very familiar with it."

Ling Chen became speechless, his face, which had skin as thick as

a city wall, became incredibly red. Because he had claimed that he had caught it many times before, he had been unendingly teased by Fey. It seemed that he really couldn't lie rashly in front of this woman!

“Even if you cook it into a cat dish, it still won't give you what you want. My little Adam, go play with your little thing, and watch how your gentle, intelligent, and great wife deals with this,”

Fey slowly said while pushing Ling Chen aside. She came in front of the Lucky Cat, her expression becoming incredibly gentle and kind. Even her gaze became like pure autumn water, making Ling Chen feel completely dumbfounded... this woman was showing such a gentle expression to the big fat cat... what?! This demonic woman, who could kill people without blinking, could reveal such a gentle expression? This was impossible!

“Cute little kitty, sorry for scaring you,” Fey gently smiled. Her first word almost caused Ling Chen to spit saliva out of his mouth. Was this gentle and sweet voice really coming from this woman?

He was hallucinating! He was definitely hallucinating!

“Don't worry, with me here, that bad person won't dare to harm you anymore.” Fey's hand passed through the spatial barrier and gently stroked the Lucky Cat's head. Under her gentle coaxing, the Lucky Cat's body began to relax, and the fear in its eyes started to recede.

Beside them, the 'bad person' Ling Chen's face twitched.

“Mm, don't be afraid; no one will hurt you.” Fey said softly as she stroked the Lucky Cat's fur while smiling. The Lucky Cat's fear gradually disappeared, and it started to close its eyes, making it look like it was greatly enjoying the petting. In fact, it even moved its body closer towards Fey's hand.

“Hehe, you're such a cutie.” Fey's smile and voice became warmer, making Ling Chen feel completely dumbfounded. He

simply couldn't believe that this was the demonic woman who he had known for more than 10 years. After being comforted and stroked for a long time, not only did the Lucky Cat's fear disappear, but it also even started acting close to Fey. Fey smiled and said, "So, little kitty, do you have that thing that the bad person wanted? If you have it, can you give it to me? As long as you give it to me, you'll regain your freedom, and you'll be able to go wherever you want to go."

Ling Chen, who felt completely deflated after trying to deal with the Lucky Cat, thought that Fey's words would cause the Lucky Cat to become fearful and distrusting again. However, what happened next caused his jaw to drop... the Lucky Cat's paws reached towards its bell with a 'whoosh', took out a moon-white orb, and took the initiative to give it to Fey. When doing this, it did not look reluctant at all, and it even wagged its tail.

Ling Chen's mouth hung wide open, and if he was wearing glasses, they would have fallen to the ground.

"You're such a good kitty." After receiving the orb, Fey's eyes narrowed as she smiled, and she gently patted the Lucky Cat's head. A blue light flashed as the spatial barrier around the Lucky Cat was dispelled. "Alright, cute little kitty, you're free now, and you can go wherever you want. In the future, you must be careful so that you're not caught by this bad person again."

The Lucky Cat tried moving its body, and after confirming that it could move again, its fur trembled with excitement. Before leaving, it looked at Fey reluctantly before disappearing with a 'whoosh'.

Fey turned around, her slim fingers playing with the Lunar Scourge's Orb. "Treasure creatures are creatures of Nature, and they love good and hate evil. A creature birthed by Nature would never hand over treasure to evil people because that would be a type of sin to it. However, if it's a good person, that's different. As such, if you try to scare it or threaten it, it will recognise you as an

evildoer, so giving you a single gold coin would already be pretty good. As for your great wife, not only am I incredibly beautiful, but I'm also incredibly gentle as well. As such, it was more than happy to give me a piece of treasure for its freedom.”

“Why... Why didn't you say so earlier?!” Ling Chen's face twitched. I've never interacted with a treasure creature before; how could I know this!?

“Aiyaya, who was it that said that they've caught treasure creatures many times before? I thought that you already knew all of this common knowledge.”

Ling Chen: “@#%...”

“Do you want this orb?” Fey waved the Lunar Scourge's Orb in front of Ling Chen while enchantingly smiling.

“I do,” Ling Chen numbly replied. He knew that he would have to agree to an incredibly unfair deal to receive the orb.

“I want to be on top for the next, next time as well. Any objections?” Fey batted her eyes as she smiled.

“None.” In order to obtain the Lunar Scourge's Orb, Ling Chen fought back tears as he agreed to the humiliating and unfair deal.

“Such a good boy! If you're obedient, your great wife will make you feel awesome when she's on top,” Fey said as she gave a smile that could steal souls. She tossed the orb to Ling Chen. “Since you're so good, I'll give you this orb to play with.”

Ling Chen extended his arm and caught the orb. The instant it landed in his hand, he confirmed that it was indeed the Lunar Scourge's Orb. Not only was the light that it gave off the same, but its size, weight and texture were also exactly the same as the other 11 orbs!

With the orb in hand, Ling Chen became so excited that he forgot about the 'difficulties' he had faced to obtain it. This orb was not something he had obtained through Su'Er's Heaven's Secrets

power but something that he had completely obtained by chance! He had never thought that one of the orbs would be on the Lucky Cat that he had seen so many times. Even though he was incredibly annoyed at Fey for being so pleased to the point that he wanted to immediately strip her down and teach her a lesson, he had to admit that he would never have been able to obtain this orb or even known that it was on the Lucky Cat if it wasn't for Fey.

Chapter 733 - The Incredibly Trash Aries Orb (2)

Currently, Ling Chen had 11 of the 12 Mysterious God grade Orbs and none of the 3 Saint Destroyer grade Orbs – he only knew that one of them was in the Moon God Palace. Ling Chen gripped his new Orb, excitedly wondering whether it was the final Mysterious God grade Orb or... one of the 3 Saint Destroyer grade Orbs!!

Ling Chen lightly breathed in, opened his hand, and looked at the Orb's description:

[Aries Orb]: Grade: Mysterious God, Attributes: Light, Equipment Requirements: Can only be socketed in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: Nullifies all consumption costs and negative effects from skills.

After looking at the Aries Orb's effects, Ling Chen's gaze and expression froze. After a while, his eyes widened, and he looked at the Aries Orb's effects a second, third, fourth time...

No matter how many times he looked at it, the Aries Orb's description remained the same: Nullifies all consumption costs and negative effects from skills.

That's right, this was one of the Lunar Scourge's orbs, and it was the final Mysterious God grade Orb. Now, all 12 orbs of the Zodiac have been gathered by Ling Chen. He had retrieved all 12 of them within a single year, much sooner than Qi Yue had said it would take – this was simply a miracle. Normally, Ling Chen would be cheering right now, but after looking at the Aries Orb's effects, Ling Chen's expression froze, unable to smile.

This was because the Aries Orb's effects... were simply too trash!

Qi Yue had told him before that the Aries Orb was the weakest of the 12 Mysterious God grade orbs under normal circumstances. Only when the Lunar Scourge's master became a Shura would its effects become truly powerful. However, when Ling Chen had

heard those words, he had not paid them much mind because all of the effects of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs had completely shocked and surprised him every time. Each time he had obtained one and socketed it into the Lunar Scourge, his overall strength had greatly increased. This was so for every Orb he had obtained so far, and the Libra Orb's effects could be said to have surpassed the limits of Mysterious God grade. As such, even though Qi Yue had told him that the Aries Orb was the weakest orb, Ling Chen believed that it wouldn't be too weak as one of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs. At the very least, it would be worthy of being socketed into the Lunar Scourge and being called Mysterious God grade. At the very least, its stats would be lower than the others or the effects would be a bit less useful.

However, after seeing the Aries Orb, Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded. This sort of stat could be counted to be Mysterious God grade? This sort of stat deserved to be on one of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs?

Nullifies all consumption costs and negative effects from skills.... This stat wasn't just weak but absolutely trash! In fact, in terms of stats, it was inferior even to the Super Speed Crystal that gave an extra 15% Movement Speed!

This skill's effects were quite easy to understand: sometimes when using powerful skills, there were MP costs or other costs, such as an HP decrease or a temporary or permanent decrease in stats. Ling Chen had 3 of these skills in total: [Soul Sacrifice], which reduced his HP to 1, [War God's Fury], which lowered his Defence, Evasion, and Maximum HP by 50%, and the Lunar Scourge's [Moon Sacrifice], which reduced his HP by 1 each time.

There were also some skills that had negative effects on the caster after taking effect on the enemy or when failing to use a skill. A classic example was the [Shura's Death Domain], which permanently reduced Ling Chen's level and stats. There was also the [Soulstealing Curse] and [Soukilling Curse], which would

cause him to suffer a backlash and a permanent decrease in his Comprehension if he failed.

In other words, this Aries Orb would only be useful to a few of Ling Chen's skills: his HP would not decrease after using [Soul Sacrifice], his stats would not decrease after using [War God's Fury], he would not lose 1 HP after using [Moon Sacrifice], and he would not suffer a backlash or a decrease to Comprehension if he failed at using the [Soulstealing Curse] or [Soukilling Curse].

However, with Ling Chen's abilities, any enemy that could force Ling Chen to use [Soul Sacrifice] and [War God's Fury], 2 incredibly powerful skills, would have to be at least Heaven's End grade. Against such an enemy, they would be able to casually insta-kill him – there was no difference between being at 1 HP or max HP. As for Defence and Evasion, those did not matter at all either.

As for the 1 HP that was required to activate [Moon Sacrifice]... now that Ling Chen had nearly 130,000 HP, what difference did that 1 HP make to him?

Furthermore, Ling Chen could only use the [Soulstealing Curse] and [Soukilling Curse] a limited number of times. Let alone the low chances of him failing, why the hell would he use such precious skills on targets he wasn't sure that they would succeed on?

All in all, to the current Ling Chen, the Aries Orb's effects were... completely... useless!!

After seeing these stats, Ling Chen felt as if a bucket of cold water had been poured on him, completely extinguishing any excitement he felt.

In fact, Ling Chen began to wonder whether this was a well-made imitation product! With this sort of effect, was it qualified to be the Lunar Scourge's Orb?

“What? You're so excited that you've forgotten how to smile?

Or... were we swindled by that big fat cat and given a fake item” Seeing Ling Chen’s stiff and twitching face, Fey raised her eyebrows in curiosity.

Ling Chen moved his gaze away from the Aries Orb, unable to continue looking at it, as he said sorrowfully, “It’s indeed the Lunar Scourge’s Orb, but its effects weren’t what I expected.”

In fact, it was completely different to what he had expected. However, no matter how trash it was, it was still one of the Lunar Scourge’s orbs. Ling Chen took out the final crystal within the Lunar Scourge – the Super Speed Crystal. Before, whenever he replaced a normal crystal with one of the Lunar Scourge’s orb, he felt incredibly excited because each of the previous orbs had shocking effects. However, when he replaced the Super Speed Crystal with the Aries Orb, he felt an immense pain within his heart. The Super Speed Crystal gave him an extra 15% Movement Speed, while the Aries Orb was completely useless to him!

If it wasn’t for the fact that he wanted another Lunar Scourge skill, he definitely wouldn’t have done this.

“Ding... the [Aries Orb] has been successfully socketed into the Lunar Scourge. All consumption and negative effects from skills will be nullified.”

“Ding... the Lunar Scourge’s unique lunar skill [Eternal Moon Flare] has been unlocked.”

“Ding... all 12 God Orbs have been socketed into the Lunar Scourge. Lunar scourge’s unique lunar skill [New Moon] has been upgraded into [Crescent Moon].”

“Ding... all 12 God Orbs have been socketed into the Lunar Scourge; ultimate destructive skill [God-Killing Moon] has been unlocked.”

Although the Aries Orb’s effects were so trash that Ling Chen didn’t want to look at them, socketing it meant that all 12 God Orbs

had been retrieved, causing 3 new lunar skills to be unlocked. This lessened the disappointment Ling Chen felt towards the Aries Orb, and he looked at the 3 new skills:

[Crescent Moon]: Lunar Scourge's exclusive lunar soul skill. When activated, the Lunar Scourge's lunar energy forms a crescent moon in the sky, giving off a mysterious moonlight. Can be activated at any time and cancelled at any time. Can be cast for a maximum of 20 minutes per day. No MP cost.

With 6 God Orbs, [New Moon] had been unlocked, and with 12 God Orbs, [Crescent Moon] had been unlocked. In that case, each of the Saint Orbs will unlock [Half Moon], [Waxing Moon], and [Full Moon]. With [Crescent Moon] unlocked, not only will the lunar skills' power and range increase, but the amount of time that the moon can last for will also be doubled.

[Eternal Moon Flare]: Instantly turns a pure and gentle moonlight into a berserk and piercing light of judgment. Mercilessly destroys all targets' vision and sends them into an eternal nightmare of light.

Effects: A super long-range dazzling skill, and its maximum range is determined by the form of the [Moon]. Cannot be used with no [Moon], [New Moon], or [Crescent Moon]. Maximum range is 3,000 metres with [Half Moon], 10,000 metres with [Waxing Moon], 30,000 metres with [Full Moon], and 600,000,000 metres with [Broken Moon]. Once activated, the light of judgment will cause all targets to lose their vision forever. Cooldown time: 1 month.

“Lose their vision... forever?”

Even though Ling Chen expected the newly unlocked [Eternal Moon Flare] to be as savage as the [Eternal Moon Shadow], after reading its effects, Ling Chen was still deeply shocked. Even though [Eternal Moon Shadow]'s effects were incredibly domineering, they were not truly 'eternal'. Once the [Moon] disappeared, all targets would be unfrozen. However, [Eternal

Moon Flare] was different – its effects were truly eternal... once casted, all targets within the range would permanently lose their vision! What's more, it ignored any resistance to being Blinded!

Just how terrifying was this ability?

Despite having such a terrifying effect and range, its cooldown time was only 1 month!

However, it was disappointing to note that [Eternal Moon Flare] required at least [Half Moon] to be used just like [Eternal Moon Shadow]. Currently, the Lunar Scourge could only create a [Crescent Moon]. In other words, Ling Chen would only be able to use [Eternal Moon Shadow] and [Eternal Moon Flare] after he had retrieved a Saint Orb and unlocked [Half Moon].

Ling Chen's gaze fell on the Lunar Scourge's third skill, and his heart started to race... within the system announcement, the [God-Killing Moon] had been described as an ultimate destructive skill.

This undeniably meant that this was the Lunar Scourge's most powerful skill! It was a skill even more powerful than [Moon Sacrifice] and [Eternal Moon Shadow]! How could Ling Chen not feel excited after hearing such a thing? Moreover, Ling Chen was delighted to hear that the Lunar Scourge's ultimate skill could be unlocked even despite not having any of the Saint Orbs.

[God-Killing Moon]: The Lunar Scourge's ultimate destructive skill. Condenses heaven's power, gathers moonlight, causes demons to weep, slays gods, and destroys buddhas. Requires the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] to activate. Attack Damage: ??? (Unable to be determined), range: ??? (Unable to be determined). Can only be used with [Full Moon] and [Broken Moon]. After using this skill, the [Moon] will immediately disappear, and the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] will not be able to be used for 3 months (cannot be nullified by the Aries Orb's effects). Cooldown time: 1500 years (cannot be refreshed by the Libra Orb's effects).

Chapter 734 - Reaching The Moon God Island

The [God-Killing Moon]’s stats caused Ling Chen to feel quite dumbfounded. This was the first time that he had encountered a skill that had a damage and range that were ‘unable to be determined’.

Even the system was unable to determine the damage and range – was it because this skill had never been used before, or... was it too powerful that it exceeded what the system could determine?

Ling Chen had no way of knowing the correct answer. Right now, he wanted to yell at the Lunar Scourge: Why the hell would you unlock it if I can’t even use it right now? Don’t you know that seeing something that you can’t use feels horrible?!

“Done?” Fey’s voice sounded out, and Ling Chen nodded. “I’m done now.”

“In that case, let’s set off then. My Lachesis’ cooldown has pretty much reset.” Fey looked towards the ocean, her sharp eyes pointing south as if she was locking on to the World Boundary 12 nautical miles away. She did not ask at all about the Lunar Scourge Orb or the Lunar Scourge’s new skills, and it was as if she was not interested in them at all.

“I’ll say it again... you’d best close your eyes.” After saying this, Fey grabbed Ling Chen’s arm and they disappeared.

When they reappeared, both of them were above the ocean. Ling Chen was naturally ready, and as soon as he felt the space around him change, he activated the Feng Chen Technique, allowing him to steadily stand in the air.

“Ahead is the Forgotten Continent’s World Boundary,” Fey said as she looked ahead.

The World Boundary was transparent, and it was impossible to

see it with the naked eye. Ling Chen stared for a while, but he was unable to find it at all, so he stretched out his hand. About half a metre in front of him, his hand came into contact with a solid and cold barrier. He turned and asked, “How long will it take to break through it with the Lachesis?”

“Break through it?” Fey rolled her eyes in amusement. “The World Boundaries in each continent were created by the 3 Moon Goddesses; how could they be so easy to break through? However, creating a temporary gap is incredibly easy.”

After saying this, Fey pointed with a finger as the blue Lachesis ring shone with a blue light. Instantly, a 3 metre tall and 3 metre wide ripple appeared. A second after the ripples in space appeared, they disappeared. Fey grabbed Ling Chen and rushed forwards. “Let’s go!”

With a gap in the World Boundary, the World Boundary was unable to stop Fey from moving through space. This time, they travelled another 1,500 kilometres.

Moving short distances or to places where she had been before required very little spatial energy, so Fey could do many of these in a row. However, moving long distances to places that she had never travelled to before consumed a massive amount of spatial energy each time. After travelling through space each time, Fey rested for 5 minutes before moving again.

Even so, being able to travel 1,500 kilometres instantly each time, travelling 33,000 kilometres would not take too long. Even though Fey had never been to the Moon God Island before, she knew exactly where it was – at the very least, she wasn’t like Ling Chen, who only knew its general location. This was because her adoptive father, the Sea Emperor Helos, told her about the Moon God Island in depth before.

After 2 hours, Fey had moved with Ling Chen 20 or so times, and an island surrounded by a mysterious white fog appeared before

them.

“Is that island... the Moon God Island?” Ling Chen wondered out loud while looking at the island. Strangely, the island gave off a different feeling compared to all of the other islands. After travelling 20 or so times, they should be fairly close.

“Surrounded by white fog and in the shape of a full moon. That’s right, it should be this island. We’re about 7 nautical miles away from it,” Fey said as she gave a pleased smile. “See, it didn’t even take 3 hours, right?”

“Mm, this is quite incredible.” Ling Chen couldn’t help but give her the admiration she deserved. Putting aside the World Boundary, just traversing these 33,000 kilometres would have taken him at least 3 months. Ling Chen looked ahead at the Moon God Island as he said, “Now, let’s move to the boundary of the island. I’m sure that there aren’t people guarding the boundaries all the time.”

“Oh? Where’s this confidence coming from?” Fey asked as she gave Ling Chen a side-glance.

“The Moon God Clan is too big,” Ling Chen replied in a serious tone. “The Chief of the Novice Village I was in said that there was a clan that could threaten the Moon God Clan called the Night Demon Clan long ago. This clan used to belong to the Moon God Clan, but because of some disagreements, they separated from the Moon God Clan and even became enemies with them. They even called themselves the ‘Night Demon’ Clan, which is in direct opposition to the ‘Moon God’ Clan. The disagreement was over the Lunar Scourge – as for what it was specifically, no one knows. After coming to the Forgotten Continent, I had never heard about the Night Demon Clan, but after hearing some information here and there, I heard that the Night Demon Clan was vanquished by the Moon God Clan and that the remainder hides in darkness. Even this clan’s name has almost been forgotten, let alone become a threat to the Moon God Clan.

“After the Night Demon Clan was vanquished, there was no longer anything in the world that could threaten the Moon God Clan. The Underworld King is not weaker than any of the 3 Moon Goddesses, but the Underworld’s overall strength is far weaker than the Moon God Clan’s. Furthermore, the Underworld and the Moon God Clan have never had any conflict before, so I’m sure that they would not fear anyone intruding into their territory as the strongest power in the Mystic Moon world. Furthermore, I’m sure that after the Night Demon Clan was destroyed, there’s no longer anyone who would dare to step onto the Moon God Island. Because of how powerful they are, they’ve definitely grown complacent. Adding on the powerful barrier outside of the Moon God Palace, even if someone stepped onto the Moon God Island, they would be locked outside. As such, no matter if it’s the Moon God Island or the region outside the Moon God Palace, I’m sure that there are only a few Moon Ladies or Moon God Representatives stationed there and that they’ve all let down their guards. All of this is quite favourable to us.”

“What you said is quite true. However, you should know that the Moon God Clan’s absolute confidence comes from their absolute power,” Fey said seriously. “With their strength, even if they’re not fully alert, their awareness is still superior to that of a normal human’s. With our concealment abilities, we might be able to slip by normal Moon Ladies, but once we go near Moon God Representatives, we might be discovered if we aren’t careful... if it’s the 3 Moon Goddesses Fate, Order, or Freedom, our concealment will be completely useless.”

“Regardless, let’s go on the island first. If we’re lucky, the 3 Moon Goddesses might not even be home,” Ling Chen said, although he knew that this was incredibly naïve thinking.

“Let’s slowly fly over,” Fey said earnestly. “After travelling so far, the Lachesis is almost completely out of spatial energy. Before reaching the Moon God Island, I want it to completely recover.

Otherwise, we won't even be able to escape if something happens.”

“Hm? You're coming with me?” Ling Chen looked at Fey with surprise. He thought that Fey was only taking him to the Moon God Island and would leave afterwards. However, she seemed to intend to enter the Moon God Palace with him.

“What do you think?” Fey's eyebrows curved as she smiled. “After all, I'm your gentle, considerate, intelligent, and great wife. Of course I need to take responsibility for your safety. Come to think of it, did you really think that you'd be able to succeed by yourself? This isn't some amusement park; this is the Moon God Palace!”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“Your Lunar Scourge is a weapon of destruction, and most of its abilities boost your attacks in some way or other. With it, it's not too difficult for you to kill Celestial grade or Heaven's End grade beings. However, how could you not know about the Moon God Clan? Even if you're 10 times as strong, facing off against them would be impossible. However, my Lachesis is different. Its main ability lies in 'control', and it will be able to help us avoid confrontations with the Moon God Clan.” Fey paused as her eyes flashed with a bewitching light. “If you're sure that the orb is in the First Shrine and you're sure that you can find it, the chances of success will be about 50% if I'm with you with the Lachesis!”

“50%... eh? 50%?!” Ling Chen was dumbfounded. He grabbed Fey's arm as he asked with wide eyes, “Are you sure?”

Honestly speaking, Ling Chen's expectations towards his chances of successfully retrieving the orb... was less than 1%! And now, Fey had confidently said that their chances were 50%! With Fey's personality, the likelihood was actually about 80% for her to say 50%!

Fey smiled as she calmly replied, “Have you forgotten already? Not only can my Lachesis control space, but it can also even

control time in a large range. As long as you can locate where the orb is and I control the time within that area, I'll be able to freeze everything for 15 minutes. With time frozen, no one will be able to stop you." Fey looked at him enchantingly and said in a soft voice, "Don't tell me 15 minutes isn't enough?"

"It's enough! Definitely, definitely, definitely enough!" Ling Chen rapidly nodded, his eyes shining like lightbulbs. No wonder why Fey had come with him when he had said that he wanted to go to the Moon God Palace. To her, such a heaven-defying thing was a piece of cake! No one could resist time being stopped – as such, as long as they could find the First Shrine, let alone 50%... the chances of success would be 100%!

This demonic woman who he loved, feared, and hated suddenly seemed incredibly cute to him. In the end, Eve was Eve – even though she was a demoness who made him feel incredible fear, was incredibly reliable in key moments!

The 2 of them did not use the Lachesis' spatial energy to travel through space, and they instead took their time approaching the Moon God Island. In the end, it took them nearly an hour to travel the 7 nautical miles.

Soon, they stepped down onto the Moon God Island. Just as Ling Chen had expected, there was no one in sight. All they could see was a grand palace-city in the middle of the island.

Chapter 735 - Entering The Moon God Palace

The instant Ling Chen stepped onto the Moon God Island, he felt as if he had entered a heavenly realm. The entire island was covered by a mysterious fog, and most of the fog was on the ground, making one feel as if he or she was walking on clouds. The air here was incredibly pure and pristine, and there was an incredibly dense aura of Nature within the air to the point that it was many times denser than the Nature energy in the Forgotten Continent.

At a glance, Ling Chen's field of vision was filled with all sorts of fantastic flowers and trees, and many of the plants looked like beautiful jewellery, flashing with unbelievable colours. Ling Chen was certain that he had never breathed such pure air before or ever seen such moving scenery before. What's more, all of this was completely natural, and it was not decorated at all. Even though it was within the Mystic Moon world, it seemed as if it was a separate heaven. Here, one could see beautiful sceneries that were impossible to see on the Forgotten Continent.

In the real world, the Bamboo Sea Wonderland where Ling Chen was staying was definitely one of the most heavenly places in all of China, but it was nothing compared to this place.

"It certainly lives up to its reputation," Fey said as she looked around with sparkling eyes. "As the Moon God Clan's territory, this island is constantly bathed in Moon God power. As such, the aura of Nature here is incredible, and the entire island has been turned into a celestial place. Calling this place heaven would not be an exaggeration at all."

"That's the Moon God Palace over there. Looks like it's even bigger than I expected! It's like a heavenly palace!"

In front of them, there was a palace-city giving off a gentle silver light. The structures within the palace-city were grand and

majestic, and they were comparable to Ling Tian City's Administrative District. Even though they were quite far away, Ling Chen and Fey both felt a heavy pressure.

Before they had met a single person from the Moon God Clan, Fey and Ling Chen both felt a strange oppressive might just from looking at the palace-city. They both knew that this was their senses giving them a warning and the feeling that the Moon God Clan's absolute power gave off.

Ling Chen raised his hands, and an old-looking map appeared in his hands.

"Is that..." Fey glanced at it and then became incredibly shocked. "A map of the Moon God Palace? Is it real?"

"It should be real," Ling Chen said as he studied the map. The Forgotten God Representative had told him that there were 100 or so Pavilions in each of the 81 Shrines. There were 81 Shrines on the map, and each one had a name and number. The First Shrine, which supposedly had the Saint Orb, was located at the centre of the Moon God Palace, and it was surrounded by the 80 other Shrines. On the map, there were incredibly detailed descriptions of all of the Shrines and Pavilions, and it also detailed where they were located.

The location of the Moon God Palace's barrier, the residences of the Moon Ladies, and some secret passages... all of these were labelled on the map. It was just the First Shrine that was labelled with a big '?'.

From what Ling Chen had heard from the Forgotten God Representative, he could determine that this map was quite accurate and comprehensive. In other words, this map that he had manipulated Qian Gun Gun into giving him was most likely the real deal. Ling Chen's gaze became serious, and he quickly memorised the contents of the map with his monstrous mental energy. At the same time, he inwardly marvelled... just who was it

that drew this map? In order to draw this map, that person would have had to walk around the entire Moon God Palace, including each and every Pavilion. If this wasn't from the Moon God Palace, the person who entered the Moon God Palace and drew it was definitely a heaven-defying character.

“Where did you get this map from? And who has the ability to map out the entire Moon God Palace? To be able to draw such a descriptive map, it would have been impossible without walking through every single bit of the Moon God Palace,” Fey said in awe.

“No idea, I stole this map.”

Fey: “.....”

As Ling Chen memorised the map, Fey did not disturb him, and she also stared at the map as she memorised it. 20 minutes later, Ling Chen closed the map and said in a low voice, “The one who drew it was definitely either a Moon God Representative or an absolute monster.”

.....

At a desolate place where weeds were overgrown and crimes were common.

“A... Achoo!!”

Xiao Feng Chen, who had been napping, suddenly sat up and rubbed his nose, saying unhappily, “Weird, there's not even a breeze here, so why did I suddenly sneeze... it must be some little bastard cursing me.”

Xiao Feng Chen grinned then laid down with a ‘whoosh’. He closed his eyes as he muttered, “Living this sort of life where I don't have to rush around trying to find a successor is great. I wonder if that boy Ling Tian has upgraded his profession to the Feng Chen Sect Leader yet. If he has, I'll be able to take him to the [Heart End Cliff]. With that boy's mental energy, he might be able to comprehend the [Yama Curse] there... eh, forget about it. I'll let

him do what he wants. Now, I can be as relaxed as I want. Heheh, I miss those days when I'd go in and out of the Moon God Palace while those 3 women weren't there and steal 7 or 8 pieces of Heaven's End grade equipment. Those Moon Ladies and Moon God Representatives were unable to discover me at all. Heheheh, our Feng Chen Sect is indeed the greatest sect in the world, ufufufufu...

“Right, where did I put that map I drew back then...”

.....

“How are we going to go over?” Fey asked. While Ling Chen memorised the map's contents, she had almost memorised most of it.

“Do you have any high-grade concealment skills?” Ling Chen asked. His ‘Vanishing Shadow’ was inherited from the peerless Feng Chen Sect, and now that it had been raised to max level, unless he was attacked, he could maintain it forever. As long as he did not run into the 3 Moon Goddesses, he was quite confident that he would not be discovered.

“I was going to ask you the same question. However, it seems that we don't need to worry about this.” After saying this, Fey's body turned into smoke and slowly disappeared. Even her jasmine fragrance disappeared.

Ling Chen smiled. He stretched out his right hand, and soon, he felt a slim hand hold onto his hand. He activated Vanishing Shadow, causing both his body and aura to vanish, and he advanced hand-in-hand with Fey. If this was anywhere in the Forgotten Continent, they would have moved quickly because they possessed high-grade concealment skills – not only could they hide their bodies, but they could also hide their auras. Adding on their own talents in stealth, it was almost impossible for them to be discovered.

However, this was the Moon God Island, and they had to be cautious with every step that they took. After walking 2 or 3

kilometres, they still did not see anyone, but the dazzling Moon God Palace now loomed over them. At this moment, Ling Chen and Fey both stopped.

“From the map, this should be where the barrier is,” Ling Chen said softly to Fey.

Fey fell silent for a while before replying, “After 2 metres ahead, there’s indeed a barrier. Moreover, this barrier is quite powerful; much more powerful than the World Boundaries.”

“Can you create a gap?” Ling Chen asked.

“Of course, of course,” Fey replied with some hesitation. “But the barrier is too powerful – if I use the Lachesis to force my way in, it will create a large sound and massive ripples when creating the gap. It’s likely that we’ll be discovered by Moon Ladies or Moon God Representatives.”

Ling Chen nodded and then said, “Let me try then.”

Following this, after confirming that there was no one around except Fey and himself, Ling Chen cancelled Vanishing Shadow. He took out the Moon God Hairpin that he had obtained in the Moon God Ruins, then took a deep breath. He confirmed the distance and took 3 steps forward as he touched the Moon God Hairpin against the barrier.

Immediately, the Moon God Hairpin flashed with a faint white light as a ripple appeared soundlessly in front of them. Beside him, Fey grabbed his hand. “It’s a gap! Hurry up and go in!”

After saying this, she rushed forwards as fast as she could with Ling Chen, effortlessly passing through the Moon God Palace’s barrier.

“Where did you get this?” Fey asked as she looked at the Moon God Hairpin in Ling Chen’s hands after passing through the barrier.

Ling Chen put the Moon God Hairpin away and quickly shrank

into a corner, waiting for [Vanishing Shadow]'s cooldown time to reset. "I found it."

"Hoh, all this stealing and picking up. Looks like your skills in thievery have improved quite a bit." Fey smiled.

Ling Chen ignored her and said in a low voice, "What's the largest area you can freeze time in?"

Fey's expression became serious as she replied, "The larger I extend the range, the shorter the time will be. If I want to maintain it for more than 10 minutes, the limit is 3 kilometres!"

3 kilometres... this caused Ling Chen to suck in a breath of cold air.

"However, we only have a single chance because this area and time is the Lachesis' limit. After activating it, all of the spatial energy within the Lachesis will be used up, and it will require 24 hours to recover," Fey said seriously.

"It's more than enough! With a range of 3 kilometres and over 10 minutes to take the Saint Orb, if I'm not able to succeed, then I don't deserve that Saint Orb." Ling Chen clenched his fists, feeling incredibly excited. With Fey's Lachesis, as long as they could get within 3 kilometres of the First Shrine, the Saint Orb would be as good as his. The 3 Moon Goddesses were indeed peerless, but no matter how powerful they were, they were unable to resist the power of time!

After 30 seconds passed, Ling Chen was once again able to reactivate Vanishing Shadow. He calculated the distance to the Moon God Palace based on the map, and after a few minutes, they came before the Moon God Palace's grand doors.

The Moon God Palace's doors were about 20 metres high and 30 metres wide, and it seemed to be made of moon-white jade. At the centre, there was a full moon giving off a mysterious light.

There were incredibly beautiful flowers and grasses at the

boundary around the Moon God Palace. Pairs of Moon Ladies carried exquisite baskets, picking different-coloured petals. Even though they were only Moon Ladies, each of them was incredibly beautiful, and they gave off a celestial aura. Any of them in any continent would be a peerless beauty.

However, who would have thought that such young and beautiful ladies would have at least Heaven's End grade strength.

“This morning, I saw the Goddess Order leave again.”

“Eh? Did something happen at a continent again? To the point that the Goddess Order had to personally intervene?”

“It's a place called the East Ocean Continent. The seal on the evil beast Yamata no Orochi has weakened again, and the new Cherry Blossom God Representative isn't able to suppress it, so she asked for help.”

“So it's like that. A Saint destroyer grade evil beast indeed requires her ladyship to personally go. Speaking of the East Ocean Continent, I heard that the previous Cherry Blossom God Representative was captured by an otherworlder. Is there still no news from her?”

“It's not very clear. The last I heard, the Goddess Fate said not to investigate this matter anymore because she said that the Cherry Blossom God Representative willingly left to follow that otherworlder.”

“Willingly? How is that possible... to become an official Moon God Representative is an extremely glorious and joyous matter – it's something I dream about. How could she give up her status as a Moon God Representative and become an otherworlder's pet... moreover, that otherworlder was so weak; I just can't understand it...”

As the Moon Ladies chatted with each other, none of them saw 2 invisible shadows soundlessly pass by them and walk through the

doors, entering the Moon God Palace.

Chapter 736 - Time Domain

The Nature aura within the Moon God Palace was even denser than the Nature aura outside to the point that it was almost unbelievable. And yet, it was incredibly mild and gentle, and it did not show any signs of becoming an Elemental Storm.

At a glance, fog and clouds filled the setting, making it seem like a heavenly realm – perhaps, this really was a heavenly realm. Looking up, there were structures floating above the clouds, all of them giving off a mighty pressure that dissuaded people from going close.

The beauty of the scenery here was almost impossible to describe. Rare and beautiful flowers, exquisite jade, dreamy fog and clouds... everything made this place seem like a paradise. The ‘luxuries’ on earth and in the Forgotten Continent could be bought with money, but the luxuries here were given by Nature, and they were things that could never be bought in the Forgotten Continent no matter how much money was spent.

“Perhaps even the ancient emperors of China wouldn’t dare to dream of such a paradise,” Fey said as she sighed in awe. As she walked, she felt more and more shocked every second, and she even felt a bit intoxicated.

“It’s much more beautiful than the Bamboo Sea Wonderland I’m staying at... hmm, what do you think about this: I have the Lunar Scourge, and you have the Lachesis. When they’ve fully developed, perhaps we’ll be able to stand up against the Moon God Clan. When that time comes, what do you think about taking this island for ourselves? Heheheh...” Ling Chen laughed evilly.

“I think that this big demonic pervert wants all of these pretty little sisters rather than the island itself. All of those Moon Ladies and Moon God Representatives were outstanding beauties, and they could cause the downfall of countries. To a big demonic

pervert like you, this would be like heaven,” Fey said with a teasing smile. However, she did feel quite interested in Ling Chen’s idea of taking this island for themselves.

“How about we invade this island together in the future. I’ll take the island, and all of the Moon Ladies and Moon God Representatives will belong to you. How about that?” As she spoke, Fey had an earnest look on her face, and there was expectation and excitement shining in her eyes. This caused Ling Chen to stagger.

As long as Ling Chen did not cancel his Vanishing Shadow or was attacked, he could maintain it indefinitely, and this was the same for Fey. After entering the Moon God Palace, they walked noiselessly, and they even perfectly concealed their auras. They passed by many Moon Ladies and Moon God Representatives, but none of them detected them.

Even though Ling Chen and Fey’s strength made them invincible among other players, it was far from enough to be able to deal with the Moon God Clan. However, their concealment abilities were far superior to their battle abilities. Ling Chen’s Vanishing Shadow skill was the most powerful concealment skill of the Feng Chen Sect, and it was this skill that Xiao Feng Chen had used to freely enter and exit the Moon God Clan... however, that was because the 3 Moon Goddesses had not been present. Ling Chen had no idea where Fey’s concealment skill was from, but it was definitely not inferior to Ling Chen’s.

Of course, another reason was because, like Ling Chen had said, the Moon God Clan was too powerful, and as such, these Moon Ladies and Moon God Representatives had let down their guards. They believed that no one had the ability or the courage to enter this place.

Just like that, Ling Chen and Fey travelled unhindered as they passed by Shrine after Shrine. Moreover, the locations they passed were exactly the same as on the map that he had. The further they walked, the more at ease Ling Chen felt, and he soon felt that he

could rely on the map. According to the map's descriptions, the First Shrine was at the centre of the Moon God Palace, and they walked closer and closer to Fey's '3 kilometres'.

"If the map is correct, there's still about 1 kilometre until we reach the effective range. Even though this distance is nothing to you with your Broken Shadow, it's best that we go as close as possible to increase our chances of success," Fey said.

Ling Chen nodded, agreeing with Fey's words. Just as he was about to speak, a voice sounded out, "Humans who have dared to intrude into our clan's territory, reveal yourselves."

It was an incredibly soft and gentle woman's voice. This voice was so soft that it could directly enter one's heart, and it was even more calming than the gentlest and warmest wind. It made the person want to use their all to protect the owner of this voice to the point of death.

This voice was monstrously bewitching, and it was to the point that even Ling Chen and Fey, who had incredibly powerful mental energy, felt their minds weaken. At the same time, a haziness appeared within their hearts... following this, their expression changed.

There was no one around them, and yet this voice was clearly speaking to them. Following this, a formless, mountain-like pressure descended on them, causing Ling Chen and Fey's minds to buzz, and their bodies almost crashed to the ground.

"Crap! We've been discovered!" Ling Chen said anxiously.

Ling Chen had faced the Cherry Blossom God Representative and the Forgotten God Representative before, and Fey had also faced the Forgotten God Representative. Their strength was undeniable, but the pressure they gave off definitely was not terrifying to such a level, nor would their voices seem so heartrendingly enchanting. There was only one possibility: that the owner of this voice was one of the 3 Moon Goddesses!

Their high-grade concealment skills, combined with their own talents in stealth, made it so that their passage through the Moon God Palace was perfect. And yet, they were still discovered. What was even more terrifying was that the 3 Moon Goddesses were most likely in the First Shrine, which was many kilometres away. To be able to detect 2 stealth experts from so far away – just how powerful were they?

“It’s the Goddess Fate’s voice... there are intruders in the Moon God Palace!”

The sounds of Moon God Representatives’ voices filled the air. However, there was no panic within them because there was nothing in the world that could cause the Moon God Clan to panic. To them, someone intruding into the Moon God Palace was completely laughable because there was only one ending – that person would be severely punished!

Many Moon Ladies and Moon God Representatives stopped what they were doing and flew up, releasing their senses and searching every corner of the Moon God Palace. Ling Chen and Fey pressed tightly against an unremarkable-looking wall, staying completely still. It was not that they did not want to move, but that it was difficult to breathe under the immense might, let alone move.

“What do we do?” Ling Chen asked Fey through gritted teeth.

“The Moon Goddesses have already locked onto our position, and they will most likely arrive soon. We’re still 4 kilometres away from the First Shrine, and it’s going to be impossible to get within 3 kilometres, so we’ll have to go all out!” Fey raised her right hand and said quickly, “I’m going to create a Time Domain that covers 4 kilometres. However, with such a range, the time it lasts for will be reduced to 8 minutes...”

“8 minutes... that’s enough! Otherwise we won’t have any time at all!” Ling Chen yelled. After discovering them, the Moon Goddesses could appear in the next second, and the best case

scenario was already impossible... 4 kilometres, 8 minutes... with the map it would definitely be enough!

Fey did not dally, and the ring on her middle finger shone with a yellow light, covering her entire right hand. She raised her hand and pointed upwards as she yelled, “Lachesis, make everything here fall silent... Time Domain!”

The yellow light instantly shot out and descended around them. In an instant, the entire world seemed to go silent.

All sound from the Moon Ladies and Moon God Representatives completely vanished, and even the sound of the wind blowing disappeared. It was as if they had just gone from a noisy world into a dead silent world. Everything remained fixed in place, and no person or object moved an inch.

Even the terrifying pressure weighing down on Ling Chen and Fey disappeared. Although Ling Chen had personally seen the Lachesis’ control over time when they were dealing with the Forgotten God Representative, witnessing the massive Time Domain and experiencing the silence around them caused his heart to greatly tremble.

Fey slowly closed her outstretched hand, and the ring on her middle finger lost its yellow lustre. Fey’s face also became incredibly pale, and her body swayed, then fell. Even her concealment skill wore off.

“Fey!” Ling Chen stretched out his hand and caught Fey.

An incredibly weak hand softly hit Ling Chen’s body. Fey pressed one hand against the wall as she said hurriedly, “Don’t worry about me! Go immediately; you only have 8 minutes. We only have this one chance, so you can’t waste a single second!”

“Alright... I’ll definitely come back within 8 minutes!”

Even though Ling Chen felt quite worried about Fey’s condition, he simply couldn’t afford to waste any time. He gave Fey a deep

look, then summoned Snow Cherry and activated [Broken Shadow], quickly going forwards like a white blur.

In his fastest state, Ling Chen's Movement Speed was 3600, and if he could move in a straight line, it would take him less than 30 seconds to traverse 4 kilometres. The map was clear in his mind, and the fastest route to the First Shrine appeared within his mind.

Fey had desperately bought him eight minutes, so he had to succeed no matter what.

After passing by Shrine after Shrine, he came closer and closer to the First Shrine. There was still no sound in his ears, nor did that powerful pressure descend again. It seemed that even the powerful Moon Goddesses could not resist the Lachesis' Time Domain.

Just as he was only a few hundred metres away from the First Shrine, a purple figure appeared in the air a distance away from the Moon God Island.

It was a celestial beauty. She wore an exquisite purple dress, and she had a slim waist and petite body. Her hair was bound up using a jade Moon God Hairpin, and no matter if it was her wrists or neck, they seemed to shine with light. The scene of her floating in the air was simply too beautiful to be described. Anyone who even saw her hazy figure from far away would be able to tell that she was beautiful to the extreme.

The woman drew near at a shocking speed, and as she came closer, it was possible to see her face. Without a doubt, her face was that of a goddess, and she was incredibly enchanting. Her eyes were clear and still as water, but they had a bone-piercing coldness within them. It was as if she would be able to seal everything in ice with a single glance. It seemed as if nothing in the world could escape from these eyes that were colder than ice.

It was Purple Dress – one of the 3 Moon Goddesses who controlled order.

After taking care of matters in the East Ocean Continent, she had immediately returned to the Moon God Palace. However, when she was right above it, she suddenly stopped and looked down with a bone-piercingly cold look.

“Time Domain? Hmph!” As the Moon Goddess who controlled the order in the Mystic Moon world, how could she not be able to control time? She immediately recognised the Time Domain that covered a portion of the Moon God Palace, and she frowned as she stretched her hands downwards. “Reverse Time Domain!!”

Chapter 737 - Fey Facing 3 Moon Goddesses

As Purple Dress yelled out, a hazy purple light quickly descended from her fingertips, covering Fey's 'Time Domain'.

An incredibly soft sound to the point that it couldn't be heard sounded out, and the faint purple light and the faint yellow light clashed, then both disappeared.

Fey's Time Domain, which Ling Chen had put all of his hopes in, had completely disappeared.

"Someone has intruded into the Moon God Palace; sisters, hurry and find that person!"

"Reveal yourself, intruding human!"

The sudden voices shocked both Fey and Ling Chen.

"What's going on... how come the Lachesis' Time Domain... suddenly disappeared?" A look of deep shock appeared on Fey's pale face. Ever since she had obtained the Lachesis, she had never encountered a situation where the Time Domain had disappeared. She had always been incredibly certain that no creature or power could resist her powerful time control.

She was completely confident that the Time Domain would last for at least 8 minutes, but it had suddenly disappeared after 1 minute. In her shock, she suddenly thought of something, and she hurriedly looked up... high in the air, she saw a purple figure.

"Could it...be her? The Moon Goddess who can control Order?"

The Sea Emperor Helos's words echoed in Fey's mind, "Fey, in this Mystic Moon world, it's not just the Lachesis that can control time. The Goddess Order controls the order of elemental essence. The elemental essence that she controls is not limited to fire, water, wind, lightning, earth, light, and darkness, but it also includes space and time. Of course, the Goddess Order cannot compare to the Lachesis in its complete state in controlling space

and time. However, the Lachesis' power is incomplete, and it might not even be able to stand up to the Goddess Order..."

Fey also remembered the Moon Ladies' words that they had overheard when they were entering the Moon God Palace – they had said that the Goddess Order had left the Moon God Palace to go to the East Ocean Continent...

Helos told her that the Goddess Fate was called White Snow and wore a white dress; the Goddess Freedom was called Blue Heart and wore a blue dress; the Goddess Order was called Purple Dress... and always wore a purple dress!

The purple figure in the sky was definitely the Goddess Order, who had just returned from the East Ocean Continent! Just then, it was definitely her who had cancelled out the Time Domain!

Fey, who had not personally killed anyone in a long time, suddenly felt an overwhelming wave of bloodlust.

Before, when they had heard that the Goddess Order was not in the Moon God Palace, she and Ling Chen had been delighted. After all, with 1 less Moon Goddess, there was a lot less danger. However, now, she knew that it was not good news for them; rather, it was a disaster. If the Goddess Order had been in the Moon God Palace when she had activated the Time Domain, the Goddess Order would have been frozen in time as well. Even if she could also control time, if she was covered by the Time Domain first, she would be frozen, and she would not be able to do anything, much less control time. However, since she had come back from outside and was outside the Time Domain, she was able to cancel Fey's Time Domain!

Fey and Ling Chen's 'perfect' plan had been completely destroyed by the Goddess Order's inopportune return.

Moon God Palace's Seventh Shrine.

When all of the clamouring started, Ling Chen immediately

stopped as if he had been nailed in place. Although he was shocked, he did not panic, and he immediately activated [Vanishing Shadow] and quickly hid himself, pressing tightly against one of the Pavilion's walls. He was looking right at the Seventh Shrine's exit, and if he passed through this Seventh Shrine and then the Fourth Shrine, he would be able to reach the First Shrine. However, he had to stop.

“What’s going on? Didn’t she say I would have 8 minutes?!” Ling Chen worriedly roared inwardly.

The second after he finished going into stealth, he felt the 3 Moon Goddess and some Moon God Representatives sweep their senses over where he was. Following this, even more senses swept over where he was. However, with Vanishing Shadow and adding on the fact that he was not moving at all, they could not find him at all. At this moment, Ling Chen found that the Moon Ladies’ and Moon God Representatives’ senses covered every inch of the Moon God Palace except for the regions within the Pavilions.

Why weren’t they searching within the Pavilions? Could it be that they were confident that no one would enter them?

Could it be that there was some method for entering the Pavilions that made it so that outsiders couldn’t enter? Or was it because each Pavilion had a special protective power that could protect the Moon God Representatives within?

These things flashed in Ling Chen’s mind, but he did not think about them too much. Now, all of the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies became alert, and Ling Chen did not dare to act rashly. However, what brought him comfort was that the Moon Goddess that had locked onto him from before had lost him after he ran about 3 kilometres or so... in other words, during those few moments, he had escaped from that Moon Goddess’ power. However, for him to be discovered 4 kilometres away, it was easier for him to be discovered while only a few hundred metres away – perhaps it would only take a few seconds.

Something definitely happened over where Fey was... what should he do now?

Ling Chen's mind raced, and he subconsciously looked to the side. He saw that there was a pair of doors shaped like 2 half moons, and there were 3 elegantly-written words above the doors.

Water Celestial Pavilion.

From the name, this Pavilion evidently belonged to a Moon God Representative called the Water Celestial God Representative. Seeing this name, Ling Chen slightly frowned. 2 seconds later, a thought flashed in his mind as he quickly took something out of his bag.

It was a grey, old key.

[Old Key]: This Old Key is very old. It contains the power of the Moon God Clan and is unable to be destroyed by the forces of nature, preserving its state even now. It may be used to unlock the 'Water Celestial Pavilion' at the Seventh Shrine within the Moon God Palace.

Holding this key that he had obtained at the Moon God Ruins, Ling Chen did not hesitate as he touched the key on the half moon-shaped doors. Immediately, the doors, which had not opened for a long time, soundlessly swung open. Ling Chen lightly breathed in and quickly jumped in. As he entered, the doors tightly closed behind him.

After entering the Water Celestial Pavilion, Ling Chen felt as if he had entered into a separate world. His incredibly tense mind relaxed – it was as if his senses were telling him that this place was relatively safe.

“So it's like that. There's a barrier around each of the Pavilions, completely blocking off any senses from outside. I'm guessing this is most likely to give each Moon God Representative a separate, personal space. Otherwise, with so many beings above the

Heaven's End grade, it's possible for anyone to find out what anyone else is doing using their senses. Anyone would feel bound in such a situation," Ling Chen thought to himself.

At the same time, every Pavilion required a unique key to enter. This key would always be carried by the Moon God Representative, and there was no other way to enter. As such, the Moon God Clan's people didn't have to worry about intruders entering the Pavilions. Thus, no one bothered to check any of the Pavilions, nor could they.

The space within the Pavilion was much larger than what Ling Chen had expected. There was a large circular bed, a zither, 2 tables, and a few pretty wind chimes hanging from the ceiling. At the centre of the Pavilion, there was also a large pool. The water in the pool was so pure and clear that it was possible to see the bottom, on which there were many daffodils.

Ling Chen only hurriedly looked around because he did not have time to appreciate his surroundings. He remained in stealth, and he suppressed his aura as he spoke into his communication device, "Fey, what happened?"

"The Time Domain was cancelled out," Fey immediately replied.

"....." Ling Chen felt incredibly surprised.

"Where are you? Were you discovered?" Fey asked worriedly.

"No! I'm at a fairly safe place," Ling Chen replied. "What about you?"

"I'm... very not-safe."

As Fey replied to Ling Chen, her cold eyes looked ahead of her, where a stunningly beautiful woman in a purple dress had appeared before her. The woman in purple was looking back at her just as coldly.

Around her, 10 or so Moon God Representatives and tens of Moon Ladies were respectfully standing around the woman in purple,

glaring at Fey.

“I’ll tell you about the Time Domain being cancelled out later. Right now, I’m surrounded – the Goddess Order is right in front of me... ah, the Goddesses Fate and Freedom are also coming. Looks like they’ve also noticed the Time Domain, and they are personally coming over. I should let you know that these 3 Moon Goddesses are all ridiculously pretty, and they aren’t at all inferior to your dear Meng Xin. I’m sure you’ll be very happy if you see them,”

Fey said in a joking tone, not forgetting to tease him. However, hearing this, Ling Chen felt quite fearful. He didn’t care about how the Time Domain had been dispelled – right now, Fey was in an incredibly dangerous situation...

Right now, she was facing 3 Moon Goddesses! They represented the greatest power and authority in the Mystic Moon world, and they were the 3 most powerful humans! No... they were 3 gods!

What’s more, there were also numerous Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies there!

This was worse than their worst case scenario.

“Fey! Leave immediately! Your Lachesis has used up its time energy, but it should still have quite a bit of spatial energy; I’m sure it’s no problem for you to escape!” Ling Chen said worriedly.

Fey immediately replied, “It’s no problem for me to run away. Even if the 3 Moon Goddesses tried to stop me, it would be impossible for them to. However, what about you?”

“I’m quite close to the First Shrine, and the place I’m at is very safe. If I hide here, they probably won’t be able to find me. The 3 Moon Goddesses most likely think that you entered by yourself. If you leave, they most likely won’t search for me. I’ll stay here and wait for an opportunity to enter the First Shrine.”

This was the only thing Ling Chen could think of after their ‘perfect plan’ had crumbled, and it centred around Fey getting

away. With the Lachesis' spatial energy, it would be no problem for Fey to leave by herself. However, if she wanted to bring him, she would not possess absolute certainty in escaping anymore.

“No!” Fey resolutely refused as she slowly said, “Our concealment is more or less useless against the 3 Moon Goddesses! Even if you hide for 100 years, you won't be able to find an opportunity – once you come out, you'll immediately be found. Adam, listen to me. I'm going to use all sorts of methods to attract the 3 Moon Goddesses' attention, and I'll give you a signal at the right time. When that time comes, leave your safe spot as quickly as possible and rush to the First Shrine! Even though you'll definitely be found out by the 3 Moon Goddesses, I have ways to stall them... this is our last chance!”

“No way!” Ling Chen refused. “A single person stalling 3 Moon Goddesses? Are you joking? Do you think you're the invincible Eve in the real world?!”

“I'll do whatever the hell I want. This time, you have to listen to me!”

Ling Chen: “.....”

After saying these words, Fey cut communications with Ling Chen and looked at the 3 women in the air, who all had the same face but completely different auras.

The 3 Moon Goddesses of the Moon God Clan!

Chapter 738 - The Moon God Clan's Offer

“Purple Dress, are you sure that it was a Time Domain?” Moon Goddess White Snow asked. It was her voice that Fey and Ling Chen had heard before. Her voice was soft to the extreme, making one's bones and soul feel soft and numb. Perhaps even the most beautiful voice in the world could not compare to it at all.

At such a close distance, Fey felt intoxicated for a moment hearing this voice even as a woman. However, she quickly came back to her senses, her eyebrows tightly furrowed. Just her voice alone had such an allurements to it; just how terrifying would her strength be?

What's more, the Moon Goddess White Snow was only one of the 3 Moon Goddesses! In terms of strength and authority, she was the most superior out of all of them.

“Yes.” Purple Dress only said a single word while coldly staring at Fey. Her looks were incredibly beautiful, but anyone who saw her face and gaze would feel a chill within their hearts.

“Aiya! Who would have thought that there's someone else who can control time in this world apart from Purple Dress? Even we were frozen by it. Hehe, this little sister is so strong!”

A look of curiosity and excitement appeared on Blue Heart's face. Her thin eyebrows curved upwards as she smiled, her eyes twinkling like stars. As she spoke and giggled, a cute pinkness appeared on her face. Her features were exactly the same as White Snow and Purple Dress's, but the expression on her face was completely different. White Snow's expression was like warm sunlight and gentle wind; Purple Dress' expression was like cold moonlight; Blue Heart's expression was like a refreshing fountain, seeming like a not-yet mature girl.

“Not only is it time energy, but it's also very powerful. Just then, that Time Domain covered 4 kilometres, and it would have lasted

for more than 7 minutes. Even for me, creating such a domain would be my limit,” Purple Dress said coldly. Apart from her coldness, there was no other emotion in her voice. Time energy was different from anything else – causing time to stop within a range of 1 kilometre was much more difficult than causing a large disturbance using normal elemental essence within a range of 10 kilometres. She knew that she had only been able to cancel out the Time Domain because it had already lasted for a while before she arrived. As such, there was not as much energy left within it. Otherwise, even as the Goddess Order, she would have been unable to completely destroy the Time Domain.

White Snow’s lips parted and said in a dreamy voice, “She’s not very powerful; it’s impossible for this sort of strength to affect time. In that case, she’s most likely using a powerful piece of equipment. There’s only 1 piece of equipment in the Mystic Moon world’s records that can control time in such a large area...”

“The silent item of the gods, Lachesis!” Purple Dress slowly looked up, her gaze piercing towards Fey’s right hand.

“Eh? Lachesis??” Blue Heart’s mouth widened, making an incredibly cute, surprised expression. “But didn’t the Lachesis completely fall silent a long~ long~ time ago? Even the last generation of Moon Gods were unable to awaken its power. Afterwards, it disappeared, and I almost even forgot its name. How could it be the Lachesis?”

Only now did Fey speak. She stood straight and raised her right hand, showing her 3 rings to White Snow, Blue Heart, and Purple Dress. She wasn’t surprised that the 3 Moon Goddesses would recognise the Lachesis because the Sea Emperor Helos had also recognised it at a glance. She smiled as she said, “Little sister, I’m indeed using the Lachesis.”

“Wow! Red, yellow, blue... the number of rings, the colour of the rings, and the feeling – it really seems to be the Lachesis... ehhhh, wait. What did you call me? L-Little sister?!” The slow-witted Blue

Heart's beautiful eyes widened, her mouth hanging wide open, diverting her attention from the Lachesis to her being called 'little sister'.

She, a powerful and majestic Moon Goddess, had been called... a little sister?!

"That's right, because you look like a little sister." Fey's smiled grew wider. Even though Blue Heart was a Moon Goddess, her temperament, gaze, and voice all made her seem like a pure and naïve young girl. If she hadn't appeared together with White Snow and Purple Dress, Fey might not have even thought that she was a Moon Goddess.

"Little sister? Ahhhh! How could I be a little sister? I'm a Moon Goddess; a super, super powerful and mighty Moon Goddess! You're the little sister! Even your grandma's grandma's grandma's grandma's grandma would be a little sister to me!!" Blue Heart, who had never been called a little sister in her life before, almost went mad. However, seeing how cute and desperate she was as she waved her hands and yelled, she completely looked like a little girl throwing a fit.

Seeing Blue Heart's un-Moon-Goddess-like behaviour, White Snow and Blue Heart did not react at all – evidently, they were used to her acting like this. Even though they were triplets, were the same age, and had the same face and body, the difference between their personalities was like the difference between the heavens and the earth. Perhaps this was related to them inheriting their Moon God power. White Snow was the Goddess of Fate, and she had a forgiving and merciful personality. Purple Dress was the Goddess of Order, and she had a controlling and judging personality. Blue Heart was the Goddess of Freedom, and she had a lighthearted and spirited personality.

White Snow slowly spoke with a warm look, "Human, even though I don't know why you secretly entered our Moon God Palace and why there's a bloody smell on you that has gathered

after a long time, there's no evil aura about you, nor do you have any ill intent towards us. Adding on the fact that the Lachesis recognised you as its master, even though you committed a taboo, we won't harm you, so please don't worry."

"Oh? You won't harm me? Because of the Lachesis?" Fey asked in surprise.

"That's right, that's right, little little sister!" As revenge for Fey calling her little sister, Blue Heart proudly called her a 'little little sister', and she also put on an extremely cute face. "Because the Lachesis' last companion was our ancestor. However, our ancestor was only a companion of the Lachesis and not its owner. It gave our ancestor the ability to control time and space. That's right, that's right, Purple Dress's spatial and time powers come from our ancestor, which means that they're from the Lachesis. Eh? Ahhhh... you're actually able to wear the Lachesis? Could it be... that the Lachesis recognised you as its master? How could it be like this? Even our ancestor was unable to make the Lachesis recognise her as its master."

"White Snow, Purple Dress, look! She seems to have been recognised by the Lachesis as its master!" Blue Heart yelled, but White Snow and Purple Dress did not react at all. Their gazes all fell on the Lachesis, a deep sense of shock within their hearts... with how slow-witted Blue Heart was, how could they only realise it after hearing Blue Heart's words?

What Blue Heart said was true – Purple Dress's ability to control space and time came from the Lachesis, but even their ancestor was unable to make the Lachesis recognise her as its master. However, this human in front of them could equip the Lachesis, meaning that she had become its master!

"Human, can you tell me your name?" White Snow's voice remained incredibly soft. Even though Fey had intruded into their territory and had cast a massive Time Domain, there was no hostility within White Snow's voice.

“Fey,” Fey calmly replied. She had been desperately thinking about how to keep the Moon Goddesses’ attention on her, but now, it seemed like the 3 Moon goddesses’ attention had been attracted by the Lachesis without her having to do anything. Since the situation was like this, the chances of their success increased by a bit more.

“Can you tell us where you found the Lachesis and why it recognised you as its master? Of course, you don’t have to answer.” A smile appeared on White Snow’s face, making her seem so beautiful that the heavens and earth seemed to pale in comparison. Her mesmerising voice also made it almost impossible to resist her request.

Fey did not refuse to answer because she felt that this information wasn’t that big of a secret. She calmly replied, “In order to kill a ferocious sea beast, I entered the ocean. However, I was faced with a terrifying rip current. I was swept to the bottom of the ocean, and I thought that I was going to die without a doubt. However, just as I was about to die, a mysterious power brought me to the coast.” Fey spread out the fingers on her right hand as she said, “It was the Lachesis that saved me. By the time I realised I was safe, it was already on my hand. As for why it chose me to be its master, I have no idea.”

Fey’s reply completely surprised the 3 Moon Goddesses. After falling silent for a while, White Snow slowly said, “After our ancestor passed away, the Lachesis’ power fell dormant, and it was unable to be reawakened. Before our ancestor passed away, she said that the Lachesis was waiting for its fated master, and it seems that the person is you. Even though its current power is quite weak, it will gradually recover until it returns to its peak condition by being with you. When that happens, perhaps you’ll be invincible under the heavens.”

“That’s right, that’s right; the Lachesis is super powerful. After all, it was left behind by the ancient True Gods. The only item left

behind by the gods that can rival the Lachesis is the Lunar Scourge,” Blue Heart said.

“Can you tell us why you entered the Moon God Palace? I can feel that you possess no hostility towards us, and we’ve never met before. Can you tell us your reason?” White Snow asked as she smiled.

“The reason?” Fey laughed. “Because I was bored, and I thought that it would be fun. I just wanted to see if the Moon God Clan was as powerful as the legends say you are.”

“You’re lying!” Purple Dress coldly said.

White Snow shook her head and said in a soft voice, “Forget it, Purple Dress. At the very least, she doesn’t possess any hostility or enmity towards us. Moreover, since the Lachesis has recognised her as its master, she’s definitely not an evildoer. Perhaps she’s the reincarnation of one of the ancient True Gods – that’s the most logical explanation for the Lachesis choosing her as its master. Regardless, because of our ancestors’ instructions, since she has the Lachesis, we shouldn’t harm her even though she committed a taboo.”

Following this, she turned to look at Fey and said, “Fey, what do you think about staying in our Moon God Clan? Even though you’re an otherworlder and we’ve never accepted one before, you possess the Lachesis – just this alone is enough for us to change our rules. As long as you’re willing to stay, we’ll give you the Moon God Clan’s blood and power. When that happens, your strength will greatly rise, and even your lifespan will be extended to tens of thousands of years. In the future, when the Lachesis’ power matures, you’ll become the fourth Moon Goddess.”

Chapter 739 - Final Hope: Ultimate Dimensional Domain

Moon Goddess White Snow's words caused Blue Heart's mouth to widen and Purple Dress to slightly frown. However, neither of them said anything. From what they saw, White Snow's words were not unacceptable. For Fey to be recognised as the Lachesis' master, she definitely was quite extraordinary. Perhaps she really was the reincarnation of one of the ancient True Gods. At the same time, if she joined the Moon God Clan, it would mean that the Lachesis would be returning to the Moon God Clan and that its power could be used by them, bringing great benefits. This was because all of the Moon God Clan's top-tier equipment combined together could not compare to a single complete Lachesis.

“Become a Moon Goddess?” Even Fey was completely dumbfounded by her words. She had been prepared for immense danger, but she was instead faced with an irresistible offer. At this moment, Fey's heart truly wavered.

Naturally, what moved her heart was not the status of a Moon God or the Moon God's blood or power but the extension of her lifespan to tens of thousands of years. Whether the Mystic Moon world was real or fake was clearly known by Ling Chen because of the Lunar Scourge, and this was the same for Fey with the Lachesis.

Who could resist the temptation of extending their lifespan from around 100 years to tens of thousands of years? Perhaps no one in the world would not be tempted by this offer— not even Fey or Ling Chen.

“Are you certain that my lifespan will be extended to tens of thousands of years?” Fey looked up, all of the wariness around her disappearing. Instead, there was a look of hope and expectation in her eyes.

White Snow smiled. “If you join the Moon God Clan, with your control over the Lachesis, you’ll have the qualification to become a Moon Goddess after the Lachesis is restored. All creatures in the Mystic Moon world know just how long Moon Goddess lifespans are. One of our remarkable ancestors lived for over 100,000 years.”

“We never lie – White Snow, Purple Dress, and I are already 18,000 years old. However, in human terms, we’re only 18 years old,” Blue Heart added.

The interest on Fey’s face became greater and greater, and the 3 Moon Goddesses did not say anything, waiting for her answer. After a while, Fey breathed out and said, “Can you please give me some time to think about it? After all, I’m a human from another world, so I’m quite different to you all and can’t make a decision immediately.”

“Very well.” White Snow smiled and nodded. “You can leave as you wish. I’m sure that you’ll be able to return here easily with the Lachesis’ spatial powers. We welcome you back at any time, and if you join our Moon God Clan one day, today will be remembered as quite the fateful encounter.”

“Can I really leave? You’re not going to punish me for intruding into the Moon God Palace?” Fey asked uncertainly.

“Of course,” White Snow lightly nodded. “You possess no hostility towards us, and perhaps you only came here out of curiosity. At the same time, you possess the Lachesis, and you are, in a way, connected to our Moon God Clan by fate. As such, we don’t want to punish you. What’s more, with the Lachesis, all physical, magic, spatial, and time restrictions are useless against you. Even if I wanted to stop you, it would be very difficult. As such, you can leave as you wish, and we won’t stop you. We just hope that one day you’ll return and give us the answer that we want to hear.”

“... Very well.” Fey let out a deep breath. “Since that’s the case,

I'll be going now. I'll come back after I've decided."

After saying this, Fey slowly floated into the air. She flipped her right hand as the blue ring shone with a faint light, seeming like it was going to release spatial energy to leave. At that moment, the 3 auras locking on to her disappeared.

Fey had been waiting for this moment!

When the 3 Moon Goddesses' power had been locked onto her, if she had tried anything, they would have immediately responded. What she had been thinking the entire time was how to cause the 3 Moon Goddesses to lower their guard so that she could strike with a lightning-like attack. She had thought that it would be extremely difficult, but after these series of events, not only did the 3 Moon Goddesses not make things difficult for her, but they had even extended an olive branch towards her. When she was preparing to use the Lachesis' power to 'leave', not only had the 3 Moon Goddesses withdrawn their power, but they had also completely let down their guards.

This sort of opportunity was much better than the moment she had hoped for!

The Lachesis' blue light suddenly became incredibly bright to the point that it was blinding, and the range that it covered increased by tens of times. Fey's gaze became incredibly sharp and fierce, and as she moved her right hand, the dense blue light shot in all directions.

"Ultimate Dimensional Domain!!"

As Fey yelled out, the blue light soundlessly exploded and dissipated.

Fey's sudden, strange actions were immediately detected by the 3 Moon Goddesses. However, just as they were about to react, they felt their bodies sink into an incredibly powerful, cold seal. No matter how they tried, they could not budge at all.

Not only the 3 Moon Goddesses, but all of the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies who were caught in the blue light were completely frozen. Only their eyes flickered with shock.

This was because Fey had used almost all of the spatial energy within the Lachesis to create this Ultimate Dimensional Domain, tightly freezing all space within the area. Even though the Lachesis' power was incomplete, it was still a legendary item. Even the 3 Moon Goddesses were unable to escape from the Lachesis' bindings.

All of the Lachesis' time energy had been expended, and now, more than 95% of its spatial energy had been consumed, as had much of Fey's mental energy. Fey felt incredibly dizzy, but she forcibly woke herself and grabbed her communication device as she yelled, "Adam! Hurry up and go! I can only hold them for 60 seconds! This is our last chance!"

Ling Chen, who had been waiting for Fey's signal, immediately raised his head. He did not hesitate at all, and in the next instant, he shot out from the Water Celestial Pavilion like an arrow, rushing towards the First Shrine.

The 3 Moon Goddesses did not move at all, and their bodies flashed with a white light. However, they immediately realised how powerful the Lachesis' spatial power was. Even as the most powerful beings in the Mystic Moon world, they could only cause the space around them to tremble, but they could not leave. If they wanted to break free, it would take them at least 1 minute or so of struggling!

When Ling Chen activated Broken Shadow and rushed out of the Water Celestial Pavilion, the 3 Moon Goddesses all detected him, feeling incredibly shocked.

"You have a companion? Just what is your aim?" White Snow was unable to move, but she was able to use her power to project her voice.

“We just want to retrieve something. After we obtain it, we’ll immediately leave.” After using up massive amounts of mental energy, Fey’s face was incredibly pale, and it was almost unable to stand properly.

“Retrieve something? As long as you join the Moon God Clan, everything we have will be yours. Why must you use such methods?” White Snow’s voice was filled with disappointment and anger. Following this, she seemed to realise something, and the emotions in her voice became more evident, “Could it be that you want the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror?”

When White Snow mentioned the ‘Lunar Prison Divine Mirror’, Fey could see Purple Dress and Blue Heart’s eyes tremble, and expressions of shock appeared on the faces of all of the surrounding Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies.

Lunar Prison Divine Mirror? What’s that? Fey felt quite confused – she had never heard of this before, but from the Moon Goddesses’ and the Moon God Representatives’ reactions, it seemed to be quite an amazing thing. Of course, she wouldn’t admit that they were here for one of the Lunar Scourge’s orbs, otherwise she would expose the Lunar Scourge. As such, this ‘Lunar Prison Divine Mirror’ became a perfect scapegoat for her. She smiled as she said, “Apart from the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror, what else would I spend such great effort to come here for?”

“Y-You... How could you do this? The Lunar Prison Divine Mirror is the most important thing to our clan, and if it falls into the hands of evildoers... everything will be over!” Blue Heart desperately struggled, feeling incredibly worried.

White Snow slowly closed her eyes, and in the next second, her voice travelled like a soft wind throughout the entire Moon God Palace, “Starry Moon, Mercy Heart, Spirit Dream, you’re closest to the First Shrine. Immediately go there to guard the First Shrine and stop any intruders trying to steal the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror.”

Chapter 740 - Fighting 3 Moon God Representatives

Ling Chen had no idea what had happened over at Fey's side. He ran as fast as he could, and soon, he exited the Seventh Shrine and entered the Fourth Shrine. Soon, he was quite close to passing through the Fourth Shrine. Because of Fey's reveal, most of the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies had gone to where she was, and they were trapped there by her. As he ran, Ling Chen did not see a single Moon God Representative or Moon Lady, making his passage incredibly smooth.

Whoosh!

A wild gale blew past as Ling Chen passed through the Fourth Shrine. With Broken Shadow activated, it had only taken him 10 or so seconds to make it this far. However, when he reached the area where the First Shrine should have been, he could only see a massive pool with no Shrine to be seen.

Seeing the beautiful to the extreme pool made Ling Chen feel incredibly surprised. In his hurry, he suddenly realised something, and he looked up. There, low in the sky, there was a cloud, and on it was the Shrine.

It was there!

“Go up, Snow Cherry!”

Snow Cherry's body immediately turned into a white blur as she rushed upwards. Just as Snow Cherry reached the same height as the Shrine, 3 dangerous auras descended from above.

Ling Chen felt quite shocked, but he did not panic. He did not retreat, and he instead charged at the 3 auras head-on.

Bang! Bang! Bang!!

3 white lights containing the might of the Mysterious God grade

slammed onto Ling Chen's body, and they were reflected by the Evil God's Mask. Suddenly, 3 incredibly beautiful women wearing Moon God Light Dresses appeared before him.

Starry Moon God Representative! Mercy Heart God Representative! Spirit Dream God Representative!

“How dare you, you thief! You dare to intrude into the Moon God Palace? Hurry and surrender!”

If it was under normal circumstances, Ling Chen would have assailed them with obscenities when he saw these 3 goddess like beauties even if they were Moon God Representatives. However, right now, every second was desperately bought by Fey's efforts, so he couldn't waste a single second.

Ling Chen roared as his body began to glow with light:

“[Soul Sacrifice]!”

“[War God's Fury]!”

“[Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor]!”

“Ding... the Libra Orb's effects have been activated, [Soul Sacrifice], [War God Fury], and [Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor]'s cooldown times have been reset.”

“Ding... the Aries Orb's effects have been activated. [Soul Sacrifice] and the [War God's Fury]'s consumption costs and negative effects have been nullified.”

In an instant, Ling Chen rushed at the 3 Moon God Representatives in his strongest state like a ferocious tiger.

“You're seeking death!”

The 3 Moon God Representatives frowned as anger filled their eyes. They gathered their powerful Moon God power and attacked Ling Chen simultaneously. An explosion sounded out as Ling

Chen's body was hit by the 3 rays of Moon God power. However, with [Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor] activated, he did not receive any damage, nor was his charge stopped in the slightest. He savagely slammed into the Moon God Representatives, who were completely unprepared, and rushed towards the entrance of the First Shrine. However, his body was suddenly blocked by an invisible wall, and he was blasted backwards.

Before Ling Chen had come, the Moon God Representatives had set up a temporarily defensive barrier together!

The Moon God Representatives immediately attacked from behind Ling Chen, but these attacks were completely ignored by Ling Chen, allowing the attacks to land on his body. He roared as he charged towards the invisible barrier, raising his Chilling Star and Dark Samsara and smashing them onto the barrier.

“[Eight Directions Annihilation]! [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest]!”

“Ding... the Libra Orb's effects have been activated. [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] cooldown time has been reset.”

Boom! Boom!!!

2 massive explosions sounded out as two 1 metre long cracks appeared in front of him.

In his strongest state, Ling Chen's 2 strongest attacks were able to deal monstrous damage. However, he was facing a barrier created by the power of 3 Moon God Representatives. To be able to create 2 cracks in a single attack was already quite incredible, and it greatly shocked the 3 Moon God Representatives. However, to Ling Chen, this was far from enough. He started to continuously land attacks on the barrier; barrages of Heaven-Destroying Slashes rained down on the invisible shield, creating extraordinary explosion sounds.

More and more cracks grew on the barrier, and they started to extend.

“Hurry and protect the barrier!!”

The attacks from the 3 Moon God Representatives were still unable to deal any damage to Ling Chen, and they could not affect him in the slightest. They finally realised that Ling Chen must have used some sort of incredibly powerful defensive skill, and they gave up on attacking. Instead, they appeared before the defensive barrier and started to pour their power into the barrier.

Immediately, the cracks that Ling Chen had created started to close. In less than 5 seconds, all of the cracks had disappeared. Every time Ling Chen’s powerful attacks created a crack, it closed after half a second.

If this was a barrier created by a single Moon God Representative, even if that Moon God Representative used all of her power to sustain it, Ling Chen would definitely have been able to destroy it with enough time. If it was 2 Moon God Representatives, it would be almost impossible for him to destroy the barrier. And now, there were 3... each of these Moon God Representatives were Mysterious God grade experts! In a direct battle, he would not be able to defeat any of them.

Ling Chen finally stopped attacking because attacking would simply be wasting his time. If he attacked the Moon God Representatives, he would not have any chance in making it into the First Shrine in time. Ling Chen frowned as he roared, “Snow Cherry!”

As Ling Chen roared, Snow Cherry raised her head, gathering her bloodline’s power. The 7 tails behind her spread out, looking like 7 white flames.

“Sky-Toppling Dance!!” With no other choice, Ling Chen activated Snow Cherry’s limited-use ultimate skill!

Snow Cherry's body immediately shone with a piercingly-bright light, instantly enveloping everything. Even the 3 Moon God Representatives closed their eyes. Within the white light, Snow Cherry's body slowly rose up, and her 7 tails waved as they shot out 7 lights towards different directions, turning into images of Snow Cherry.

Whoosh...

In the next instant, the white light disappeared as if it had been blown away by a gale. In front of the barrier was no longer just 1 Ling Chen and Snow Cherry... but 8 of them!

They had the same equipment, weapons, expressions, and gazes... even their auras were the exact same. The Moon God Representative stared in surprise, having never seen such a thing before. The 8 Ling Chens simultaneously raised their weapons, landing 16 Heaven-Destroying Slashes on the invisible barrier.

BOOM!!!!

The might of 16 attacks seemed to shake the heavens and the earth, and 10 or so criss-crossed cracks appeared on the barrier. The Moon God Representative were shocked back to their senses, and they continued to pour all of their power into the barrier, causing the cracks to quickly fade.

BOOM!!!

BOOM!!!!

BOOM!!!!!!

Each round of attacks became heavier than the last, and more and more cracks started to appear. If 1 Ling Chen could not break through the barrier, what about 8?

As Ling Chen furiously attacked, he soon found that he was not able to damage the barrier faster than it was restored even with 8 of him attacking simultaneously.

Ling Chen became completely furious. All 8 Ling Chens raised their hands and gathered power...

“[Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest]!
[Nirvana Samsara]!”

The 8 Ling Chens simultaneously released the most powerful skill from the War God’s profession and from Dark Samsara. This was the most devastating attack Ling Chen could release, and it contained all of his hope.

“Hah!!!!”

As the 8 Ling Chens roared, the attacks landed on the 3 Moon God Representatives’ barrier...

BOOOOM!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

The explosion that rang out sounded as if the heavens had collapsed, causing the space around all of them to violently tremble. The 3 Moon God Representatives cried out, and they were blasted back, their faces becoming as pale as a sheet. The invisible barrier was now completely covered with cracks, looking like a piece of fractured glass...

That’s right, it was fractured... but it had not been completely destroyed!

“S-Stop him!!”

The 3 Moon God Representatives quickly reacted, and they once again sent their power into the barrier. Ling Chen spaced out for a moment, before savagely attacking again.

“Final Samsara!!”

“Heaven-Destroying Slash!”

“Chilling Star Cosmos!”

.....

After releasing his most powerful skill, the Libra Orb’s effects did

not take effect. Otherwise, if he had casted it again, it might have been enough to destroy the barrier. Ling Chen's buffs had not disappeared yet, but his current attacks could not compare to his 2 strongest skills. As he rapidly attacked, the barrier trembled, but the number of cracks did not increase. Instead, it started to decrease...

Ling Chen had used the Sky-Toppling Dance and the Shura's ultimate skill, [Shura's Death Domain] to defeat the Undead War God. How would he take down these 3 Moon God Representatives, who, together, were more powerful than the Undead War God?!

Ling Chen had destroyed the Fairy Realm's barrier with the [Shura's Death Domain], and he had defeated the Undead War God with that skill again. If he could use that skill again, a single Ling Chen would be able to destroy these 3 Moon God Representatives' barrier. However, the [Shura's Death Domain] could only be used twice, so it could not be used anymore.

Looking at the barrier, which was rapidly being repaired, Ling Chen felt a chill within his heart. At this moment, he heard Fey's weak voice, "Have you retrieved it yet? I can't hold on any longer... the Dimensional Domain will only last for another 10 seconds or so!"

Chapter 741 - Hiding

Ling Chen's pupils contracted, and he immediately made a decision and yelled back, "Fey! I've failed over here, and I can't even enter the First Shrine! Hurry and leave!"

"... What are you going to do?"

"I have a new plan; I'm going to stay here... hurry up and leave! I'll be fine!!"

"But..."

"No buts! Leave! If you leave, we'll both be fine. If you don't leave, both of us will die! Listen to me!" Ling Chen was almost roaring.

"Alright! If you dare to trick me, I'll bite your thing in half!!"

More and more fractures appeared on the Dimensional Domain restricting the 3 Moon Goddesses. In another few seconds, they would be able to escape. Fey stood up and looked towards where Ling Chen was, then gritted her teeth and used the last of the Lachesis' power to disappear.

The next second after she disappeared, the Dimensional Domain shattered...

While Fey was activating the Lachesis, Ling Chen raised his right wrist... after he had entered the Moon God Island, he had done all he could to avoid using the Lunar Scourge to prevent it from being revealed. If that happened, he would be hunted down by the Moon God Clan, and with his current strength, it would be impossible for him to obtain the Saint Orb.

Now, he could only pray that the 3 Moon God Representatives in front of him would not recognise the Lunar Scourge's power.

"Moon... Flare!!"

A blinding light pierced their surroundings. The 3 Moon God

Representatives cried out, tightly squeezing their eyes shut and covering their eyes with their hands. Apart from the whiteness, they could not see anything else.

5 seconds later, the nightmarish light finally disappeared. The 3 Moon God Representatives regained their vision, and they saw Ling Chen still furiously attacking the barrier. However, there were no longer 8 Ling Chens but just 1... they instantly let out a breath of relief. It seemed that his cloning skill had ended.

“The Moon Goddesses have escaped from the spatial restriction!” Starry Moon God Representative happily cried out.

“Really? That’s great!” Mercy Heart God Representative relaxed and looked at Ling Chen as she said, “Intruder, you have no chance anymore! Hurry up and surrender.”

After speaking, she suddenly waved her hand, shooting 2 moon-white arrows at Ling Chen. Ling Chen, who was still attacking the barrier, did not expect that the Moon God Representatives would stop caring about the barrier and instead attack him. As such, he could not react in time to dodge or to stop the attacks...

Bang! The first arrow was reflected by the Evil God’s Mask.

The second arrow hit Ling Chen in the centre of his forehead...

-1,020,000!

A massive damage figure arose from Ling Chen’s head – this damage figure was enough to kill him nearly 10 times. Ling Chen immediately stopped attacking the barrier, and his gaze became blank as he fell from the sky, smashing onto the ground below with a ‘bang’.

“Hmph! You thought too highly of yourself; you dared to intrude into our Moon God Palace?” The Mercy Heart God Representative, who had killed Ling Chen, said as she harrumphed. Ling Chen’s body remained on the ground for a while before slowly disappearing amidst a white light.

At that moment, a white light flashed at the entrance of the First Shrine as White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart simultaneously appeared

“Your ladyships!” The 3 Moon God Representatives hurriedly bowed and greeted the Moon Goddesses.

“Where’s that person?” White Snow calmly asked as she looked around.

“Replying to your ladyship, that human’s attacking power was very strong, and he had powerful defensive and cloning skills, so he was almost able to break past our defences. Luckily, his protection abilities were limited, and he was killed by Mercy Heart. His corpse just landed below. However, he’s most likely an otherworlder, so his corpse disappeared after he died. He must have returned to one of the continents to revive,” Starry Moon respectfully replied.

Blue Heart’s eyes shone with shock, “Eh? The 3 of you almost weren’t able to stop him? White Snow, Purple Dress, aren’t these otherworlders incredibly weak? How come 2 incredibly powerful otherworlders appeared so suddenly?”

“There are billions of otherworlders, so it’s only normal that there are some extraordinary ones,” White Snow lightly replied. “Starry Moon, Mercy Heart, Spirit Dream, did you get that person’s name?”

The 3 Moon God Representatives looked at each other and then shook their heads. Spirit Dream lowered her head as she said, “Apologies, your ladyships. Just then, everything happened too suddenly, and that person’s attacks were too powerful, so we had to be fully focused. We didn’t have any time to look into his information.”

White Snow did not blame them, and she lightly nodded. “No matter, that was the correct decision. Their aim in coming here was to take away the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror. If they took it

away, not just us, but the entire Mystic Moon world would have suffered a catastrophe.”

“But the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror can only be activated with Moon God power. Even if they obtained it, it wouldn’t be much use to them, would it? Why would they want to steal it?” Blue Heart asked in curiosity.

“Since they wanted it, they might have other ways to use it,” White Snow said as she slightly frowned. “That girl called Fey possesses the Lachesis, and even we can’t resist the Lachesis’ power. If she comes again, we might not be able to stop her again. Looks like I’ll have to carry the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror on my person.”

After saying this, she waved her slim hand, and a mirror surrounded by white light quickly flew out of the First Shrine. It landed in her hand and then slowly disappeared.

“2 people were able to enter our Moon God Palace without us detecting it. Looks like we’ve grown complacent after such a long period of time. Purple Dress, come with me to create another Detection Barrier outside the Moon God Palace. Even if someone comes by teleporting, we’ll be able to detect them immediately.”

“Yes.”

All of them believed that Ling Chen and Fey had intruded into the Moon God Palace to steal the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror, and they did not guess that their true goal was to steal the Moon God Orb.

.....

“Fey, are you safe now?”

“I guess you could say I’m safe. What about you? Did you die?”

“.... No. Where are you?”

“The Sea Emperor Palace! After leaving the Moon God Island, I

fell into the water and came here. Otherwise, without any spatial energy, it'd be easy for me to be caught by the Moon God Clan.”

“Sea Emperor Palace? Where’s that?”

“I’ll tell you another time. Where are you now?”

“The Seventh Shrine’s Water Celestial Pavilion.”

“.....”

“I’m going to wait for an opportunity. I might have to wait for a long time, so tell the others not to worry about me.”

After ending the call with Fey, Ling Chen deeply breathed out and leaned against the wall behind him. Even though it was very safe here, Ling Chen still took precautions and kept [Vanishing Shadow] activated.

When he had released Moon Flare back then, the 3 Moon God Representatives’ auras that had locked onto him had disappeared. Following that, he had quickly used a Spatial Orb to return to the Water Celestial Pavilion. Because of the barrier around the Moon God Palace, Spatial Orbs were not able to take him anywhere outside of the Moon God Palace. However, he would be able to freely move within the Moon God Palace.

The ‘Ling Chen’ that had been killed by the Moon God Representatives was the clone that Ling Chen had left there after cancelling out the 6 other ones. This was to make the Moon God Clan believe that he had been killed so that he could safely hide in the Water Celestial Pavilion.

This time, their plan to enter the Moon God Palace and retrieve the Moon God Orb had completely failed. If they left and wanted to re-enter, it would be as difficult as scaling the heavens. In fact, they might not even be able to come close to the Moon God Island again. As such, he could not leave, and he had hidden here as he thought of more ideas.

He was waiting for an opportunity... for the 3 Moon Goddesses to

leave. As long as they left, with his max-level [Vanishing Shadow], it would be difficult for anyone to detect him. When that time came, he would be able to stealthily enter the First Shrine and obtain the Moon God Orb.

However, before he had come, the Forgotten God Representative told him that the 3 Moon Goddesses very rarely left the Moon God Palace.

“Fey, after returning to Ling Tian City, pass the Underworld King a message through the trade route. Tell him to invite the 3 Moon Goddesses to the Underworld or some other place to meet... as for the reason, ask him to think of one.” Out of all of the people Ling Chen knew, the Underworld King and the Sea Emperor were the only ones who could invite the 3 Moon Goddesses out.

“Luring the tigers out from the mountain?”

“That’s right!”

Fey thought for a while before replying, “Since you want to do this, then there’s no need to ask the Underworld King; I’ll just ask the Sea Emperor to do it. He’s no less reputable than the Underworld King, and if he makes it seem like a serious matter, he might just be able to get them to leave.”

“The Sea Emperor? The Sea Emperor Helos? How could he listen to you and risk offending the Moon God Clan? At least the Underworld King is my father-in-law!”

“The Sea Emperor is my adoptive father, and he treats me like his own daughter. What do you think?”

“... What?!?!”

“One day, I was on the sea and saved a person from a Sea Storm Dragon. It turned out that he was the Sea Emperor’s son, who had left home, and he introduced me to the Sea Emperor. After seeing the Lachesis, he was determined to marry his son to me, but I refused. As such, he decided to take me as his daughter. I thought

that having the Sea Emperor as a backer would be pretty good, so I agreed.”

Ling Chen: “@#%...”

Time quickly passed, and Ling Chen continued to wait within the Water Celestial Pavilion while maintaining [Vanishing Shadow]. During this entire time, he did not log off because he was not sure whether he would appear here or be sent back to the Forgotten Continent if he logged off and logged back on. If he was sent back to the Forgotten Continent, all hope would be lost.

Just like that, 3 days passed.

Waiting in hiding for 3 days without doing anything would be unimaginable torture to most people, but it was nothing big to Ling Chen. The Water Celestial Pavilion was an extremely good hiding spot, and let alone other people coming in, even the senses of the Moon God Representatives or Moon Ladies could not enter this space. The Water Celestial God Representative who had lived here had died during the Shura’s Devastation 10,000 years ago. As such, this Water Celestial Pavilion would not have had a resident for 10,000 years, so even though it still existed, it had most likely been forgotten. No one would come near here or pay attention to this place.

Chapter 742 - The Exposed Lunar Scourge

Today was the fourth day that Ling Chen was hiding in the Water Celestial Pavilion.

The previous day, he had received excellent news from Fey – the Sea Emperor Helos made up some sort of reason, and White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart all agreed to meet him at the Sea Emperor Palace. And the meeting was today.

As such, Ling Chen waited for the entire morning. Finally, he heard Fey’s voice, “They’ve arrived at the Sea Emperor Palace! All 3 of them are here! Hurry and act now; this is an incredibly rare opportunity!”

“Alright! Please thank the Sea Emperor for me!”

Ling Chen, who had calmed his mind for 4 days, became incredibly excited. Last time, he had already confirmed that he would not be detected by the powerful Moon God Representatives with max-level [Vanishing Shadow] as long as he was careful. In that case, as long as the 3 Moon Goddesses were not within the Moon God Palace, he would be able to freely travel within the Moon God Palace with [Vanishing Shadow].

“I have to succeed this time!” A calm smile appeared on Ling Chen’s face. Even though their previous plan had failed horribly, he felt quite pleased that they were able to outsmart the 3 Moon Goddesses. Ling Chen took out a Spatial Orb and shattered it. Following this, he disappeared from within the Water Celestial Palace, his target being the First Shrine.

The space around him changed, and when Ling Chen reappeared, he was high in the sky, facing the First Shrine in the sky.

At this moment, the First Shrine’s doors were not closed, and they were instead wide open without any barriers.

The heavens are on my side! Ling Chen inwardly cheered. Just as

he was about to reactivate [Vanishing Shadow], a soft woman's voice sounded out from behind him, "Hehe, the big rat finally appeared."

At the same time, 3 boundless and terrifying auras descended from above, locking onto Ling Chen's body tightly. 3 different-coloured figures appeared before him: one was wearing a white dress and had a peaceful look on her face; one was wearing a purple dress, her eyes like a cold star; one was wearing a blue dress, looking free and unrestrained, and she even stuck her tongue out at him.

Looking at the 3 people in front of him, Ling Chen's entire body froze. His eyes were fixed on their faces and bodies, and he completely spaced out.

These 3 women looked exactly the same, but they gave off completely different feelings. Their looks were all enough to bring about the downfall of a country... if he had to describe them with 1 word, it would be 'perfect'. In fact, looking at them from so close, one would scarcely be able to believe that such a beauty could exist in the world. Ling Chen had only experienced this feeling when looking at Qi Yue before, and now, there were 3 such women right in front of him.

Soft hair, beautiful eyes, crescent-like eyebrows, cherry-like lips... no matter where it was on their faces, even the finest details were beautiful to the extreme. At the same time, they gave off a divine aura that made one want to submit to them and not offend them at all. Their dresses clung to their bodies, revealing exquisite curves. Their breasts and bottoms were large and round, while their waists were quite slim. Their eyes were also peerlessly beautiful, but each shone completely differently. Their pink lips glistened, giving either gentle, cold, or cute smiles, and one simply could not find any imperfections with their looks.

Even just 1 of these exquisitely beautiful women would be enough to make any man feel as if he had lost his soul; for there to be 3 of

them who looked exactly the same, the effect on Ling Chen were many times greater.

Ling Chen's spacing out was not just because of how beautiful they were – rather, that was only a small part of it. Right now, he did not allow himself to marvel at their beauty at all. It was because the pressure, looks, and clothes... they caused 3 names to appear within Ling Chen's mind: The Goddess Fate White Snow, the Goddess Order Purple Dress, and the Goddess Freedom Blue Heart!!

Impossible! How could it be? Aren't they at the Sea Emperor Palace already? That was what Fey just told me; if she didn't personally see them there, she wouldn't have used such a confident tone!

Just what was going on? Could it be... them leaving was an illusion? A trap to bait him out? But as the 3 Moon Goddesses, they should have been able to find him easily – why would they resort to such methods?

“What a surprise. Purple Dress, looks like your intuition was right.” White Snow glanced at Ling Chen for a moment before looking away and saying calmly, “Evil God's Mask! So you're the successor of the Feng Chen Sect. The Feng Chen Sect's concealment abilities are unparalleled under the heavens; no wonder you could enter our Moon God Palace despite being so weak.”

Purple Dress did not say anything, and she only coldly looked at Ling Chen. For some reason, her frown was becoming deeper and deeper, and her gaze was becoming colder and colder.

“Eh? Feng Chen Sect? But wasn't that bad old man from the Feng Chen Sect locked up by us in the Lunar Sky Hell a thousand years ago? How could he have a successor?” Blue Heart asked in surprise. “But that mask seems to be the Feng Chen Sect's Evil God's Mask.”

“I don't know; perhaps the Feng Chen Sect had successors other

than Xiao Feng Chen a thousand years ago,” White Snow casually replied. However, the thought that Xiao Feng Chen had escaped from the Lunar Sky Hell never crossed her mind because that seemed like an impossibility to her. Back when the Moon God Clan’s ancestors built the Lunar Sky Hell, they had left an opening, which was Spatial Stones. Apart from Spatial Stones, there was no other way to leave.

“Is that so? Well, it doesn’t matter. We’ve caught a big rat!” Blue Heart blinked, excitedly sticking her tongue out at Ling Chen. “Hehehe, big rat, are you feeling very surprised?”

“Did you discover me long ago?” Ling Chen deeply breathed in, forcing himself to calm down.

“No,” White Snow shook her head. “It was just a sudden feeling that Purple Dress had yesterday, but we all thought she was imagining things. We just happened to discover you.”

“Yesterday, when the Sea Emperor sent an invitation, we knew that he was trying to make us leave the Moon God Palace. This was because that girl called Fey had the aura of the Sea Emperor Helos around her. This sort of aura is only on those who the Sea Emperor Helos is closest with, allowing them to communicate with him wherever they are.”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

“Not too long after that girl called Fey left, the Sea Emperor Helos suddenly sent us an invitation, and he requested that we personally go. We thought that Fey had asked the Sea Emperor Helos to lure us away so that she could come here again.”

“So you agreed, but instead of going, you created clones that went while you stayed here?” Ling Chen inwardly sighed. So it seemed that even Fey didn’t know that her relationship with the Sea Emperor had been exposed. Since that was the case, how could their plan have succeeded?

“That’s right, the ones who went to the Sea Emperor Palace are clones we made with a portion of our power. I’m sure that even Helos will not be able to tell within a short period of time,” White Snow said calmly. “I never thought that the one we were waiting for was not Fey but you. To be able to remain in our Moon God Palace for 4 days without being detected, you’re definitely the first in history to do so.”

“Purple Dress, I’ll leave his punishment to you. Even though he’s an incredibly weak otherworlder and falls outside our jurisdiction normally, since he intruded into our Moon God Palace and tried to steal the Lunar Hell Divine Mirror, he can’t be forgiven.”

Lunar Prison Divine Mirror? Ling Chen felt quite confused. What’s that?

Purple Dress did not respond, and she continued to stand there without moving.

“Purple Dress, what’s wrong?” White Snow seemed to detect that there was something off about Purple Dress, and she turned to look at her. Feeling the killing intent she was emanating, White Snow felt quite shocked. Purple Dress had always been cold and emotionless, and she never showed any mercy when dealing punishments. However, that was only to extreme evildoers. When facing beings that were not incredible evildoers, even though she was cold, she would never have any killing intent. However, facing this otherworlder who had intruded into the Moon God Palace, her aura was becoming colder and colder. White Snow had never seen this sort of reaction from Purple Dress before.

“Eh, Purple Dress, are you alright? Why do you look a bit strange? Could it be that he’s an incredibly evil evildoer?” Blue Heart asked in surprise after seeing Purple Dress’ reaction.

The killing intent around Purple Dress became greater and greater, and her frown became incredibly deep. Finally, as she tightly stared at Ling Chen, she uttered 2 words that resounded

like thunder in White Snow and Blue Heart's ears. "Lunar... Scourge!!"

Ling Chen's expression froze, and his entire body felt incredibly cold.

Before, Qi Yue had told him that Moon God Representatives might not necessarily be able to recognise the Lunar Scourge because the last time it appeared was 10,000 years ago. Moon God Representatives couldn't live for too long, so those who had seen it in the past had already passed away. However, the 3 Moon Goddesses would definitely recognise it because they were the ones who had destroyed it. Adding on the fact that they were extremely sensitive towards the Lunar Scourge and needed to prevent it from reappearing, even after 10,000 years, they were still familiar with its aura!

When Ling Chen had seen the 3 Moon Goddesses appear, he had thought "crap" to himself before hiding the Lunar Scourge under his armour. At the same time, he hoped that the 3 Moon Goddesses wouldn't think that the Lunar Scourge was on him because he was a player.

However, unexpectedly, the Lunar Scourge had still been exposed... and it was to the 3 people to whom it must not be exposed.

Chapter 743 - Merciless Heaven's Jealousy

“Broken Shadow! Moon Shadow! Moon Grief!”

The instant Purple Dress called out the Lunar Scourge's name the Lunar Scourge already erupted with a dark silver light before White Snow and Blue Heart could even reveal expressions of shock. Ling Chen simultaneously cast Moon Shadow and Moon Grief, and he immediately activated Broken Shadow and rushed backwards.

However, before Ling Chen could move a single step, his body suddenly trembled as an expression of surprise appeared on his face. He found that his body had also been frozen. Let alone his feet, even his fingers were unable to be moved at all. The 3 pressures locking on to him were still present.

“You want to run away? It's a pity that things won't go as you want!” Purple Dress' voice sounded out coldly behind him. Her index finger on her right hand lightly drew an arc, sealing Ling Chen in a powerful space barrier, making it impossible for him to move at all.

“Aiya! This light is the Lunar Scourge's Moon Shadow and Moon Grief! It really is the Lunar Scourge!!” Blue Heart's clear voice became a few decibels louder, filled with deep shock. It was evident how surprised and fearful she felt upon seeing the Lunar Scourge again.

“Not only is it the Lunar Scourge, it has 12 of its God Orbs!” White Snow's voice was no longer calm, and her beautiful face trembled with shock. The only thing that could cause the calm and tranquil White Snow to react in such a way was the Lunar Scourge.

White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart's voices all slightly trembled. Even though 10,000 years had passed, the shadow that the Lunar Scourge had left on them had not completely disappeared. After seeing the Lunar Scourge's light again, it was as

if they had seen a terrifying demon being reborn, and their hearts were filled with terror. Ling Chen's heart also trembled – What's going on? I evidently activated Moon Shadow and Moon Grief, so how come they can talk, move, and even use spatial skills to restrict me?

The Lunar Scourge's Moon Shadow and Moon Grief forcefully applied the effects on its targets, and it could not be resisted! What was going on?

Could it be that the Lunar Scourge's lunar skills were useless against them?

“The Moon God Orb's reaction was not without reason. The Lunar Scourge has actually resurfaced, but we never detected it. What I never expected was that it would attach itself to an otherworlder... no wonder we were unable to find it even though we had warnings.” Snow Cherry said with a slight tremble in her voice while looking at the Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen's right wrist.

The Lunar Scourge, was after all, an item left behind by gods. Even the 3 of them working together were unable to destroy it, and they could only separate its orbs and seal the Lunar Scourge's main body into a bottomless abyss. Who would have thought that the Lunar Scourge would reappear once again 10,000 years later? What's more, this Lunar Scourge already had the 12 Mysterious God grade orbs!

“Heavens! It already has 12 Orbs!” Cold sweat appeared on Blue Heart's forehead. After crying out in shock, she let out a breath. “Luckily they're only the Mysterious God grade Orbs. If any of them were Saint Destroyer Orbs, things would have been bad – even we wouldn't be able to resist its power. Eh? Wait, since he has the Lunar Scourge, he should know that he should be avoiding us. Since he already has the 12 God Orbs, there'll be nothing we can do about him even if he was discovered by us if he finds a Saint Orb. Why didn't he continue to look for Saint Orbs instead of coming

here... it's as if he was delivering himself up to us. If it wasn't for him creeping in by himself, we probably wouldn't have been able to find him before he found the Star God Orb or the Sun God Orb.”

Blue Heart's words caused Ling Chen to stare in surprise... if he had a single Saint Orb, they would be unable to do anything to him? What did she mean? Could it be that the current Lunar Scourge posed no threat to them?

White Snow shook her head as she said with a serious expression, “No! He came here for a Saint Orb! He definitely found out through some special means that there was a Saint Orb in the Moon God Palace, so he risked it by coming here. That's his true goal, not the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror!”

“That should be right.” Purple Dress nodded with a cold expression as she looked at Ling Chen and said, “It's a pity that you were too naïve. You thought that you'd be able to do as you pleased in the Moon God Palace with your Feng Chen Sect's concealment and escaping abilities? If our Moon God Palace was so easy to trick, the Moon God Clan would have long since stopped existing in this world! However, it's because of your naivety that we were able to find out that the Lunar Scourge had resurfaced. If you had gone to find the Star God Orb or Sun God Orb, the consequences would have been unimaginable.”

“The Lunar Scourge's power originates from the moon, and our Moon God Clan's power also originates from the moon. Legend says that the Lunar Scourge was created by one of our Moon God Clan's ancestors in ancient times. As such, our Moon God Clan has a certain degree of resistance towards the Lunar Scourge. Even with 12 God Orbs, the Lunar Scourge is unable to affect us. However, even with a single Saint Orb, would have been unable to resist its power. If you summoned the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] and the [Stellar Scourge Divine Armour], even as a player, it would be difficult for the 3 of us to defeat you.”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

“Back then, the Lunar Scourge that was attached to the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor only had 12 God Orbs and no Saint Orbs. Back then, even when he died, he didn’t know that the Moon God Orb was with us, while the Star God Orb was with the traitors, the Night Demon Clan. The Sun God Orb is said to have been destroyed by our ancestors so that the Lunar Scourge could never be complete. The Lunar Scourge’s condition is exactly the same as it was back then! As such, the conclusion is bound to be the same!”

“With 12 God Orbs, one is able to release the power of the Shura. However, you’re not the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor, and with your strength, even if you become a Shura, you’ll still be vastly inferior to the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor!”

Her voice was filled with imposing might, and it sounded in Ling Chen’s ears, telling him the truth that he had not known... after unlocking [Eternal Moon Shadow] and [Eternal Moon Flare], Ling Chen had been wondering why the Shura back then had fallen at the Moon God Clan’s hands. With a single [Eternal Moon Shadow], he would have been able to freeze the Moon Goddesses and the Void Dragon God in place. With his attack power, if he gathered his strength, he would have been able to kill a Moon Goddess with a single hit. He could have also used [Eternal Moon Flare] to permanently blind them, making it difficult for them to threaten him...

Ling Chen had thought that the Shura had not thought of using these 2 overpowered skills because he had lost his reason. Only now did he find out that the Shura from back then did not have the complete Lunar Scourge and only had the 12 God Orbs as well! Just like him, he did not have a single Saint Orb!

Otherwise, how could he have lost to the 3 Moon Goddesses?

At the same time, he also found out that the Star God Orb was with the Night Demon Clan. However, the Night Demon Clan had been beaten into hiding by the Moon God Clan, and it had perhaps already gone extinct. Where would he find them? As for the Sun

God Orb being destroyed... was that true? If it was, then wouldn't that mean that the Lunar Scourge would never be completed?

However, what was the use of thinking about all that? Now that the Lunar Scourge had been revealed and he was trapped by the 3 Moon Goddesses, would he still have an opportunity to find the Star God Orb?

“White Snow, Purple Dress, what should we do now? The same thing as 10,000 years ago? But he's not a Shura, and he looks so weak; much, much weaker than that Chi Xuan Sword Emperor,” Blue Heart asked as she looked at White Snow and Purple Dress in deference.

White Snow slightly frowned as she said slowly, “We'll separate the Lunar Scourge's 12 God Orbs again and seal the Lunar Scourge's main body in a place that will never be found.”

“But in order to separate the Lunar Scourge, we need to kill the one it's attached to and take it from him. Since this person is an otherworlder, no matter how many times he dies, he'll still revive. Even White Snow can't change this,” Blue Heart said worriedly.

“Hmph, we'll know after we try! To dare to use this evil item is in itself an unforgiveable crime. No matter what sort of cruel punishments we give out, they're fully deserved! White Snow, help me.”

White Snow lightly nodded and drew an arc with her right hand, a white glow appearing around the sealed Ling Chen.

“Ding... you have been imprisoned in the ‘Cage of Fate’. For the next 5 minutes, all equipment except the Lunar Scourge will be ineffective.”

“Ding... you have been imprisoned in the ‘Cage of Fate’. Within 3 hours, you will be unable to use any teleportation items or skills. After dying, you will respawn on the spot, and you will not be able to return to a revival point.”

The system announcements startled Ling Chen, and he began to panic. At this moment, Purple Dress frowned and shot out a ray of white moonlight at Ling Chen's chest, piercing through his chest.

-8,960,000!

The Evil God's Mask's effects did not trigger because of the 'Cage of Fate'. None of Ling Chen's equipment, whether they were weapons or defensive equipment or jewellery, had any effect. This damage figure hovered above Ling Chen's head, causing his HP bar to be instantly emptied out.

Death.

This was the first time he had truly died after obtaining the Lunar Scourge.

The spatial restriction disappeared, and Ling Chen's body fell backwards the same way he had before when he had been 'killed' by the 3 Moon God Representatives, crashing onto the ground.

"Ding... you have died."

"Ding... the Lunar Scourge's lunar skill [Heaven's Jealousy] has taken affect, and your level has fallen to LVo."

"Ding... your pet Xiao Hui's level has fallen to LVo."

"Ding... your pet Xi Ling's level has fallen to LVo."

"Ding... your pet Leng'Er's level has fallen to LVo."

"Ding... your pet Snow Cherry's level has fallen to LVo."

"Ding... your pet Cai'Er's level has fallen to LVo."

[Author's Note]:

[White Snow]: I'm in charge of speaking.

[Purple Dress]: I'm in charge of acting.

[Blue Heart]: I'm in charge of being cute.

Chapter 744 - Sealed In The Lunar Sky Hell

As the cruel system announcements sounded out, Heaven's Jealousy, which Ling Chen had thought would never be activated, finally took effect. Ling Chen and all of his pets' levels dropped from LV70 to LVo.

The level that he had raised painstakingly for 1 year fell back to its starting point.

Ling Chen lay there, unable to control his body. He gave a long sigh and did not choose to revive because of White Snow's 'Cage of Fate'. Even if he revived, he would revive on the spot, and he would not be able to leave the Moon God Palace or escape from the Moon Goddesses.

The 3 Moon Goddesses descended and stood next to Ling Chen's corpse. Purple Dress stretched out her right hand, her palm facing towards Ling Chen's right wrist. A white light gathered at her palm, but after a while, the white light disappeared. Purple Dress shook her head. "It's not use! Even though he's dead, I'm unable to take the Lunar Scourge away from him. After he dies, he can revive an unlimited number of times. Even if he dies hundreds, or thousands, of times, he won't truly die, and the Lunar Scourge will not leave him."

Blue Heart's eyes suddenly lit up as she said excitedly, "That's right! After otherworlders die, they'll drop equipment and items! White Snow, if you kill him again and again, the Lunar Scourge will drop sooner or later, right?"

"No, it's useless. Even if he drops all of his equipment, it's impossible for the Lunar Scourge to drop," White Snow said while shaking her head.

"What should we do then? Could it be that there's nothing we can do? This person's so much weaker than that Chi Xuan Sword Emperor! The Lunar Scourge was way too cunning this time; it

actually attached itself to an otherworlder, a being that can never die a true death. It's simply too cunning!" Blue Heart started to feel worried.

"Looks like there's only one thing we can do," Purple Dress said calmly while looking up.

"That's right; it's the only way." White Snow thought of the same thing and nodded.

"Eh? What is it? What can we do? Ah, could it be..." The slow-witted Blue Heart finally realised what that thing was. "Seal him and the Lunar Scourge way in the Lunar Sky Hell?"

Ling Chen: "....."

"That's right! Since it's impossible for us to split up the Lunar Scourge, the best thing we can do is seal it into the Lunar Sky Hell. Perhaps this human has not committed any other crimes, but to have the Lunar Scourge and return its 12 God Orbs to it is in itself an unforgivable crime, so he deserves to be sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell!"

Purple Dress' voice was completely emotionless and icy, making Ling Chen's heart tremble. White Snow and Blue Heart nodded – they had personally experienced how terrifying the Shura created by the Lunar Scourge was. The shadow that the Shura had left on their hearts was not something they could forget, and the Lunar Scourge was not something that they could allow to exist in the Mystic Moon world. If it was sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell, unless the Lunar Sky Hell collapsed, both the Lunar Scourge and its host would not be able to escape. Even if the host never died, they would still be unable to find another Saint Orb.

"Since it's like that, we might as well seal him as soon as possible so as to prevent anything unexpected from happening," White Snow said as her eyes slightly trembled. Immediately, a pure, white light appeared around Ling Chen's body.

“Ding... you have been revived.”

As the system announcement sounded out, before Ling Chen could stand up, Purple Dress said in a cold voice, “Lunar Sky Hell Formation!”

A white light flashed, and soon, a moon-white magic formation appeared around him. The magic formation started to quickly spin, and Ling Chen’s body became blurry... finally, it disappeared along with Ling Chen. The world in front of Ling Chen turned from one of whiteness into one of darkness.

.....

When Ling Chen opened his eyes, everything around him was jet-black, and his back felt a bone-piercing coldness against the ground. The stinky and rotten smell that assaulted his nostrils almost caused him to vomit. Ling Chen used his arms to sit himself up, and he stared ahead of him. The air here was icy cold, and the atmosphere was incredibly dark and gloomy, feeling as if there were countless blades stabbing into every inch of his body.

“Ding... you have entered an extremely dangerous region – Lunar Sky Hell.”

“Ding... within the Lunar Sky Hell, your level will decrease by 1 every 24 hours. You will respawn where you die, and you will receive three times the normal death penalty. Please quickly leave.”

Hearing the system announcements, Ling Chen laughed self-deprecatingly and then closed his eyes before giving a long sigh.

The Lunar Sky Hell – he had once again come to this place, a place that Qi Yue had described as more terrifying than hell. However, what was different was that he had accidentally come here through the Fairy Realm last time, while this time he had been forced here.

Thinking back to how he had been sent here, Ling Chen started

to clench his fists. He had been slaughtered like a defenceless lamb without being given a chance to resist, retaliate, or even say a few words. Even though the 3 of them looked like young women, they were the sovereigns of this entire world. As for him, he was simply an incredibly weak player in their eyes. If he did not have the Lunar Scourge on him, they would not even bother to personally attack him.

Ling Chen had never felt so powerless and weak before, nor had he ever been defeated so pitifully... even though those who had defeated him were the 3 Moon Goddesses.

The rotten smell was incredibly dense, and it was almost unbearable. After a while, Ling Chen's eyes finally adjusted to the darkness. It was not completely dark here, and there was very dim light from somewhere unknown that allowed him to see about 10 metres around him.

Ling Chen opened his stats page and glanced at it before silently closing it. Falling to LVO and being sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell was undoubtedly the greatest setback he had experienced in this world. Ling Chen tightly clenched his fists and gnashed his teeth. After a while, he growled, "So what if I'm LVO? I still have all of my equipment and skills, as well as the Lunar Scourge; I'll definitely be able to climb up quickly! Lunar Sky Hell... I escaped last time, so there's no reason why I can't escape this time!"

With the max-level [Item Manipulation Technique], even though Ling Chen had fallen to LVO, he was still able to use all of his equipment. All of his skills were still present, and none of them had decreased in level.

Last time, he had used a Spatial Stone to leave the Lunar Sky Hell. Ling Chen immediately opened his bag and started to look through it. However, after looking through it many times, he could not find a single Spatial Stone – he had given his last one to the Dwarf Clan to create a World Boundary Scroll before he had left. Thinking about that, Ling Chen was filled with regret.

In the Lunar Sky Hell, he could not use teleport scrolls, nor could he use Spatial Orbs. When he died, he would revive on the spot, and the most terrifying thing... was that he could not log off!

In other words, if he could not find a way to leave, he would be forever imprisoned in this terrifying darkness. Let alone return to the Forgotten Continent, he would not even be able to return to the real world.

This was an incredibly terrifying and cruel place of despair that could never exist in a true virtual world!

Ling Chen tried using a teleport scroll and a Spatial Orb with a trace of hope, but they both failed. He looked through his entire bag, hoping to find something that would help him, but he was once again disappointed.

By now, Ling Chen had barely accustomed to the rotten smell, but his heart sank more and more. Following this, he summoned his pets.

Glows of light appeared as Xiao Hui, Xi Ling, Leng'Er, Cai'Er, and Snow Cherry appeared by his side.

“Ahh! Where is this place? It smells so bad!” Just as Cai'Er appeared, she cried out, covering her nose with her little hands.

Ling Chen did not have time to answer her – he lightly held Leng'Er's arm as he said, “Leng'Er, try to use your power to contact your father... the Underworld King. I'm unable to communicate with him, but maybe you can.”

After repeating himself a few times, Leng'Er finally understood and nodded her head in confusion. She fell silent for a while before slowly shaking her head. “I can't...”

“I see... that's alright.” Yet another trace of hope was extinguished, and Ling Chen forced a smile on his face. This place seemed to be completely separated from the outside world, and it was impossible to communicate with anyone outside. He was

unable to contact Fey, Yun Meng Xin, or the Underworld King... even Leng'Er, who possessed the same power as the Underworld King, was unable to communicate with him.

“Master, just where is this place? The atmosphere here makes me feel very uncomfortable,” Xi Ling asked as she walked over to Ling Chen in her humanoid form.

“This place is called the Lunar Sky Hell...”

Before Ling Chen could explain anything, Cai'Er suddenly cried out. She put her hands on her face, her crystal-like eyes filled with shock and terror. “Lunar Sky Hell... Ahh! Granny and Dad told me that this is a place that you can't leave once you go in. It's very dark and smelly inside, and there are many ferocious monsters and spirits... Ahh! Big brother, are we really in that place? Doesn't that mean we'll never be able to leave... I don't want to be here forever...”

The name ‘Lunar Sky Hell’ completely scared Cai'Er, and as she spoke, tears started to fall out of her eyes. After Ling Chen had mistakenly entered the Lunar Sky Hell from the Fairy realm, Greenwood had told all of the Fairies about the Lunar Sky Hell. From then onwards, it was the most terrifying place to Cai'Er, and she had never thought that she would one day come here.

Cai'Er's crying was Ling Chen's biggest headache. He hurriedly comforted her and said, “Don't cry Cai'Er. Don't worry; wasn't I able to escape the last time I came here? It's not so scary in here...”

“Sss~~ sss~~ sss~~”

Before Ling Chen could finish speaking, ghastly and terrifying hisses sounded out from in front of them. This sounded like a gigantic snake slithering towards them. This sound caused the terrified Cai'Er to rush behind Ling Chen with a ‘whoosh’, and her little body started to tremble... at that moment, the dark figure seemed to notice their existence, and it started to speed up. By the time it appeared in their field of vision, Cai'Er's body crumpled

and started to wail and cry, and even Ling Chen's body trembled.

The appearance of this dark figure was indescribably terrifying!

Chapter 745 - Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon, Volcanic Desolation Beast

Its body was not too big, and it looked like an incredibly ugly spider. Its entire body was jet-black, and it had 8 legs covered with spikes by its side.

[Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon]: Type: Demon, Grade: Celestial, Level: LV70, HP: 20,000,000. A member of the Demon Beast Clan, and it looks like a gigantic spider. Its entire body is covered with poison, and it is incredibly ferocious. It loves cruelly poisoning beings before devouring their corpses, and countless beings have died from its lethal poison. It is feared by all creatures. It was still a juvenile when the Demon Beast Clan was taken down by the Forgotten God Representative 3,000 years ago and sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell. It has not fallen, and it has become even more violent.

Passive Abilities: 100% chance of applying [Poison] when attacking, and it has extremely high Movement Speed and Attack Speed. Immune to all abnormal statuses and has 90% Resistance against Darkness attacks.

Attack Skills: [Demon Poison Gas], [Shattered Hell], [Rampage], [Claws of Death], [Dark Demonic Abyss].

Ultimate Skill: [Endless Poison Hell].

Weaknesses: Relatively weak Physical Defence, fears Light and Fire attacks (Light Resistance -50%, Fire Resistance-50%).

Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit immediately conveyed this information into Ling Chen's mind. In front of them was a LV70 poison-type Celestial grade monster!

If it was the Ling Chen from yesterday, he would have been able to deal with it easily. However, now, Ling Chen and his pets' levels were all LVo, and they had a 70 level gap between them and this

monster!

However, Ling Chen did not choose to immediately run away, and he instead equipped the Chilling Star and Dark Samsara, his eyes filled with battle intent... even though he was LVo, to him, level had never been the most important thing. What was important was his equipment, profession, and skills. Even though he was LVo, he still had his [Item Manipulation Technique], so he still had his powerful equipment, professions, and skills. He had only lost some stats, so there was no reason why he should fear the Celestial grade monster.

“Xi Ling, Snow Cherry, let’s go! Xiao Hui, protect the others. Leng’Er, restrict its movements. Cai’Er... don’t cry! Hurry and sing!”

Despite being at LVo, Ling Chen’s Attack Power was still above 10,000, while Xi Ling’s Magic Attack Power at LVo was 8000. Even though it was far less than what they had previously, it was still incredibly powerful.

Ling Chen simultaneously activated Soul Sacrifice and War God’s Fury, causing his Attack Power to be boosted to 50,060. He then activated Broken Shadow and Burning Shadow, turning into a gale as he rushed towards the Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon. He easily sidestepped around its attack, smashing 2 Heaven-Destroying Slashes on its back.

-2,700,000! -2,700,000!

At the same time, Xi Ling’s [Solar Deathray] descended from above, hitting the Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon on the head.

-2,160,000!

Xi Ling’s stats were completely dependent on her level, so the massive fall in level also greatly decreased her basic Magic Attack Damage. However, she was still Saint Destroyer grade, and because of how powerful her magic attacks were, she was still able to deal

over 2 million damage with a single attack.

With both Ling Chen and Xi Ling attacking, they had taken down nearly one-third of the Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon's HP in just 1 round of attacks.

The Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon was knocked upside-down by Ling Chen's 2 heavy blows, and it was continuously burned by Xi Ling's golden flames, causing it to release ear-piercing shrieks. Its overturned body started to struggle, but with [War God's Fury], Ling Chen's Attack Speed was incredibly fast – how could he give it a chance to flip over? He rushed up and repeatedly slammed down attacks on it.

-2,700,000! -2,700,000! -2,700,000! -2,700,000! -6,750,000!

2 rounds of Heaven-Destroying Slashes were followed by an Eight Directions Annihilation. The Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon, who had only been able to attack once and hadn't even flipped itself over, was killed just like that. Its 8 legs stopped struggling, and it lay motionless on the ground.

From when Ling Chen and Xi Ling had started attacking, only a few seconds had passed.

“Ding... you have killed the LV70 Celestial grade Boss [Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon], Fame+7000, SP+7000.”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV1, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV2...”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV3...”

.....

.....

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV31, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... your pet Xi Ling has levelled up to LV31...”

“Ding... your mount-type pet Snow Cherry has levelled up to LV31...”

“Ding... your pet Cai’Er has levelled up to LV31...”

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has levelled up to LV31...”

“Ding... your pet Leng’Er has levelled up to LV31...”

Killing a LV70 Celestial grade Boss while at LVO – what did that mean?

As system announcements continuously sounded out, the EXP that the LV70 Celestial grade Boss gave caused Ling Chen’s level to skyrocket, jumping more than 30 levels to LV31. What’s more, that was with the Heaven’s Jealousy debuff – otherwise, he might have shot to LV40!

“Ahh... ehhehh? It’s over already? I didn’t even start singing yet!” Looking at the fallen spider, Cai’Er’s mouth hung wide open, staring wide-eyed. She then said in a small voice, “Even though it looks incredibly scary, it didn’t seem to be very strong.”

Xiao Hui quickly picked up the spoils of war that the Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon dropped, then opened its mouth, devouring the corpse in a few seconds.

After devouring the corpse, he spat out a jet-black pearl.

[Lethal Poison Demon Pearl]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Celestial, Attributes: Darkness, Effects: Adds a 33% chance of adding a [Poison] status when attacking and a 5% of adding a [Lethal Poison] status.

Ling Chen expressionlessly went through the items and equipment that had been dropped, and little Cai’Er floated over, gripping her skirt as she said tearily, “Big brother, can we really leave this place? I don’t like this place. It’s so scary and smelly, and it has such scary monsters. I want to go home, wuu...”

Ling Chen could only comfort her gently. “Don’t worry, we’ll

definitely find a way out. Plus, this place isn't as scary as you think, and there aren't that many monsters..."

"Roar!!!!"

Just as Ling Chen started talking, an explosive roar sounded out from behind them, scaring Cai'Er to start crying again. Ling Chen quickly turned around and saw a fiery light gradually coming closer. He gritted his teeth... he knew clearly how many ferocious and terrifying monsters were in here. When he first came here, he met an ancient ferocious beast that could not be found in the outside world every few steps. If he had not met Xiao Feng Chen, he would have been killed by that Ancient Toad King. The Lunar Sky Hell had existed for countless years, and it also contained countless savage beasts and spirits!!

The fiery light approached them rapidly, and it soon appeared within their field of vision. It was a strangely-shaped monster covered with crimson flames. There seemed to be lava slowly flowing across its surface, and it had 4 large arms, all of which were burning with intense flames. As it quickly drew near, Ling Chen could see that the shape of its body continuously changed, while only its 4 arms did not move.

Wait! This monster... could it be the Volcanic Desolation Beast that he had met last time?

As Ling Chen was wondering about how familiar it seemed, Xiao Hui's information appeared in his mind:

[Volcanic Desolation Beast]: Type: Beast, Level: LV80, Grade: Heaven's End, HP: 20,000,000. It is an Ancient Beast. Its body is made of molten lava, and its flames can destroy virtually everything. Its mere existence brought about countless nightmares. It was sealed 10,000 years ago by the Moon God Clan, and till this day its fire has never been put out.

Passive Abilities: Fire Resistance 90%, has incredibly high Magic Resistance to all types of magic except Water. Immune to all

abnormal statuses.

Attack Skills: [Falling Star Flames], [Scorching Heatwaves], [Inferno Explosion], [Boundless Incineration], [Hell Lava], [Shooting Star Eruption].

Ultimate Skill: [Formless Hell Flames].

Weaknesses: 0 Physical Defence, weak against Water attacks (Water Resistance -100%).

Ling Chen was not mistaken – this was the Volcanic Desolation Beast that he had encountered when he had first come to the Lunar Sky Hell! He had just run into a LV70 Celestial grade Boss, and now he had run into a LV80 Heaven's End grade Boss. In terms of overall strength, it was undoubtedly more than 10 times stronger than the Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon. However, not only did Ling Chen not frown, but he also started to laugh.

This thing... was giving him a free kill!

Even though the Volcanic Desolation Beast was a Heaven's End grade Boss, it was a pure fire-type monster. Ling Chen was immune to Water, Fire, and Lightning, so this 'powerful' Volcanic Desolation Beast was not a threat to him or Xi Ling at all.

Ling Chen did not say anything and immediately ran at the monster. He ignored all else and ferociously attacked the Volcanic Desolation Beast. The Volcanic Desolation Beast had a violent and berserk personality, and it sent incredibly destructive fire attacks at Ling Chen and Xi Ling, but they were not able to harm them at all. Ling Chen completely ignored its attacks, and he turned his attacks into Water attacks, continuously landing blows on its body. Every single attack dealt massive damage, causing the Volcanic Desolation Beast to continuously howl in pain.

When it finally realised that its attacks could not hurt its enemies while their attacks were rapidly lowering its HP, it was too late. Before it could even turn to run, Ling Chen unleashed both of his

ultimate skills, clearing out its HP bar.

Chapter 746 - The Missing Ling Chen

The Volcanic Desolation Beast's floating body fell to the ground, and a piercing howl sounded out as the flames dissipated. By the time the flames had disappeared, it had stopped moving.

“Ding... you have killed the LV80 Heaven's End grade Boss [Volcanic Desolation Beast], Fame+80,000, SP+80,000.”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV32, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV33...”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV34...”

.....

.....

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV44, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

“Ding... your pet Xi Ling has levelled up to LV44...”

“Ding... your pet Cai'Er has levelled up to LV44...”

“Ding... your mount-type pet Snow Cherry has levelled up to LV44...”

“Ding... your pet Xiao Hui has levelled up to LV44...”

“Ding... your pet Leng'Er has levelled up to LV44...”

After killing a higher-level, higher-grade monster, Ling Chen and his pets' levels once again greatly increased. Soon, the Volcanic Desolation Beast was devoured by Xiao Hui as well.

“Roarr!!! Arooooo!!!”

“Sssss!!”

“Gurgle... gurgle...”

The Volcanic Desolation Beast's howl travelled very far, and it

seemed to be some sort of signal. In an instant, countless sinister, furious, dignified, and bloodthirsty howls and roars sounded out from all around them. All of the fur on Xiao Hui's body stood on end, and Xi Ling's face was filled with wariness. Cai'Er continued hiding behind Ling Chen, heavily trembling, while Ling Chen frowned and activated [Vanishing Shadow], hiding himself. Countless monsters had been sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell over the past tens of thousands of years, and even if he continuously killed them, he would not be able to clear out the entire Lunar Sky Hell. At the same time, he could deal with Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade monsters, but if he ran into any Mysterious God grade monsters... such as the Evil Black Dragon that had been sealed in here by Snow Cherry, he would not be able to deal with them so easily.

He wasn't concerned about how to deal with these monsters right now. Instead, he was worried about how he would leave this place.

“Xiao Hui, concentrate on looking for any hidden mechanisms or hidden regions. I don't believe that there's no way to escape this place!”

Even though Ling Chen was doing his best to remain calm, the longer he stayed in this place, the more unsettled he felt. After all, even Xiao Feng Chen had been unable to escape despite being in here for 1,000 years, and they had been incredibly lucky to escape using a Spatial Stone last time. Now that he did not have any Spatial Stones on him, how could he leave? Could it be that he would be sealed in here forever like Xiao Feng Chen?

He could not find any way to leave, nor could he think of anything. His only hope was Xiao Hui – perhaps, with his peerless detection abilities, he'll be able to find something.

Xiao Hui gave a low growl and walked in a few circles, but his eyes remained blank. Finally, he chose a direction and started running, and Ling Chen followed behind him with [Vanishing Shadow] still activated. He had no idea where they were going or

what the darkness ahead contained...

Just like that, a day passed... 2 days passed... 3 days passed... then 4 days, 5 days, 6 days... 10 days... 15 days...

Ling Tian City.

“How is it? Have you found him or contacted him yet?” Seeing Fey return, Yun Meng Xin hurriedly went over and asked worriedly.

Fey expressionlessly shook her head.

“How could it be like this? What happened to him?” Yun Meng Xin frowned, feeling incredibly anxious. “He often stays online for many days and is uncontactable, but it would be 5 days at most. This time, it has been nearly 20 days; Tian Tian and the others have tried calling him out many times, and Tian Tian has even been worried to the point of crying. However, he has not woken up, and he has not responded at all.”

Fey closed her eyes and fell silent for a moment before opening her eyes and giving a comforting smile. “Don’t worry, he’s probably in a sealed region doing a special quest. He most likely hasn’t logged off because he doesn’t want to – after all, this is a game, so there surely aren’t any maps that stop people from logging off, right? Since he wants to stay in the game, don’t worry about him. Just make sure you maintain his life-support systems.”

“That makes sense, but it has been far too long this time. I just can’t feel at ease,” Yun Meng Xin replied.

After leaving the Lady of the City’s residence, Fey’s expression became grim.

Half a month ago, when she realised that the 3 Moon Goddesses that had come to the Sea Emperor Palace were clones, she knew that the situation was bad. However, when she tried to contact Ling Chen, she had been given a system announcement telling her that he was not contactable. Despite feeling incredibly worried, she

had patiently waited for a long time, but she still had not heard from him. During this period of time, he had not logged off either.

She had asked the Sea Emperor Helos about this, and after hearing about the events from Fey, his expression became unsightly. What he had told her was the Ling Chen had most likely been sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell! It was a place that was filled with ferocious monsters and spirits, a place more terrifying than hell, and it could not be escaped from.

“Lunar Sky Hell!” Fey frowned deeper and deeper. She looked at the Lachesis rings on her fingers and muttered in a low voice, “Adam, just hang on for a bit longer. In 7 days, the Lachesis’ spatial energy and time energy will be completely restored, and in 20 days, the Lachesis’ power will once again develop. When that time comes, I’ll do everything I can to bring you out... even if I can’t let you come out, I’ll at least keep you company in there... wait for me!”

Real world, Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

Everyone was used to not hearing from Ling Chen for 3 to 5 days, but now, it had already been 19 days. All of them felt incredibly worried. Even though they knew that it was possible that Ling Chen had not come out because he did not want to come out, they could not stop worrying more and more. Every day, they felt that even Shadissika’s ridiculously good food tasted incredibly bland because of their worry.

After all, Ling Chen was the core of this family and their support. After not hearing his voice or seeing his eyes for such a long time, they simply couldn’t feel at ease. No matter if it was Xuanyuan Dia Wu, Tian Tian, Xiao Qi, Su’Er, Chao Ying, or Chao Xi... they ran into Ling Chen’s room everyday many times, hoping to see him awake.

Only Qi Yue did not seem worried at all. Every day, she would just eat, sleep, read magazines, watch soap operas, sunbathe, and

swim, seeming incredibly relaxed as if nothing had happened.

It was now already Summer, and even though the residence was surrounded by a bamboo forest, the sunlight was still quite intense. Qi Yue was on a bamboo sunchair beside the man-made lake, wearing a large pair of sunglasses on her face. There was only a thin towel covering her body – because the towel was quite short, the top only covered half of her large breasts, and if it was any lower, it would reveal 2 pink buds. Her 2 slim and long white legs were completely exposed, and there was... nothing beneath the towel.

Sunbathing for a few hours was something that Qi Yue had to do every day. However, despite doing this, her skin remained just as white, and she did not seem tanned at all.

A cool breeze blew past, and Qi Yue, who had silently lain there for a long time, lightly moved her lips. She lazily stretched up her arm and took off her sunglasses, revealing a pair of clear and beautiful eyes.

“15 days, it’s still not enough... my dear little master, in another 15 days, I’ll go and help you. The Lunar Sky Hell puts an immense mental strain on one’s mind. I’m sure you’ll be nearly mad by the time you leave. When that time comes...” Qi Yue’s lips lifted up into a bewitching smile.

In the blink of an eye, another 15 days passed.

It had been an entire month since Ling Chen had been sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell.

Ling Tian City’s expansions were already complete, and it was now 3 times larger than it had been in the past. In half a month at the latest, the new Districts would open, causing the Ling Tian City’s growth to skyrocket to a new level.

Before, when the Yan Huang Alliance had joined Ling Tian City, most players had thought that it was because they were unable to

compete with Ling Tian City and wanted to delay their demise. This was because with Long Tian Yun's personality, as well as the Yan Huang Alliance's reputation and power, it was impossible for them to truly submit.

However, after a month had passed, what people saw completely shocked them. The Yan Huang Alliance not only had not done anything that was contrary to Ling Tian City's interests, but they had also completed all of orders that Ling Tian City had given them, and they had even added a guild rule that no one was to refuse Ling Tian City's orders. Some players who broke this rule or protested were either punished or kicked out of the Yan Huang Alliance.

As the Alliance Master of the Yan Huang Alliance, Long Tian Yun had once been the overlord of China's virtual world. Long Tian Yun's actions completely dumbfounded everyone – he worked incredibly hard every day, and he gave all of his time to Ling Tian City. He always immediately carried out any orders from Ling Tian City, and he did not dally at all. When meeting the leaders of the city, he acted incredibly respectfully as if he had met his own father... no! He was even more respectful than when facing his own father!

He would only act like this in front of Ling Tian City's leaders – in front of other players, he was just as arrogant and haughty, and this was especially so within the Yan Huang Alliance. No one could imagine just why Long Tian Yun's attitude had taken such a shocking turn towards Ling Tian City.

However, what was certain was there was no longer any powers within the China Region that could threaten Ling Tian City in the slightest.

As for Ling Chen, who had left Ling Tian City, there was still no word from him. He was within the Mystic Moon world, but it was as if he had completely disappeared. No one could contact him, much less find him.

Chapter 747 - Shura (1)

Lunar Sky Hell.

Bang! Ping! Whoosh! Boom...

“Roar~~”

Amidst the explosions and the space trembling, a long roar sounded out, following which a gigantic body heavily fell to the ground.

“Ding... you have killed the LV86 Heaven’s End grade Boss ‘Ninefang’, Fame+86,000, SP+86,000.”

“Ding... congratulations you have levelled up to LV76, HP+20, MP+20, Strength+5, Agility+1, Spirit+1.”

Yet another powerful ancient beast fell to Ling Chen and Xi Ling’s attacks. Following this, Ling Chen and all of his pets rose to LV76. Within the Lunar Sky Hell, Ling Chen’s level fell every 24 hours. If it wasn’t for that, his level would have been above LV80.

This was the 30th day since he had been sent to the Lunar Sky Hell.

In just 30 days, Ling Chen had risen from LVO to LV76 despite the Heaven’s Jealousy debuff and the Lunar Sky Hell’s level punishments!

This sort of levelling speed was terrifying to the extreme, and no player would believe that this was possible. However, this was not a normal map – rather, it was one of the most dangerous and cruellest maps in the entire Mystic Moon world. The creatures sealed in here were not normal beings but the most powerful and vicious monsters. Even the weakest that Ling Chen had seen so far was a LV60 Celestial grade beast.

These powerful Bosses were difficult to find in the outside world. In fact, less than 0.0001% of players in the world had even

personally seen a Celestial grade Boss, and those who were able to kill Celestial grade Bosses were as rare as a phoenix's feather or a qilin's horn. However, within the Lunar Sky Hell, Celestial grade Bosses, as well as even more powerful monsters, were as common as cabbages in a vegetable market. Wherever Ling Chen went, he would casually bump into one. They were all incredibly powerful, but this meant that he would receive large amounts of Fame, EXP, and SP after killing them. The EXP Ling Chen received from killing each of these monsters caused his EXP bar to greatly rise, and the amount of SP he received for killing each of them was an amount that normal players could not hope to gain in even months.

These sorts of ancient beasts and spirits were incredibly terrifying. However, before entering the Lunar Sky Hell, without Ling Chen noticing it, as the Lunar Scourge became more and more complete and his War God's profession developed, and adding on Xi Ling's attacks, Xiao Hui and Snow Cherry's support, Leng'Er's crowd control and Cai'Er's songs, his overall strength had greatly exceeded those of the ferocious beasts'.

In the incredibly dangerous Lunar Sky Hell, as long as he did not meet any Mysterious God grade monsters, he was able to easily kill the ferocious beasts. Even if he ran into a few Mysterious God grade monsters, he would still be able to safely escape them with the Feng Chen Sect's escaping abilities.

As such, in just a short month, Ling Chen had hunted down many Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade monsters, and his level had skyrocketed past where he had been before he entered the Moon God Palace. He now also had more than 10,000,000 SP. Back then, he had desperately tried to save up SP, but now, he had way too much. In the end, he began to feel numb towards his SP rapidly increasing.

Now, to him, SP was just one of the numbers on his stats page that rapidly increased.

After reaching LV76 and looking down at the corpse by his feet,

Ling Chen did not seem happy at all. Instead, he blankly stared at Xiao Hui collecting the spoils of war, and he did not even bother looking at the Heaven's End grade equipment. He turned and walked away, dragging the heavy Dark Samsara behind him, stiffly walking forwards.

After killing so many Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade monsters, he had already grown numb to all of it. He had found too many Celestial grade and Heaven's end grade equipment, and he had long since lost interest in them. His rapidly increasing level, as well as Fame and SP, no longer brought him any satisfaction. He was now just mechanically killing the ferocious monsters that attacked him, and he did not even bother looking at the ones that walked by him.

After all, he just wanted to know how he could leave this place.

1 day, 2 days, 3 days... Ling Chen had followed Xiao Hui through the darkness, trying to find a way out. He believed that there were no absolutes in this world, and he thought that there would definitely be ways to leave the Lunar Sky Hell. He believed that he would definitely be able to find something with Xiao Hui's peerless detection abilities.

However, after fruitlessly searching for 5, 6, 7 days... all he found was darkness and countless savage beasts and spirits. He allowed Xiao Hui to lead the way, hoping to find the Lunar Sky Hell's boundary so he could destroy it with the Scorpio Orb's effects. However, despite walking for a long, long time, he was unable to find a boundary. Instead, because he met some monsters more than once, he started to realise that this was a special space that did not have a boundary and seemed to loop. Ling Chen tried to attack the ground under his feet, hoping to make a hole, but no matter what sorts of attacks he used, even his ultimate skills, the attacks would silently disappear after striking the ground.

After 15 days passed, Ling Chen, who had been forcing himself to stay calm, started to panic. If he was alone, with his mental

fortitude that he had developed over the 3 years in Heaven, he would have been unaffected even if he had to stay in here for years. However, there was Tian Tian, Dia Wu, Shadissika... as well as many other people who he cared and worried about. As the prospects of never being able to leave became clearer and clearer in his mind, a wave of terror began to surge within his heart. He simply could not imagine what would happen to Tian Tian, Dia Wu, Shadissika, and the others if he was trapped in here forever...

As such, he was unable to stay calm any longer, and he started to roar, venting his frustration on any monsters nearby. In fact, he started to madly attack the air in front of him... Xi Ling and Leng'Er were frightened by his madness, and Cai'Er was often scared into crying... while crying, she would start singing because it was only with her songs that Ling Chen would gradually calm down.

20 days... 25 days... 30 days...

In the Lunar Sky Hell, communication devices were completely useless. Even the camera and time functions were completely unusable. In the endless darkness, Ling Chen was unable to tell how fast time was flowing. In this sort of torture, every second felt like a year. He did not know how long he had been stuck in the Lunar Sky Hell... whether it was a few days... or a few months... or even a few years... or a few decades...

He only knew that he was unable to find a way out despite trying everything.

Perhaps... he really would not be able to make it out...

Ling Chen continuously repeated this to himself in his head. Following this, the girls' images would appear in his mind, causing his heart and soul to tremble. He started going berserk more and more frequently. Before, he would only play the 'game' with Leng'Er once per day, but now, it became 5 or 6 times and sometimes even 10 or so times. Furthermore, he would no longer

be gentle, and he instead merely sought release. If Leng'Er did not possess an Underworld Royal's body, she would not have been able to endure it.

If Ling Chen did not desperately vent out his frustration, he was afraid that his chest would explode.

Now, he completely believed that what Xiao Feng Chen said about all humans being imprisoned in here going mad except for him. In the boundless darkness, one could not see any sunlight, and anyone would be driven mad within a month. Now that he thought about it, the only reason that Xiao Feng Chen was able to last 1,000 years in here without truly going mad was because he was completely free and unfettered, without any ties to anything. However, how many people in the world could be like him?

In front of Ling Chen, Xiao Hui suddenly stopped. Ling Chen, who had been trudging behind him, did not notice. He continued stiffly walking forwards as if he was a puppet. When he walked to Xiao Hui's side, he felt that he had stepped on something hard, which gave a slight creak.

Ling Chen's dim eyes lit up with a faint glimmer of light. He stepped away and bent down, picking up the object. It was an iron-like item, and it felt incredibly heavy. Its sides were straight, and it gave off a sharp aura. The top and bottom had jagged ends as if it was a broken piece of a sword. This item was black, but it was not pure black – it had a layer of dark red to it, and this sort of dark red made one think of the colour that a large amount of blood left after it dried.

[Shura Emperor Sword Shard 4]: One of the shards of the [Shura Emperor Sword] that the 3 Moon Goddesses destroyed. The other 4 pieces are in unknown places within the Forgotten Continent. In order to make it so that the Shura Emperor Sword could never be restored, the fifth piece was sealed in the Lunar Sky Hell.

Ling Chen had obtained the first shard in the Novice Village, the

second in the War God's Trial Grounds, the third in the Dwarf Clan's palace, the fourth in the Underworld Blood Lake, and now, he had obtained the fifth and the final shard.

The 4 other shards had been found in various places across the Forgotten Continent, and all of them were hidden in extremely hidden places. Finding all of them was as difficult as scaling the heavens, and the fifth shard had even been hidden in this deep abyss. Finding all 5 shards was essentially impossible. However, it was as if fate had arranged that Ling Chen would find all of them in a single year.

Now that Ling Chen had gathered all 5 pieces of the Shura Emperor Sword, if he could find the right way, he might be able to restore the Shura's sword. As the sword of a Shura, it definitely possessed unimaginable might.

If it was before, Ling Chen would have been crazy with joy to find a shard so unexpectedly, and he would have immediately given all of the shards to the Dwarves. However, looking at the item in his hands, there was not a trace of emotion on Ling Chen's face, nor did he put it in his bag. He slowly raised his hand and roared as he threw the heavy shard into the darkness behind him...

“You can't let me get out!! Let alone you, a mere shared... even the complete Shura Emperor Sword wouldn't be able to help me at all!!”

Clang!

As Ling Chen hoarsely roared, the heavy Shura Emperor Sword Shard gave a low clang as it hit the ground. That roar and throw took up almost all of Ling Chen's strength, and he weakly knelt down on the icy-cold ground, his expression and gaze completely lifeless.

Tian Tian, Sha Sha... all of you must be worried sick, right? Right now, I just want to go completely mad so that my heart won't ache so much when I think of all of you. However, I, who seems

invincible to you all, truly don't know how to get out of here... what will you all do if I'm stuck in here forever...

“Master...”

Xi Ling came to Ling Chen's side, gently holding on to his arm and looking at him with worry and heartache. She had nothing tying her down, and the only thing she wanted was to be by his side, whether it was in heaven or in the Lunar Sky Hell. Where they were simply didn't matter to her. These days, she had been comforting him, but as the days passed, she was unable to comfort him anymore, and she could only silently look at him and keep him company.

“Master... if you're not happy... I'll play the game... with you...”

Leng'Er gently pressed her body towards Ling Chen with more and more emotions in her jet-black eyes now. After leaving the Underworld, Leng'Er's speaking abilities had improved, and she began to feel more emotions. Her reliance on Ling Chen also became more evident. It seemed that the method that the Underworld King had taught Ling Chen was effective.

Chapter 748 - Shura (2)

Xiao Hui quickly ran to where Ling Chen had thrown the Shura Emperor Sword Shard. After putting it into his bag, he ran back to Ling Chen, gently leaned against him, and nudged him.

Ling Chen put his left arm around Leng'Er's waist, gently hugging her, while his right hand rested on Xi Ling's shoulder. His body was still trembling from his outburst of emotions before, and he had finally settled down. He knew that he would have lost control many times if it was not for Xi Ling, Leng'Er, and Cai'Er.

“Cai'Er, can you sing for me?” Ling Chen said in a hazy voice.

“Mm.” Cai'Er was still a bit scared, and she hesitantly nodded her head. She lightly floated over to Ling Chen and sang a [Song of Tranquility – Clear Dream In A Peaceful Night] with her ethereal voice.

The pleasant song echoed around in the darkness, travelling quite far. Slowly, the sounds of roars around them died down, causing the space to become entirely silent. All of the rampant and bloodthirsty vicious beasts settled down and silently listened to Cai'Er's song before falling asleep. Ling Chen's raging heart rate also slowed down, and his breathing was no longer erratic. He continued to kneel on the ground, his arms tightly hugging Xi Ling and Leng'Er. After breathing out, he slowly closed his eyes.

I need to be calm... be calm... only then can I find a way out!

However, he had already tried all available methods, and none of them had worked in the slightest. Back then, Xiao Feng Chen and Qi Yue had said that the only method to leave the Lunar Sky Hell was to use a Spatial Stone. By striking the Spatial Stone, its spatial energy would leak out. Because the energy from the Spatial Stone was formed by nature and contained the purest spatial energy, the spatial cracks it created could ignore all barriers... but if that was the only method, where could he find a spatial stone? In the

Forgotten Continent, they were already incredibly rare. If there were any within the Lunar Sky Hell, how could these powerful beasts be trapped here for so many millennia?

Could it be... that he really had to spend the rest of his life in here?

If he couldn't go out, Tian Tian, Sha Sha, Dia Wu, and the others would be incredibly worried and grieved every day, and they might experience pain and despair even greater than what he was experiencing. Meng Xin, Su'Er, and Qi Qi would feel incredibly lost and devastated, while Fey, Gui Ya, Bing Yao, Ying, and Xi... they would never be able to rest at ease...

No! I have to make it out of here! No matter what, I have to get out! No matter what the cost is... I have to leave!!

How can I, Ling Tian, be trapped in here and die here?! But how can I get out? Is there anything I haven't tried yet? Even if I have to pay an incredibly heavy price, as long as I'm able to leave, I'm willing to do it. Even if I have to lose all of my equipment except the Lunar Scourge, lose all of my professions, and for my level to fall to 0, I won't care at all!

On the face of things, Ling Chen seemed much calmer with his eyes closed. However, within his mind, he was still loudly roaring, trying to use all of his mental power to find a way to escape. The mental anguish he felt was no less excruciating than what he had felt in Heaven... at least, in Heaven, he could just grit his teeth and desperately hang on, using his extraordinary willpower to keep himself alive. However, in here, even if he was incredibly powerful and had a strong will and mental energy, they were completely useless. He was trapped in a cage, but he could not even find the boundaries of this cage – how could he escape?

What should I do... someone tell me what I should do!!

Ling Chen inwardly roared again and again. These days, he had repeated these words in his mind millions of times. Every second

of every minute of every day was spent thinking about this, causing him to become more and more erratic and frantic.

“Can you hear me, little master?”

Within the silence, a soft and enchanting voice appeared in Ling Chen’s mind. Ling Chen’s eyes flew open and he shot to his feet... this was Qi Yue’s voice, because apart from Qi Yue, there was no one else who could make his entire body and spirit feel numb from just hearing their voice. He looked around him and hurriedly said, “Qi Yue, is it really you? Where are you?”

“I’m in the Lunar Scourge...”

“But aren’t you in the real world? How did you come in here?” Ling Chen gritted his teeth, forcefully quelling his emotions. Even though he was always on his guard against Qi Yue, he couldn’t help but admit that her knowledge and expertise in the Mystic Moon world were far superior to his. Perhaps she could think of a way to escape the Lunar Sky Hell, even if it was an extreme method.

Qi Yue’s voice came again, filled with anxiousness and exhaustion, “After seeing that little master has not come out of the game for such a long time, we’ve all been worried to death. I guessed that little master had been locked into the Lunar Sky Hell – only this place would make it impossible for little master to log off for such a long time. As such, I spent a long time and used a special method to awaken a trace of my remnant spirit in the Lunar Scourge to contact little master... looks like I was right – little master really is in the Lunar Sky Hell.”

“How long have I been in here for?” Ling Chen hurriedly asked.

“1 month,” Qi Yue replied.

“1 month... 1 month...” That amount of time was not very long, but it was not short by any means either. For him to have been lying there like a corpse for 1 month, Ling Chen could not even begin to imagine how worried everyone has been.

Ling Chen clenched his fists and gritted his teeth as he said, “Qi Yue, tell me how I can leave here. Since you’re so familiar with the Moon God Clan, I’m sure you know a way.”

Qi Yue’s answer came quite quickly, “I already told you last time – the only way is using a Spatial Stone.”

“But I don’t have any Spatial Stones, and it’s impossible for there to be Spatial Stones here!” Ling Chen vigorously shook his head. “Are there any ways apart from using a Spatial Stone?”

“No,” Qi Yue clearly replied. “Spatial Stones are the only weakness of the Lunar Sky Hell, and this was something that the Moon God Clan purposefully did when they created the Lunar Sky Hell. Apart from this, there’s no other way of getting out. Even the 3 Moon Goddesses can only seal living creatures in and not bring them out. After the Lunar Sky Hell was created, apart from last time when little master and Xiao Feng Chen were able to escape using the Spatial Stone, no other living creatures have ever escaped. This not only includes the Celestial, Heaven’s End, and Mysterious God grade vicious beasts... but 11,000 years ago, there was even a Saint Destroyer grade vicious beast that was sealed in here, and it has never seen the sun again.”

Ling Chen clenched his fists even tighter – even a Saint Destroyer grade beast that was a peak existence in the Mystic Moon world could not escape from this place. In that case, was there really no chance of him leaving here without a Spatial Stone? Ling Chen shook his head and said in a low voice, “I don’t believe it! There has to be another way! There is no such thing as absolutes in this world! Qi Yue, I’m sure you still know of other methods – any method is acceptable as long as I can escape from here!”

“.....” Qi Yue fell silent for a while as if she was hesitating before she slowly said, “Little master, I’m sure that you’ve walked around for a long time after being locked in here for so long. However, you’ve never found a boundary, right?”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Qi Yue continued and said, “The Lunar Sky Hell looks incredibly strange and mysterious, but its true structure is completely worthless. The entire Lunar Sky Hell is a sub-dimensional space.”

“Sub-dimensional space? What do you mean?” This was the first time that Ling Chen had heard of such a thing.

“A sub-dimensional space is a secondary space within normal space. They are invisible and formless, and they have no size or weight. To normal people, they’re simply undetectable and impossible to find. If you forcefully tear open a spatial crack, create a space within it, and seal the spatial crack, then the space within the spatial crack will be covered, and no one would be able to come into contact with that secondary space – a sub-dimensional space. That’s what the Lunar Sky Hell is. Little master, let me ask you this, “How can you escape from such a place with normal means?”

Ling Chen’s lips moved, but he could not say anything, a look of shock appearing on his face.

“Creating a spatial crack is already incredibly difficult, and with little master’s current abilities, it’s simply impossible. Moreover, after a spatial crack appears, it will disappear in a moment. Creating a space within that moment is almost impossible. Even the 3 Moon Goddesses working together would not be able to do such a thing. The Lunar Sky Hell was something that the highest authority in the Moon God Clan made tens of thousands of years ago with the holy item [Moon Heart] and the divine item [Lachesis]. 3 years after the Lunar Sky Hell was completed, that Moon Goddess died from her power completely drying up, and the divine item Lachesis also fell silent. The only thing that remained was the [Moon Heart].”

“Lachesis? Did you say Lachesis?” Ling Chen’s eyebrows jumped.

“That’s right! Oh? It seems that little master seems to be familiar with this name. However, even though part of the Lunar Sky Hell’s

creation was because of Lachesis' power, even if little master really had Lachesis, you would not be able to leave here. This is because the Moon Goddess was afraid that the Lachesis might fall in the hands of evil after she died, who would use Lachesis to destroy the Lunar Sky Hell, releasing countless ferocious beasts and spirits. If that happened, the consequences would be unimaginable. As such, she set a special reflecting seal on the Lunar Sky Hell using Lachesis; if Lachesis' power comes into contact with the Lunar Sky Hell, it will be reflected away. Even Lachesis will not be able to undo this reflecting seal. As such, apart from Spatial Stones, the Lunar Sky Hell that the Moon God Clan created using [Moon Heart] and [Lachesis] has no gaps.”

Chapter 749 – Shura (3)

“Is there... really no other way to get out of here?” Ling Chen muttered in a low voice, his gaze incredibly dim.

Qi Yue fell silent before saying hesitantly, “If you absolutely have to get out, there are 2 options...”

Ling Chen raised his head as if he had been struck by lightning, his pupils dilating in excitement. “What are they? Tell me!!”

“It’s just that one of these options requires you to wait for a long time, and even then, the chances of success are quite low. However, the other option has an incredibly great risk,” Qi Yue said slowly in her clear voice.

“Hurry up and tell me what those options are!” Ling Chen roared. He did not want to remain in here for even another second. As long as he could leave this place, he would not hesitate to pay any price.

Qi Yue smiled. “The first option... does little master remember where he first entered the Lunar Sky Hell from? It was the Fairy Realm – the Moon God Clan created a formation that connected to the Lunar Sky Hell before the Fairies sealed themselves off. Those who went into the formation would be sent to the Lunar Sky Hell. Even though the last formation was triggered by little master, it is quite special, and it is not a single-use formation. In 100 years, it will become usable again.

“In that case, I can tell someone on the outside to bring in a Spatial Stone after 100 years to find you. When that time comes, little master can perhaps use the Spatial Stone to escape... it’s just that in order to do this, we’ll need a Spatial Stone that’s big enough, and the person who enters the Lunar Sky Hell will still have to find you. With how boundlessly large the Lunar Sky Hell is, it might take them 8 to 10 years to find you. Moreover, little master has come into contact with Spatial Stones before, and you

know that the spatial energy within them will quickly disappear if they leave Nature outside. Within the Lunar Sky Hell, after 5 days, the spatial energy will not be enough to leave anymore, and after a month, the Spatial Stone will become a normal stone.

“Wanting to find you within 5 days is almost impossible, so it’s 99.9999% likely that they’ll be trapped in here with you and will have to wait another 100 years.” After speaking, Qi Yue lightly breathed out.

The flames of hope burning within Ling Chen’s eyes were instantly extinguished. Qi Yue telling him about this option was essentially the same as her not saying anything at all, and what’s more, 100 years... most people’s life spans could not last for 100 years, so what was the difference between being trapped here for 100 years and being trapped here for eternity?

“What’s the second option?” Ling Chen asked, his voice once again dispassionate. After hearing the first option, he did not have much hope for the second one.

“The second option...” Qi Yue paused, as if she was thinking of how to say it. Only after a while did she slowly say, “Only little master can do this within the entire Mystic Moon world. If you do it, I’m 100% certain that little master will be able to immediately leave the Lunar Sky Hell. However, this option bears massive risks for little master. Moreover, little master might not be willing to choose it.”

The words ‘I’m 100% certain that little master will be able to immediately leave the Lunar Sky Hell’ caused Ling Chen’s mind to tremble. Risk? To him, no risk was more terrifying than being sealed in here forever. “Hurry up and tell me! As long as I can get out of here, it’s fine!”

“Mm,” Qi Yue replied and slowly said, “escaping from a prison is simple: the most direct way is to destroy the prison and leave. Of course, the prerequisite is that you have the ability to destroy this

prison. The Lunar Sky Hell is a gigantic prison, but since it's a prison, it can be destroyed. This is a sub-dimensional space prison, so as long as you create a large enough crack in the sub-dimensional space, you'll be able to leave. Moreover, this sub-dimensional space is right above the Moon God Palace, so you'll appear right above it, as opposed to somewhere random."

"Destroy this sub-dimensional space?" Ling Chen shook his head. "I can't do it."

"Right now, little master is indeed unable to do it – in fact, no one in the Mystic Moon world can do it. Even if the Goddesses Fate, Order, and Freedom worked together, they would not be able to destroy this sub-dimensional space. However, just because the 3 Moon Goddesses cannot do it does not mean it's impossible. There's a type of creature that sacrifices its all for extreme destructive power. Once born, it has monstrous attacking power, and it will become even more powerful than the 3 Moon Goddesses. With that sort of power, it is able to create a large enough crack in this sub-dimensional space."

Ling Chen slowly looked up and said in a low voice, "You mean... a Shura?"

"That's right! A Shura – only a Shura can have the power to tear open this sub-dimensional space; no other creature is able to do this," Qi Yue replied. "Moreover, only the Lunar Scourge can cause a Shura to be born. In other words, within the entire Mystic Moon world, only little master is able to become a Shura."

"I told little master a long time ago that the Lunar Scourge will be able to create a Shura as long as it has 12 orbs returned to it. Right now, the Lunar Scourge happens to have 12 orbs."

Ling Chen did not say anything and stared ahead blankly.

"If little master wants to leave within 100 years, this is the only option," Qi Yue said in her soft and enchanting voice, which seemed to be able to penetrate into the deepest recesses of one's

soul. “It’s just that I know that little master has been quite resistant to the idea of a Shura even though little master has been quite fascinated with it. This is because a Shura is a demon of killing that has no consciousness or emotions, and it is closer to a war machine that only knows how to destroy and kill than a human. As such, I never tried to force little master to become a Shura, nor did I mention it before. Moreover, since the Lunar Scourge has recognised you as its master, rather than turning you into its puppet, it’s impossible for me to turn you into a Shura even if I wanted to. As such, if little master does not want to turn into a Shura, that’s up to you, and no one will be able to force you to do so. As little master’s little slave, I’ll accept little master’s decision.

“However, as your little slave, I should remind little master of something... putting aside the fact that becoming a Shura is the only way to leave the Lunar Scourge, little master has been desperately collecting the Lunar Scourge’s orbs not for power but to revive little sis Shui Ruo. Nevertheless, there are 4 things required: The Lunar Scourge, the blood of Moon Goddesses, the soul of the Demon Emperor, and the tears of a Shura. Without a Shura’s tear, even if you have the other 3 things, it will be completely useless.

“Little master should have long since understood that only the Lunar Scourge can create a Shura, so only the Lunar Scourge’s master or host can become a Shura. As such, since the Lunar Scourge’s master is little master, unless little master dies, it will never be able to leave you, and no one else will be able to become a Shura. In other words, only little master can produce the Shura’s tear.

“Since that’s the case, if little master really wants to revive lil sis Shui Ruo, becoming a Shura is something that cannot be avoided. Otherwise, lil sis Shui Ruo will have to sleep in the Fairy Fountain forever.”

Ling Chen’s expression quickly changed, and his incredibly tense

body started to slightly tremble. Qi Yue was right – he had already guessed that becoming a Shura was something that he would have to do in order to awaken Shui Ruo. Otherwise, he would never be able to obtain a Shura’s tear. However, he had pushed this to the back of his mind because Shuras were not only extremely powerful but also cruel, bloodthirsty, and emotionless... he couldn’t help but worry that he would be like the Shura from 10,000 years ago and lose his consciousness if he became a Shura, destroying everything and hurting even those closest to him...

If that happened, even if Shui Ruo woke up, she would not want to see him like that.

“There’s also this most important point,” Qi Yue’s voice sounded in Ling Chen’s mind again. “Does little master still remember the words that the White Tiger said before it died? Shuras are not all demons of killing who have lost their consciousness; back then, the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor’s mental energy was not strong enough, so his mind was devoured by the Shura’s berserk power, and all of his desires and emotions were turned into bloodlust. That was why he became such a cruel and vicious Shura. If one’s will and mental energy are strong enough and can bear the assault of the Shura’s power, then he or she can maintain their consciousness while also possessing the Shura’s power.”

Ling Chen raised his eyebrows as he remembered the White Tiger’s words from back then.

“The first type is a demonic murderer that comes close to the border of being a Shura. The second type is a true Shura. The third type... breaks free of a Shura’s chains and surpasses both a Shura’s soul and power-Shura Emperor.”

“The Shura Emperor is even more powerful than a true Shura, but it will not massacre like the normal Shura. A Shura Emperor has boundless bloodlust but is able to control it, and it has seven emotions and six pleasures like a normal person. Shuras are said to be the most terrifying existences in the world, and those who

receive a Shura's power lose their humanity as the price. However, if one becomes a Shura Emperor, their personality and mind will not be affected, and they will even be able to control their seven emotions and six pleasures. This type of Shura is many times more powerful than a normal Shura... maybe even more than 10 times!”

“The way to become a Shura Emperor is quite simple, but actually achieving it is as difficult as reaching the skies. The method is... using one's mental energy to conquer the bloodlust that comes with the Shura's power!”

Within his heart, Ling Chen knew that he would have to become a Shura someday for Shui Ruo. As such, when the White Tiger said those words, he had remembered them clearly.

“Little master is different to the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor – the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor was a puppet of the Lunar Scourge and was completely controlled by the Lunar Scourge. At the same time, he desired to become a Shura of destruction. On the other hand, it's little master who controls the Lunar Scourge, and your mental energy is far stronger than the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor's. Even if you become a Shura, you will still be in control, and I'm almost certain that you won't lose your consciousness... don't tell me little master isn't confident in his mental energy.

“Moreover, little master has always been invincible, and yet you were dealt with so easily by the 3 Moon Goddesses and imprisoned in here for so long. I'm sure you must be furious, right? With the Shura's power, little master will not be any weaker than any of the 3 Moon Goddesses. Not only will you be able to leave this place, but you'll also be able to vent your anger on them. Doesn't little master want this?

“Back at the Moon God Ruins, little master personally witnessed the Shura's remnant spirits' power. The powerful Shadow Demon Beast was insta-killed by the Shura... if little master wants, you can become that powerful; don't you want that...”

“Enough!”

Ling Chen, who had been silent for a while, cut Qi Yue off. Qi Yue’s words were all trying to tempt him into becoming a Shura, and each of them were completely reasonable and undeniable... for Shui Ruo, in order to leave the Lunar Sky Hell, in order to take revenge on the Moon God Clan, in order to become truly invincible... he needed to become a Shura...

“I believe that you’ve only just appeared not because it takes a while for your spirit to enter the Lunar Scourge but because you chose to appear now even though I’ve been here for so long,” Ling Chen said in a low voice with his eyes closed. “You allowed me to endure a month of mental anguish so that I would be so desperate as to be willing to do anything to leave so that you could give me the bait of becoming a Shura...”

Chapter 750 - Shura (4)

Qi Yue did not confirm or deny Ling Chen's words, nor did she panic. Instead, she bewitchingly smiled. "I knew I wouldn't be able to keep little master in the dark. My own selfish desires are indeed involved, but I want to help little master make a decision more... don't tell me little master has decided that he will never become a Shura.

"I know that what little master wants most is to awaken lil sis Shui Ruo, and after becoming a Shura, not only will you be able to obtain a Shura's tear, but the power you will gain will also allow you to easily kill the 10 ancient demon beasts, and it will be quite simple for you to find the 3 Saint Orbs. Obtaining the Moon Goddesses' blood will not be difficult either. Moreover, since little master is able to conquer the Lunar Scourge with his mental energy, I'm 99% sure that little master won't lose his consciousness after becoming a Shura, and you will only receive the Shura's power."

"Enough, you don't have to say any more," Ling Chen once again cut Qi Yue off as he raised his head and said calmly, "Qi Yue, from when we met until now, you've never said so much, nor have you acted so eagerly before. It looks like you greatly want me to become a Shura."

Qi Yue: "....."

"I knew from the very beginning that your goal was for me to find the Lunar Scourge's Orbs and step onto the path of the Shura. Perhaps it's for revenge or for your freedom... I don't know, nor will you tell me. However, I can't deny that even though you've been using me, you've given me incredible help over the past period of time, so deep down, I can't help but feel incredibly grateful to you. Moreover, you even gave me your virginity, which let me confirm that even though you've been using me, you don't want to harm me and even feel guilty about using me."

Qi Yue: “.....”

Ling Chen stood up as he made an incredibly important decision, but his expression remained absolutely calm. “Now, it seems that you will only achieve your goal if I become a Shura, and I will be able to leave the Lunar Sky Hell and awaken Shui Ruo. Since it’s like that, there’s no reason for me not to become a Shura.”

Ling Chen raised his right wrist, looking at the Lunar Scourge and its 12 God Orbs as he said, “Qi Yue, how should I use the Lunar Scourge’s power to become a Shura? You should know. Since that’s the case, do it – I won’t resist. I’m sure...” Ling Chen said as he said with a serious expression. “Even if I gain the Shura’s power, I won’t lose my consciousness!”

At that moment, Ling Chen finally firmly made his decision, and it was much earlier than he had expected. Moreover, this is what Qi Yue had wanted the entire time. However, facing Ling Chen and his determination, Qi Yue did not reply for a long time. After 10 or so seconds, she said in a very soft voice, “You’re willing to become a Shura... partially because of me?”

Ling Chen smiled. “I guess so.”

Qi Yue once again fell silent before lightly laughing, “I won’t forget what little master has said today. In that case, since little master has made his decision, don’t regret it. In actuality, to little master, turning into a Shura is not scary at all. All little master needs to do is calm down and close his eyes. When you feel the Lunar Scourge’s power spreading throughout your body, don’t resist it... that’s all.”

Ling Chen sent his pets back into Pet Space and put away his weapons. After deeply breathing in, he closed his eyes.

‘Shura’ was a name that had completely stunned him when he had first heard of it. Afterwards, he had heard about how the Shura 10,000 years ago had massacred 10% of the Forgotten Continent’s creatures, causing his shock to become even greater.

However, when he obtained the Lunar Scourge and realised that he might one day become a Shura, he was very resistant to the idea...

Anyone would feel awe towards such a legendary and powerful existence, but to any rational person, they would not accept becoming such an existence. This was because even though Shuras were incredibly powerful, what was the use of having that power if you are a demon who lost your nature and only knew how to kill and destroy?

However, this day finally came, and he had made the decision willingly.

Becoming a Shura... would at least allow him to leave the Lunar Sky Hell, allow him to come closer to waking Shui Ruo up, and allow him to take revenge on the Moon God Clan and obtain invincible power... lose his consciousness? His mind did not crumble even after 3 years in Heaven. Since the Lunar Scourge was unable to turn him into a puppet, why would he not be able to resist the Lunar Scourge?

Since I've decided to walk on this path, there's no use resisting or worrying. Qi Yue's right – with the Shura's power, no matter if it's completing the Lunar Scourge or obtaining the Moon Goddesses' blood, the Demon Emperor's soul, and a Shura's tear, I will be able to obtain them faster and easier. Since that's the case, why shouldn't I try to obtain the Shura's power now...

“Come.” Ling Chen said softly as he relaxed his body, these reasons causing him to calm down.

As his words sounded out, the silent Lunar Scourge let out a brilliant light. It was not the silver light that he was familiar with, but a dark light that was darker than the deepest abyss.

The Lunar Scourge quickly trembled, and the dark light instantly covered Ling Chen's body. After moving around him for a short while, it rushed into his body as if there was a powerful attractive force.

“Arghhhh!!!!!!”

The instant that the dark light moved, a gigantic wave of pain travelled through Ling Chen’s mind, causing his body to stiffen and for him to hoarsely scream. He felt as if he was simultaneously being pierced and slashed by tens of thousands of blades, causing him to experience a hellish pain. What’s more, this feeling was not in his body, but in his mind... it was an incredibly mighty power that was mercilessly trying to destroy his mind. It was even more intense than when the Lunar Scourge had tried to devour his mind back then!

Even though the dark light was pouring into him, the amount around him was not decreasing; rather, it was instead increasing. The berserk power madly rushed into every corner of his body like a flood, but he could no longer feel this. All he could feel was the massive pain within his mind that threatened to destroy him at any moment. Ling Chen tightly gripped his head, which felt like it was going to explode, and his body was no longer able to maintain its balance, causing him to heavily kneel on the ground.

“It’s like this... again... heheh... heheheheh...” Sweat poured down Ling Chen’s body, and his face violently twisted under the pain. However, he was laughing – the pain caused his laughter to become incredibly wild and arrogant. “This sort of mental stimulation... those years... I experienced thousands of times... tens of thousands of times... this sort of thing... will never break my mind!! Arghhh!!!!!!”

This roar caused the space around him to tremble, and the dark light around him slightly quivered, as if it was fearful of something. The speed at which it entered Ling Chen’s body also slowed down. At this moment, the Lunar Scourge flashed, and the dark light it released became even more complex and dark to a point that normal people could not even comprehend it, and it quickly flooded towards Ling Chen’s body.

The mental assault continued, and Ling Chen desperately held

on, not allowing his mind to collapse even a bit. At this moment, an even more berserk power slammed into his mind, causing Ling Chen's pupils to dilate... rage, berserkness, bloodthirstiness, arrogance, brutality... all sorts of negative emotions took root and grew within his mind, and in just an instant, boundless killing intent filled his consciousness, mind, and nerves... even every blood vessel, every drop of blood, and every cell...

“Wuaaah.... Arghhhh....”

Ling Chen grasped at his hair and roared like an animal. An incredibly vast and terrifying killing intent radiated out from his body, causing ripples to appear in the air around him. As the killing intent within him rapidly grew, it slowly started to dominate his mind, trying to devour the last of his rationality. The trace of consciousness inside his head told him that this was the Shura's power trying to turn all of his emotions and desires into killing intent, and once that happened, he would be like the Shura from 10,000 years ago – he would become a bloodthirsty Shura who would only know how to kill.

Ling Chen loudly roared, desperately resisting the power. However, no matter how hard he tried, the killing intent within him grew and grew, and he was unable to be suppressed at all... slowly, a river of blood appeared before his eyes, and he could see a boundless mountain and sea of corpses, bones, and broken limbs... he felt that this scene was incredibly beautiful, and the screams and wails sounded pleasing to his ears. In fact, he started to want to join this scene and pick up a butchering knife to destroy even more bodies, cause even more blood to flow, and release even more screams and howls...

“Wuaaahh...”

“Wu...”

Ling Chen's roars became more and more terrifying, and the killing intent and bloodlust that he radiated turned into a wild

gale, causing the eerie Lunar Sky Hell to seem even more chilling and horrifying. In the distance, vicious beasts would come near, but upon sensing Ling Chen's killing intent, the powerful beasts reacted as if they were a mouse that had seen a cat, trembling before howling and running away.

This was the Shura's killing intent, and it was a killing intent that normal people could not even imagine. Just the killing intent was something that even ancient ferocious beasts could not withstand, let alone humans.

Chapter 751 - Shura (5)

In front of Ling Chen, a blurry figure slowly appeared. Qi Yue silently looked at the trembling Ling Chen on the ground, his face distorted with pain as he bestially roared. Because of this, he was unable to see her expression.

The day I've desired has finally come, and it has come much earlier than I had expected. Once the process of becoming a Shura has begun, there's no way to stop it. If his mind is unable to take it and collapses, he will become like the last Shura and will lose his consciousness. He will be controlled by me, and I will no longer have to guide him step by step... or worry about any unpredictable variables... But seeing him like this, why do I not feel any joy at all...

“Arghhhh!!!!”

“Wuaaaaahhhhh!!!”

Ling Chen's roars sounded more and more painful than the last. Soon, he was unable to even keep kneeling, and he lay on the ground, his face twisted like that of a demon's. The ruthlessness and killing intent that he gave off felt like knives swirling around him...

“Just hold on! Don't let yourself be taken over... you were able to defeat the Lunar Scourge last time, so you won't lose this time either!” Qi Yue cried out worriedly, shocking even herself. Why... am I telling him to hold on... isn't turning him into a Shura that is controlled by me what I wanted this entire time? In fact, after the White Tiger died, I used my power to imitate its voice to make up the 'Shura Emperor', making him think that he would be able to become a Shura who retained his rationality as long as his mental energy was strong enough... it was for this day... so why am I...

“Wu... ahhhhh...”

As if Qi Yue's voice woke up Ling Chen's last trace of consciousness, his right hand, which he almost could not control anymore, started to beat at his head while he continued to beastially roar. However, his body soon crumpled... slowly, his roars died down, and the struggling of his body weakened. His gaze also lost its focus... only the aura of power and killing intent around him grew more and more berserk...

“It's useless, it's useless...” Qi Yue muttered to herself in a dazed voice she looked at Ling Chen. This was what she had prepared herself for. “It's because I'm a liar. Back then, after the White Tiger gave you the Thunder God's Bulwark and his soul dissipated, the voice was from me – the so called ‘Shura Emperor’ was something I made up and having powerful enough mental energy to maintain your consciousness is impossible. Everything I said was to trick you so that you would be confident and be willing to turn into a Shura...”

“However, since you've stepped onto the path of the Shura, your emotions and desires will all be turned into bloodlust – this is something that you cannot resist, unless your mental energy truly does surpass the Shura's power... but if your mental energy really is that powerful, why would you need to become a Shura... your mental energy was powerful enough to defeat the Lunar Scourge without any orbs... but now that it has 12 God Orbs, the mental assault will be tens of times greater. There's nothing in this world that could endure such a thing... It's impossible...” Qi Yue muttered to herself with neither any joy nor grief on her face. Facing this scene which she had been waiting for for a long time, her eyes seemed like black holes.

Ling Chen's roars finally ceased, and his body stopped struggling, lying there motionless... this meant that his mental struggle had been completely suppressed to the point that he was unable to even control his body and senses.

Ling Chen's mind fell completely silent, and he could even feel

the last trace of consciousness disappear during the pain. Even his body lost all feeling – he felt like he was a leaf blowing in the wind that had fallen into a boundless sea, completely devoured without being able to resist at all...

At that moment, the dark light around Ling Chen slightly paused, then rushed into Ling Chen's body unobstructed with a 'whoosh'...

Qi Yue lifted her face and slowly closed her eyes. She knew that this was the key moment in the possession... most of the Shura's power had flowed into his body, becoming his power, and a small portion had rushed into his destroyed mind, taking over his consciousness... turning him into a Shura who only knew how to kill and destroy.

As the last of the Lunar Scourge's power entered, Ling Chen's body violently trembled from the impact, and he gave a low roar that should have been impossible with his destroyed consciousness...

“Wuahh...”

Floating in the air, Qi Yue's image's eyes suddenly flew open and looked at Ling Chen in shock. She saw that Ling Chen was actually slowly raising his head, and his eyes were slowly opening, giving off a blood-red glow.

“Eyes of Extermination!” Qi Yue cried out... back then, when Ling Chen had overpowered the Lunar Scourge, she had seen Ling Chen's eyes become blood-red. Seeing his eyes made her feel as if she had seen a hell dyed in blood, and they looked exactly like the Eyes of Extermination recorded during the age of gods and demons.

The second time this had happened was when Ling Chen's mind had been hazy, and he had almost been killed by Hell. He had unconsciously released the Eyes of Extermination, and he had killed the powerful Hell.

This was the third time that she had seen Ling Chen open his Eyes of Extermination, and she felt greatly stunned each time. This was because someone had told her before that a god or demon could use their eyes to destroy everything before them when they had extremely powerful mental energy. Those eyes were the 'Eyes of Extermination', and they could only appear on the perished 'gods' or 'demons'. After the gods and demons died out, they had never been seen again.

She had asked that person which god or demon had the Eyes of Extermination, but that person did not say. Instead, she only saw a deep look of fear and hatred on that person's face...

It was the first, and only, time that she had seen the expression of fear on that person's face.

Ling Chen had opened the Eyes of Extermination 3 times, and it had been the same as the description of the 'Eyes of Extermination' that she had heard about each time. What's more, he had opened them unconsciously each time, and he did not even know about it himself. As such, she did not tell that person about a human awakening the Eyes of Extermination this entire time.

Seeing Ling Chen's blood-red eyes, Qi Yue's mind couldn't help but tremble because she had no idea what this meant.

Ping...

Qi Yue could hear the faint sound of something shattering within Ling Chen's body... this sound seemed to come from within his head.

11 years ago, in order to control Adam and Eve, the Mad Scientist had set a special restriction that sealed away most of their mental energy. Under the Shura's power's assault, the Mad Scientist's restriction... was completely obliterated!

This caused Ling Chen's mental energy, which had become a tiny tongue of flame that had almost been extinguished, to instantly

erupt into an inferno. This inferno-like mental energy swept towards the power that was greedily trying to take over his mind, resisting, destroying and crushing it... allowing Ling Chen's mental energy to once again take control over his mind...

Real world, Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

“Big brother, big brother, big brother... hurry and get up, it's already been a month. You can't sleep for so long... big brother, big brother...”

Tian Tian gently rocked Ling Chen's body, repeatedly calling out to him with her eyes full of tears. After Ling Chen had stayed in the game for a whole month, Tian Tian's worry had gradually become fear, and she spent most of her time every day by his side, calling out to him. She forgoed many meals, and she woke up many times at night. After waking up, she would lie on Ling Chen's body, gently calling out his name.

“Don't worry, Tian Tian. Ling Chen's so powerful, so he'll definitely be fine.” Shadissika stayed by Tian Tian's side, gently comforting her. Suddenly, she gave a soft cry as an 'ah' escaped from her lips.

Tian Tian looked behind her with teary eyes and asked, “What is it, Sha Sha?”

“It's nothing,” Shadissika shook her head and sweetly smiled. She held Tian Tian's soft hand with her right hand and said, “Tian Tian, I have a feeling that Ling Chen will return from the game today.”

“Eh? Really?” Tian Tian's eyes became filled with hope.

“Mm! My instincts are always right! Ling Chen will definitely come back today... if I'm wrong, then I won't ever fight with Tian Tian over the shower again!”

Shadissika looked at Ling Chen's peaceful face, her smile becoming sweeter and sweeter. Ling Chen, I know that you'll

definitely succeed – the lock being opened by me and being forcefully broken through your willpower is completely different. If you're able to break through it by yourself, then you'll be able to be born again, and you will leave the level of humans. That way, even if I'm not by your side, you'll still be able to protect yourself.

Chapter 752 - Shura (6)

As Qi Yue's pupils contracted, Ling Chen slowly stood up from the ground. The instant he fully stood up, the dark light around him completely vanished, and his blood-red eyes became normal again. Even the incredibly berserk killing intent around him became gentler, and it was no longer as horrifying. The only thing that didn't change was the gale-like power around and within him.

As Ling Chen opened his eyes, a stream of system announcements sounded out in his ears.

“Ding, under an unknown power, you have successfully upgraded to a special profession: [Shura]. HP+80,000, MP+80,000, Strength+500, Constitution+800, Agility+100, Spirit+800, HIT+1800, Critical Chance+30%, Pierce Chance+30%, every time you level up you will receive a bonus 1000 HP, 1000 MP, 20 Strength, 10 Constitution, and 10 Spirit.”

“Ding... the Shura is a law unto himself and does what he wants, unrestrained by anything in the world. All laws in the Mystic Moon world are ineffective to you, and your status as [Vice-Lord of the Ling Tian City] has been nullified. You will never be able to join any faction or group, nor can you accept any type of quest.”

“Ding... the Shura's power has exceeded the limits of 'players', and other players are unable to compare at all. You have been erased from the Player Level Rankings, Fame Rankings, Equipment Rankings, and Pet Rankings, and you will never enter the rankings of the player world.”

“Ding... you have successfully unlocked the Shura's unique passive abilities: [Shura Technique] and [Burning Emotion Technique].”

“Ding... because your Shura power is incredibly arrogant, it cannot co-exist with any other powers. Your passive abilities [Shura Technique] and [Burning Emotion Technique]'s effects

cannot stack with [Heaven Wind Technique] and [War God Technique]’s effects. Because [Shura Technique] and [Burning Emotion Technique]’s effects are far superior to [Heaven Wind Technique] and [War God Technique], [Heaven Wind Technique] and [War God Technique]’s effects will be nullified.”

“Ding... you have successfully unlocked the Shura skills [Shura’s Gaze], [Shura’s Merciless Slash], [Shura’s Exterminating Slash], [Sacrificial Slaughter], and [Purgatory Blades].”

“Ding... you have successfully unlocked the Shura ultimate skills [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation].”

“Ding... you have successfully unlocked the Shura forbidden skill [Extreme Shura’s Death Domain].”

“Ding... you have successfully unlocked the Shura final skills [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames] and [Bloody Dusk].”

The blood-red light in Ling Chen’s eyes disappeared, and when he came back to his senses, the first thing that he heard was the continuous system announcements...

Ling Chen slowly raised his hands, silently staring at them. He could feel an incomprehensibly mighty power flowing throughout his body – it was something that normal humans could not even fathom, and it was to the point that he could not even find words to describe it.

It was just that Ling Chen did not feel excited or happy at all facing this incredibly mighty power and the continuous system announcements in his ears. His expression and gaze remained just as passive and calm.

“Is this... the Shura’s power?” Ling Chen softly muttered as he looked at his hands, his gaze still completely tranquil. Back then, no matter if it was the War God’s profession or the Feng Chen Curse Zanni profession, he had felt incredibly emotional, but this

time, he felt abnormally calm.

He was very clear about what had happened before. When the Shura's power had assaulted him, it had been much more powerful than he had expected, and even with his powerful mental energy and willpower resisting it, they were broken through in a short amount of time. The instant he lost consciousness, he knew that it wasn't that he had overestimated his own mental energy but that he had completely underestimated the Shura's power...

How could the power that could cause even the Moon God Clan to feel fearful be something that he, a mere human, could endure? When he realised this, it was already too late... as his last trace of consciousness was engulfed in hopelessness, he heard a shattering sound from his mind.

That was the sound of the mental restriction that the Mad Scientist had somehow left within his mind... following this, Ling Chen felt his mind becoming clear again, and his incredibly weary mind became tens, if not hundreds, of times more powerful, almost returning to its peak during his time in Heaven. In front of the mental energy that even the Mad Scientist felt fearful towards and that came close to a real god's, even the Shura's power was no longer as terrifying, and it was easily suppressed by him. As such, even though the Shura's power completely filled his body, his mind was not affected at all.

Ling Chen could feel the Shura's monstrous power flowing through his body, and though he heard one incredibly shocking system announcement after another, his mind did not react at all, as if he was like an insurmountable mountain. Indeed, after the mental restriction had shattered, Ling Chen's mental energy had truly surpassed the limits that humans were capable of, and he reached a level that even he could barely comprehend. With that sort of mental energy, his mind and thoughts reached a whole new level. If his mental energy before was like a lake, it was now like a vast ocean, and normal breezes could no longer cause any ripples

within his mind.

“Little master, y-you’ve... succeeded?!”

Qi Yue said with great difficulty after staring at Ling Chen for a long time. She had thought that Ling Chen’s mind would have been destroyed under the assault of the Shura’s power, turning him into a puppet. However, not only did that not happen, but it also felt as if he had been reborn – his expression, gaze, and aura had all drastically changed. Seeing him stand there, he felt familiar but also extremely unfamiliar.

Before, even though Ling Chen was far superior to other people in Qi Yue’s eyes, he was still completely controlled by her. Every step he took was according to her will. However, now, when she met his eyes, she felt as if he could pierce through her soul, and she almost tried to escape his gaze many times. The feeling that she could control him at her every whim and fancy was completely gone. She simply could not understand what had just happened to him. Could he have been possessed by a demon or a god?

“Mm, I succeeded,” Ling Chen gave a curt reply with a slight smile on his face. “Are you feeling happy yet disappointed?”

“.....” Ling Chen’s question caught Qi Yue off-guard, and from when the Eyes of Extermination had appeared to when he had stood up, she had not been able to calm herself down at all. However, in the end, she was Qi Yue – no matter how shocked she was, she would be able to immediately regain her cool. She lightly smiled and said in her soft voice, “Little master has obtained the Shura’s power and has preserved his consciousness; of course I’m happy for little master. Why would I be disappointed?”

“Ah...” Ling Chen looked at her and gave a deep smile before calmly saying, “Because there was some surprise and joy in your emotions just then. I’ll forgive you... of course, there’s another reason why I’m forgiving you... because even though there are many things hidden in your heart, you’re my woman!”

Qi Yue's lips slightly trembled before saying in a weak voice, "Of course I belong to little master."

"I hope you'll remember those words," Ling Chen said as he continued to smile. After this, he opened his stats page.

After obtaining the Shura's power, just the stat points that he received were over 3,000 points. This was an astronomical figure that players would not be able to obtain even if they were LV100 and had a full set of exquisite equipment. However, this was only the beginning of what the Shura's power had given him. Apart from this, there was 80,000 HP and 80,000 MP, and every time he levelled up, he received tens of times more stat points than what he would receive from his other professions.

Just these numbers alone were incredibly shocking, and they made it evident how powerful the Shura's profession was.

After glancing over his basic stats, Ling Chen's expression did not change at all, but he could not help but feel shocked inwardly. The War God's profession was already much more powerful than most professions, but from just the stat points alone, the Shura's profession was countless times more powerful than the War God's profession.

Ling Chen started to look towards the Shura profession's abilities.

[Shura]: A terrifying profession created from one's desire for the most extreme power to the point of burning one's mind, thoughts, and will, stepping onto the path of the Shura. Once one becomes a Shura, one is destined to lose their consciousness and emotions, and they will be released from all rules and restrictions. With their powerful strength and boundless killing intent, they kill and destroy all living things as their only goal, turning the world into rivers of blood and mountains of corpses and filling the wilderness with screams. The Shura is a heaven-defying profession that even the heavens and earth cannot tolerate. However, if one's mental

energy is powerful enough to resist the Shura's boundless killing intent, they will be able to obtain the Shura's power while keeping their minds.

Profession Bonus Stats: HP+80,000, MP+80,000, Strength+500, Constitution+800, Agility+100, Spirit+800, HIT+1800, Critical Chance+30%, Pierce Chance+30%.

Profession Passive Abilities: Immune to all abnormal statuses and all debuffs. Basic Attribute Effects: Strength = 2 Physical Attack Power, Constitution = 10 HP and 1 Defence, Agility = 1 HIT and 1 Evasion, Spirit = 2 Magic Attack Power + 10 MP. Every level up gives 1000 HP, 1000 MP, 20 Strength, 10 Constitution and 5 Spirit.

Profession Characteristics: Can use any weapon and can equip all sorts of equipment. All of the Mystic Moon's rules are ineffective on you, and you can't join any faction or group, nor can you enter any player rankings.

Profession Skills:

Passive Abilities: [Shura Technique], [Burning Emotions Technique].

[Shura Technique]: Cannot be levelled up. An ultimate war technique from the Shura's power that can only appear on a Shura, causing the Shura to have an incredibly powerful body. Effects: Increases Physical Attack Power by (300 x Current Level), HP by (500 x Current Level), Critical Chance by (Current Level %), Pierce Chance by (Current Level %). When attacking with any weapon, damage is increased by 100%, and when equipping equipment, Defence is increased by 100%.

[Burning Emotions Technique]: Cannot be levelled up. The Shura's power is merciless and emotionless, and each attack from a Shura is a terrifying nightmare, causing any living creature to fall into a hellish abyss. Effects: All attacks contain a Destruction element, and it ignores the gore-censor and all pain reduction. Attacks give an extra 500% pain, and after being killed by the

Shura, nothing can revive within 10 days. Moreover, after reviving, the killed being's level will be reduced by 10 levels and all of their skills' levels will be lowered to LV1.

Chapter 753 - Shura (7)

Shura Skills:

[Shura's Gaze]: Cannot be levelled up. Uses the Shura's baleful and merciless eyes to gaze ahead. All of those who meet the Shura's gaze will tremble in fear and have a high likelihood to fall into a 'Feared' status, and they may even run without fighting.

[Shura's Merciless Slash]: Cannot be levelled up. A terrifying attack that contains the Shura's power. Once hit, it deals destructive damage to the target, and it may even shatter them into nothing. Effects: Single target attack, damage is equivalent to 2000% of Physical Attack Power, and it has a 100% chance of activating [Rupture] against targets below the Heaven's End grade, 50% chance towards targets at the Heaven's End grade, and 10% chance towards targets at the Mysterious God grade. Costs 10 MP, no cooldown time.

[Author's Note: Rupture: Cleaves the target into 2 or more parts, killing them instantly]

[Shura's Exterminating Slash]: Cannot be levelled up. A berserk attack that releases all of the Shura's power, dealing destructive damage to a large area in front of the Shura. Effects: Indiscriminately attacks all targets 30 metres ahead of the Shura; damage is equivalent to 1000% of Physical Attack Power, and it will knock all targets back by at least 3 body spaces and have a 20% chance of Stun them. Costs 10 MP, no cooldown time.

[Sacrificial Slaughter]: Cannot be levelled up. The Shura, in his fury and rage, harms himself to mercilessly destroy his enemies. Upon releasing the skill, the Shura explodes 30% of his HP to deal 30% of all targets' HP within 300 metres around him, regardless of level, grade of Defensive stats, or techniques, and makes it so that targets cannot regain HP within 3 days. There is a 25% chance of instantly killing Mysterious God grade beings, and a 100% chance

of instantly killing all beings below the Mysterious God grade, shattering their bodies and creating a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood. Costs 30 MP, no cooldown time. Cannot be cast on a target multiple times within 2 hours. After using the skill, maximum HP will be decreased by 1000.

[Purgatory Blades]: Cannot be levelled up. Blood-red blades condensed from the Shura's power that descend from the sky, mercilessly slaughtering and destroying all creatures and terrain around them, turning the area into a purgatory of destruction. Effects: Causes prolonged indiscriminate attacks within a large area. The range is within 500 metres of the user and deals damage equivalent to Physical Attack Power every second, and it can last for 30 seconds. While activated, it consumes 5000 HP per second, and it can be stopped at any time. Costs 50 MP, cooldown time: 600 seconds.

Shura Ultimate Skills:

[Burning Heart Blood Massacre]: Cannot be levelled up. When activated, the Shura destroys his consciousness and seals his 5 senses, entering a [Burning Heart] status, turning into a terrifying killing machine. All skills' ranges are increased by 200% and the force behind his attacks are increased by 200%. All skills' MP costs are ignored, and all attacks will have Absolute HIT, Critical Chance, Pierce Chance, and they will not have any attack delay. Physical Attack Power+200%, Attack Speed+200%, Critical Damage+50%. When activated, the user loses consciousness and all 5 senses, going into a [Berserk] status, unable to differentiate from friend and foe, and he will not be able to stop the skill by himself. Lasts for 300 seconds. Costs 0 MP, no cooldown time. After it is activated, Spirit is permanently reduced by 100.

[Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation]: Cannot be levelled up. Condenses the Shura's power, berserkness, ruthlessness, and bloodlust, instantly dealing a terrifying, hellish strike towards a single target. The strike has Absolute HIT and damage is

equivalent to 9999% of Physical Attack Power. It has a 100% chance to destroy equipment below Mysterious God grade, and it has a 30% chance of activating [Rupture]. Costs 60 MP and 2000 HP, cooldown time: 1 minute.

Shura Forbidden Skill:

[Extreme Shura's Death Domain]: Cannot be levelled up. An ultimate killing attack comprehended by Ling Chen due to his extremely high talent and comprehension after his profession was changed to Shura, integrating the Shura's Death Domain that he used in the past. This skill is so powerful that it can cause the heavens and earth to lose their colour and demons and gods to revel in shock – a strike that can even kill a True God. Upon casting the skill, the Shura's power locks down the surrounding 3000 metres, making it impossible for all targets to escape. The Shura's power then explodes, mercilessly destroying all locked down targets. Damage is equivalent to 99,999% of Physical Attack Power and has Absolute HIT, Critical Chance, and Pierce Chance, and it destroys all equipment and weapons below the Saint Destroyer grade. Costs 90% of HP and MP, and after activating, Strength, Constitution, Agility, and Spirit are permanently reduced by 50 points each, and level is reduced by 10 levels. Can only be used once per day.

Shura Final Skills:

[Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames]: Cannot be levelled up. One of the Shura's unique final skills. Upon coming close to death, and when all hope is lost, the proud Shura abandons everything, mercilessly burning his own life, spirit, rage, willpower, and thoughts, turning them into a crimson-red demonic flame, receiving the extreme power to destroy everything. As long as he can destroy everything he wants to destroy, even if his soul is obliterated, he will not hesitate. When the crimson-red demonic flame that should not exist in the world appears, even the heavens and earth will tremble in fear, and the Shura will become a

demonic god of destruction that the heavens and earth cannot tolerate. However, the crimson-red Shura demonic flame is the Shura's lifeforce, and it is the Shura's final, beautiful light.

Effects: Physical Attack Power+2000%, Magic Attack Power+2000%. Loses all consciousness when activated, and HP-10% every second and cannot be recovered, lasting until death. The Shura will also be struck with the most powerful tribulation lightning. Lasts for 80 seconds. Costs 0 MP, no cooldown time.

[Bloody Dusk]: Cannot be levelled up. One of the Shura's unique final skills. Turns everything within the Shura's vision into nothingness, with the Shura's body and soul being destroyed as the price. Can only be activated at dusk. Damage and range unknown.

.....

“Ding... your Shura's power is too arrogant, and it cannot co-exist with the other powers within your body. [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames]'s effects cannot be used with [War God's Fury] and [Soul Sacrifice]. Because [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames]'s are vastly more powerful than [War God's Fury] and [Soul Sacrifice], if they are simultaneously activated, [War God's Fury] and [Soul Sacrifice]'s effects will be suppressed.

The Shura's power was clearly displayed to Ling Chen. No matter if it were the stats, passive abilities, or skills, they were all completely shocking. Every single word within those descriptions could cause his heart to quiver. Ling Chen looked over the Shura profession's stats and skills over and over again, unable to calm himself down. Even though he had heard many legends about Shuras, this strength exceeded anything that he had known before. The War God's profession, which made him almost invincible among other players, seemed incredibly weak and pitiful before the Shura profession. He almost couldn't believe that this profession really existed and that it was actually his.

“The Shura’s power didn’t let you down, right, little master?” Qi Yue’s image lightly floated over and said into his ears.

Ling Chen closed the stats page and looked up as he calmly said, “Before entering here, the 3 Moon Goddesses said that my strength was too weak and that I could not compare to the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor from before. Even if I became a Shura, I wouldn’t be able to threaten them. Are you sure I’ll be able to cause a crack in the Lunar Sky Hell with my current power now?”

Qi Yue looked completely at ease and smiled as she replied, “The Shura’s power is in his attack power, and his other stats are quite ordinary. That’s why, overall, your power cannot compare to any of the Moon Goddesses. A Shura by himself might be able to defeat a single Moon Goddess but defeating the 3 of them together is simply impossible. However, the Shura also has the Lunar Scourge. With the Lunar Scourge, the Shura’s most terrifying attacks that require his life to activate can be used continuously, and they also give the Shura terrifying destructive power. With that sort of destructive power, if it wasn’t for the tribulation lightning back then, the Shura would have been able to kill even 10 Moon Goddesses, let alone them 3.

“Back then, I told little master that the Aries Orb was the most useless orb before becoming a Shura. However, after becoming a Shura, the Aries Orb becomes incredibly powerful to the point that it surpasses the Saint Orbs. Does little master understand now?”

As if it was agreeing with Qi Yue’s words, the silent Aries Orb suddenly flashed with a silver light.

Ling Chen did not need Qi Yue’s reminder – after seeing the Shura’s skills, Ling Chen realised what a massive – no, terrifying – effect that the Aries Orb had!

Apart from the Shura’s 2 most basic skills, [Shura’s Merciless Slash] and [Shura’s Exterminating Slash], all of the Shura skills... [Sacrificial Slaughter], [Purgatory Blades], [Burning Heart Blood

Massacre], [Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation], [Extreme Shura's Death Domain], and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames] all had negative costs and effects – the more powerful a skill, the greater the cost. Once [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] was activated, he would become a berserk demonic god, and he would lose his consciousness and 5 senses. The [Extreme Shura's Death Domain]'s cost was even greater than the [Shura's Death Domain]'s, and the most powerful skill was evidently [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames], a 'final' skill. In other words, once activated, the Shura's life would enter its final hours because it burned the Shura's lifeforce. Those last moments would be the most powerful that the Shura had ever been.

However, with the Aries Orb, all of these negative effects and costs were nullified, meaning that Ling Chen would retain his consciousness despite using [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and that he could continuously use [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames], which made him tens of times more powerful!

“Before obtaining the Shura's power, little master's overall strength was indeed far below the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor's back then. However, the path that little master walks is one of extreme power, and little master's attack power is not at all inferior to his. Also, the most important thing is...”

A strange light gleamed in Qi Yue's enchanting eyes, “Little master obtained the White Tiger's blessing and received the [Thunder God's Bulwark] – this means that little master will not have to fear the tribulation lightning at all! A Shura that does not fear any lightning and even has the Feng Chen Sect's survival skills... is enough to make the 3 Moon Goddesses feel despair!”

Chapter 754 - Shura (8)

Make the Mystic Moon's 3 Moon Goddesses feel despair... in this entire world, who could do such a thing? What's more, Qi Yue had said this so calmly with such a confident smile.

After seeing the Shura's monstrous stats and skills and thinking about the Shura and the Lunar Scourge's power working together, Ling Chen realised that Qi Yue's words were not exaggerated at all. Before this, he could not even struggle before the 3 Moon Goddesses, and he was thrown into the Lunar Sky Hell without being able to resist at all. Now, with this new profession, he had the confidence to defeat these peak existences of the Mystic Moon world.

Ling Chen did not hesitate and equipped his 2 weapons and slowly raised them... after obtaining the Shura's power, whether he would be able to split open this sub-dimensional space... he would only know after trying!

“Burning Heart Blood Massacre!”

“BOOM!”

This was the first Shura skill that he had activated, and the instant that he cast it, an explosion sounded out in his mind, as if something was trying to take over his consciousness. Following this, a vast and boundless sea of berserk aura spread out from Ling Chen's body that caused even Qi Yue to feel deeply dismayed...

“Ding... the Aries Orb's effects have been activated, skill [Burning Heart Blood Massacre]'s negative effects have been nullified.”

Ling Chen did not lose consciousness, nor did he lose his 5 senses. Rather, he only felt all of the power within his body tossing and turning, becoming many times more powerful than normal. The berserk bloodlust and air of ruthlessness spiralled around him, turning into a small tornado that continuously spun around him.

“Heavenly... Judgment... Demonic... Flames!!”

Ling Chen slowly spoke the 4 words that represented the Shura’s ultimate power. The area around him suddenly became silent... it was as if the entire Lunar Sky Hell had become silent, and an incredibly heavy pressure that could make one feel suffocated descended. It was a feeling that felt as if the heavens and earth were about to collapse and an apocalypse was about to begin.

Whoosh!

Crimson-red flames started to burn around Ling Chen’s body, instantly covering him. In that moment, Ling Chen’s aura skyrocketed to the point that the air around him was pushed away, and the entire Lunar Sky Hell seemed to tremble in fear.

“This is... the Shura’s Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames!” Qi Yue cried out.

The instant the Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames started to burn, Ling Chen felt that his rationality was also almost burned in just a moment. In the depths of his mind, he seemed to hear a curse-like voice.

Burn, Shura’s flames... burn my life, my rage, my spirit, my willpower, my thoughts, my soul... my everything!

As long as I can have enough power, even if my body is burnt to nothing... even if I fall into a bottomless abyss...

“Ding... the Aries Orb’s effects have been activated, skill [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames]’s negative effects have been nullified.”

With the Aries Orb, the [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames], which should have resulted in Ling Chen’s death, did not harm him at all. With [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames] simultaneously activated, Ling Chen felt an indescribable power, and he felt that he could fight against even the heavens and the earth... at this moment, he heard buzzing

in his ears, as if there was something stirring restlessly...

Buzz... Buzz... Buzzzz... Clang!!!

As a metallic collision sound rang out, 5 dark objects flew out from Ling Chen's body and burned as they spun around his body – rather, it was Ling Chen's Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames quickly spinning. Ling Chen looked at the objects and found that they were the 5 Shura Emperor Sword Shards!

A sword hilt, a point, and 3 pieces forming the body... these shards, which had been in Ling Chen's bag, strangely flew out by themselves. They flew around the Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames as if they were attracted by a mysterious force and then slowly started to fuse together into a complete sword again.

“This is... the Shura Emperor Sword is using the Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames to restore itself?” Qi Yue gasped.

Ling Chen looked up and saw the 5 shards perfectly form a complete sword again, and even the cracks quickly disappeared under the Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames, as if they had never been there. The restored sword flew around in the air and then hovered above Ling Chen before slowly floating down towards his right hand,

Ling Chen stretched out his hand and grasped the sword's hilt. At that moment, a powerful and incomparably compatible feeling spread throughout his hand. Before he had even seen the sword's name and stats, he was completely sure that this was a Shura's sword from just the touch – a sword created for a Shura.

[Shura Emperor Sword]: Type: Shura's Sword, Grade: Saint Destroyer, Equipment Requirements: Shura. A sword that once belonged to the most powerful human, Chi Xuan Sword Emperor, the divine Chi Xuan Sword that was passed down in his family. After the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor entered the path of the Shura and became a Shura, the Chi Xuan Sword was bathed in incredible amounts of blood and became the [Shura Emperor Sword].

Stats: Physical Attack Power+30,000.

The sword was quite wide and heavy, and it was a red-black colour. There was a savage red light around it, and it gave off a faint smell of blood and guts, as well as a shocking killing intent.

The Shura Emperor Sword was the sword that the Shura from 10,000 years ago had used, and it had been destroyed by the Moon God Clan. Now, it had been mystically reforged into the Saint Destroyer grade sword in front of Ling Chen.

As an emperor among weapons and a true Saint Destroyer grade sword, its stats were so skewed that Ling Chen was completely dumbfounded. There were no complicated stats or fancy abilities – there was only a single, shocking stat: Physical Attack Power+30,000.

Normally speaking, every grade higher, the main stats would increase by 1 or 2 times. The Dark Samsara that Ling Chen had was a Mysterious God grade sword. It was a Double-Handed Sword, and it gave 5100 Physical Attack Power. Logically, a Saint Destroyer grade Double-Handed Sword should give 10,000 to 15,000 Physical Attack Power, but the Shura Emperor Sword gave a whole 30,000 Physical Attack Power.

Critical Chance, Pierce Chance, HIT, immunities... the Lunar Scourge and the Shura's power contained all of these things, and all of it was to the extreme; adding anymore would be unnecessary. As for skills, what skills could surpass the skills from the Shura's profession? As such, the sword for Shuras did not have any unnecessary stats or skills; all of its power was gathered into Physical Attack Power.

Ling Chen unequipped Chilling Star and held the Shura Emperor Sword in his hand, causing his Physical Attack Power to skyrocket. With the [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames], his Physical Attack Power was...

7,875,756! [Physical Attack Power 125,012 x 3 ([Burning Heart

Blood Massacre] x 21 [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames])

What's more, this figure was only his current Physical Attack Power. With the damage increase from [Shura Technique], the increased Critical Damage from [Burning Heart Blood Massacre], and the Shura's ridiculously powerful skills, any attack would be able to deal unbelievable amounts of damage.

“Shura Emperor Sword... you came just at the right time!” Ling Chen muttered as he gripped the Saint Destroyer grade sword. After his mind was renewed, his powerful mental power made it so that Ling Chen was incredibly calm even despite looking at the reborn Saint Destroyer grade sword. He raised the Shura Emperor Sword and Dark Samsara and slashed forwards...

“Shura's Merciless Slash!”

Crash!

As Ling Chen swept out with the Shura Emperor Sword and Dark Samsara, 2 crimson-black arcs appeared in front of him, accompanied by the sound of shattering glass. The instant the Shura Emperor Sword and Dark Samsara were lowered, two 1 metre long jet-black cracks appeared for 3 seconds before disappearing.

“Spatial Cracks! Little master, you actually created spatial cracks in this sub-dimensional space! This can only be achieved by dealing more than 500 million damage! Little master, you really did it! Even the 3 Moon Goddesses can't deal more than 500 million damage with a single attack!”

Qi Yue cried out in an extremely excited voice. Tearing space was already incredibly difficult and creating a crack in a sub-dimensional space was even more difficult than scaling the heavens. And yet, Ling Chen had evidently achieved this with his 2 attacks just then, and those 1 metre long cracks had lasted for 3 seconds!

Ling Chen's lips slightly curved upwards. Just then, when he had used the Shura Emperor Sword and Dark Samsara, he had clearly felt the space being torn – that feeling was completely different to when he had used the [Shura's Death Domain] to cut through normal space. Just then, he had only used the most basic skill from the Shura's profession, which had no negative effects. In that case...

“Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation!”

“Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest!”

This time, Ling Chen no longer used normal attacks, and he instead used the Shura's profession and War God's profession's ultimate skills. Upon being filled with power, the Shura Emperor Sword and Dark Samsara seemed to scream...

Crash!!!

An ear-piercing shattering and tearing sound rang out as the area around Ling Chen greatly twisted. Massive ripples swept out from where he was to even 100 metres away...

In front of Ling Chen, 2 massive black holes had appeared... the Dark Samsara in his left hand had created a black hole that was about 1 metre in diameter, while the Shura Emperor Sword in his right hand had created a 3 metre wide black hole. The 2 black holes immediately fused into an even larger hole, and with the Shura's power devouring it, the spatial gap that should have instantly disappeared did not shrink for a long time.

“Success! This is a spatial gap that can allow little master to escape the Lunar Sky Hell and appear above the Moon God Palace!” Qi Yue's image hurriedly said as the space rippled.

Looking at the trembling gap, Ling Chen did not feel any shock, and instead, a humourless smile appeared on his face. Just then, the feeling of tearing through space had been even clearer and more realistic. That feeling told him that if he used [Extreme

Shura's Death Domain], the result would not just be a simple gap, and it might even destroy the entire Lunar Sky Hell. This was how terrifying the Shura's power was!

"I can finally go out now," Ling Chen muttered in a low voice and walked not too slowly or too quickly into the gap. He knew that this spatial gap would not immediately close – no one knew clearer than him just how much power those 2 strikes had contained.

When he completely stepped into the spatial gap, the scenery in front of him instantly shifted. The oppressive darkness disappeared, as did the rotten smell. His vision was now filled with white clouds, the blue sky, beautiful structures, and all sorts of flowers and grasses, and he could smell incredibly fresh air in his nose. It was as if he had crossed from hell to heaven in a single step.

This was right above the Moon God Palace. Just as Qi Yue had said, the Lunar Sky Hell was hidden within a spatial crack above the Moon God Palace.

Just as Ling Chen appeared, the clear skies suddenly became overcast, and the atmosphere became incredibly oppressive. In just a few seconds, dark clouds covered the entire sky above the Moon God Palace... following this, 2 massive black clouds slammed together...

Crack! Crack! Crack!!!

Lightning bolts that were metres thick descended, slamming towards Ling Chen who had just appeared from the spatial crack...

+9,350,00, +15,680,000, +22,910,000!

The 3 lightning bolts accurately landed on Ling Chen's body, but he did not panic at all. Instead, he stuck out his chest, spread out his arms, and closed his eyes as if he was welcoming this baptism of lightning. When the lightning came into contact with him, it did not deal any damage, and it was instead completely absorbed into

his Thunder God's Bulwark.

“Moon God Clan, I'm back.” After feeling the pleasantness of the lightning, Ling Chen lightly muttered, “Before, I might have been quite reluctant to take the Moon Goddesses' blood and may have felt guilty about it, but now, hahaha...”

Looking down at the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies who had appeared because of the dark clouds and tribulation lightning, Ling Chen started to evilly laugh.

Chapter 755 - [Sacrificial Slaughter]

“This is... tribulation lightning? Eh? Why is there tribulation lightning descending on Moon God Island?”

In the First Shrine, Moon Goddess Blue Heart opened her eyes and cried out in dismay. What’s more, this was extremely powerful tribulation lightning!

White Snow and Purple Dress simultaneously opened their eyes. They looked at each other, their eyes filled with shock...

“This feeling... could it be...” White Snow muttered in dismay.

“... Shura!!” Purple Dress said this word incredibly coldly, and outside, 10 or so bolts of tribulation lightning descended. The force behind these lightning bolts was so great that it was even greater than when Saint Destroyer grade weapons were created. They had not seen such powerful tribulation lightning in over 10,000 years, and the only time was when the last Shura had appeared 10,000 years ago...

The word ‘Shura’ became clearer and clearer in the 3 Moon Goddesses’ minds. There were only 4 beings that had personally experienced the Shura’s might before: The Void Dragon God, White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart. That had been a terrifying shadow left on their hearts. Because of this, they would never allow a Shura to appear again, and they never thought that it was possible for a Shura to appear again. This was especially so because they had sealed the person who the Lunar Scourge had attached itself to into the Lunar Sky Hell a month ago... this was simply impossible!

The 3 Moon Goddesses quickly got up, and 3 lights flashed as they disappeared from the First Shrine. When they appeared above the Moon God Palace, they saw multiple savage dragon-like bolts of tribulation lightning.

Crack!! Crack!! Crack!!

The bolts of tribulation lightning became thicker and thicker, and with the berserkness of the lightning elemental essence, they all believed that it would be impossible for this tribulation lightning to continue for a long time. However, the tribulation lightning's target did not move at all as he floated there, allowing the tribulation lightning to freely fall onto his body. His eyes were closed and his face was raised as if he was enjoying the sensation.

Ling Chen's mental energy was far more powerful than it had been in the past, and the instant the 3 Moon Goddesses appeared, he had detected them. He silently opened his eyes and gazed at the 3 completely shocked Moon Goddesses... perhaps he was the first person to make them feel so dismayed in the past 10,000 years. "Beautiful Moon Goddesses, did you miss me after not seeing me for a month? I'm back now, so how are you going to receive me?"

[Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames]'s effects still had not yet ended, and Ling Chen evilly smiled as his body was covered with crimson flames. He had the Evil God's Mask on his face and had a large, black sword in each of his hands. Countless thick bolts of lightning fell on his body and adding on the fiendish aura around the Moon God Palace... the scene seemed as if a demonic god had descended to the world, bathing itself in lightning, seeming incredibly horrifying.

"S-Shura... it's really... a Shura!!" Blue Heart's eyes widened as her voice trembled. As a Moon Goddess, there was essentially nothing in the world that could cause her to feel fear...

Except a Shura!

In the next second, Blue Heart saw Ling Chen's features and her voice shook even more, "It's him! It's that Ling Tian who we sealed into the Lunar Sky Hell! How could... How could it be like this... just what's going on?"

"He's become a Shura... and escaped from the Lunar Sky Hell..."

and he's holding the Shura Emperor Sword... indeed, just what happened?" White Snow muttered in shock.

"This isn't the most terrifying thing," Purple Dress said coldly as she frowned. "Even though he's a weak otherworlder, his aura is not at all weaker than the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor's from 10,000 years ago. What's more, haven't you all realised that he's talking to us with his consciousness intact... and what's most horrifying is that... he doesn't fear the tribulation lightning!"

Purple Dress' words caused White Snow and Blue Heart to both feel completely alarmed.

Just then, they had been too dismayed by the appearance of a Shura to notice anything else. After hearing Purple Dress's words, they realised that the Shura in front of them was completely clear-minded, giving off an arrogant and relaxed aura. When the tribulation descended on him, no damage figures rose up, and even his movements were not hindered in the slightest. It was as if the bolts of tribulation lightning were just illusions.

Berserk Shuras were already terrifying enough, and a Shura with consciousness and rationality was terrifying beyond belief.

Back then, they had been able to destroy the Shura because of the tribulation lightning. Rather than them killing the Shura, it was more so that he had been killed by the lightning. This was because the Shura's aura was too powerful, and no matter if it was them or the Void Dragon God, none of them had been able to get close to him. Their attacks had been easily shattered by his incredibly powerful attacks... that's right, shattered. Whenever they were hit by the Shura's attacks, even his most basic attacks, they felt such hellish pain that they would lose their ability to fight for a while.

The Scorpio Orb's effects stacked with the Shura's passive abilities, so when the Shura attacked, not only did the attacks ignore any pain reduction, but it also gave an extra 800% pain! That pain was even worse than 10,000 arrows piercing through

one's heart. Under that kind of extreme pain, even the 3 Moon Goddesses almost lost consciousness. Let alone fight, they were barely able to stand.

Nearly 70% of the Shura's lifeforce had been eaten away by the tribulation lightning 10,000 years ago. Without the tribulation lightning, the ones who would have been destroyed back then would have been the Void Dragon God and the 3 Moon Goddesses.

As such, a conscious Shura who did not fear the tribulation lightning was something that they could not help but utterly fear.

More and more Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies gathered around, looking at Ling Chen, who seemed like a demonic god from a bloody hell. All of their expressions were ones of complete astonishment and fear; even the 3 Moon Goddesses did not give off an aura that made them feel so suffocated.

Ling Chen revelled in the 3 Moon Goddesses' reactions and expressions. He narrowed his eyes as he smiled, saying, "What is it? You don't welcome me? Come to think of it, I should thank you for sealing me into the Lunar Sky Hell; otherwise, I would not have been able to complete the Shura Emperor Sword, nor would I have made the decision to become a Shura. That way, I wouldn't have obtained such invincible power that did not cost me my consciousness. As such, I should properly thank you all today."

After saying that final sentence, Ling Chen smiled. Of course, the way he was going to thank them was by using a man's most powerful instrument to send them to the seventh heaven...

"Who would have thought that we would create a Shura by sealing him into the Lunar Sky Hell, and he even was able to escape from the Lunar Sky Hell! This has never happened ever since the Lunar Sky Hell was created. Who would have thought... an otherworlder would become a Shura, and his aura isn't weaker than the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor's at all. I thought that he would not be able to threaten us at all even if he used the current Lunar

Scourge to create a Shura.” White Snow took in a deep breath as her large chest heaved.

“Then... what should we do? If he’s as powerful as the Shura from 10,000 years ago, still has his consciousness, and doesn’t fear tribulation lightning, it’ll be impossible for us to take him down,” Blue Heart said anxiously.

White Snow slightly frowned and slowly said, “Him retaining his consciousness may not be a bad thing. Back then, the Shura lost his nature, and he existed only to kill and destroy. However, this Shura has not lost his consciousness; if he’s not an evil person, he won’t do what the Shura did back then. If his heart is wicked, even if we sacrifice the entire Moon God Clan, we have to destroy him!”

After speaking, White Snow raised her head and looked towards the arrogant-looking Ling Chen. “Who would have thought that a Shura would descend again. Back then, we scattered the Lunar Scourge’s 12 God Orbs in the most extreme places and hid the Lunar Scourge’s main body in an abyss that was thousands of metres below the surface so that the Lunar Scourge would never be able to resurface.”

“And then?” Ling Chen continued to bathe in the lightning, looking completely calm and unruffled as the energy within the Thunder God’s Bulwark increased. This was tribulation lightning, and it was not at all inferior to the Phoenix Royal Clan’s Phoenix God Heavenly Flames.

White Snow’s chest once again slightly heaved as she said in a calm voice, “Even though you’re a Shura, you haven’t lost yourself; this is great fortune amidst misfortune. Even though you’re quite arrogant, you’re not an evil person and will not commit a massacre like before. As such, as long as you don’t commit heinous crimes and use that power for righteous purposes, our Moon God Clan will not punish you like we punished the Shura 10,000 years ago. There will be no need for us to destroy or seal away the Lunar Scourge before you die.”

“Does that mean you’re letting me go?” Ling Chen continued to smile. A month ago, he had not been able to even breathe in front of these Moon Goddesses, and now, he could look down on them arrogantly as a peerless expert. The dark clouds in the sky continuously roiled about restlessly because they found that the tribulation lightning could not harm this terrifying Shura at all. The descending tribulation lightning gradually decreased and became weaker, while the colliding thunderclouds continued to give off louder and louder rumbling as if the heavens were roaring in indignation and anger.

“If you don’t do evil, we naturally won’t make things difficult for you. Moreover, with your current strength, if you want to leave, even if our whole clan attacks, we won’t be able to stop you,” White Snow said slowly with her soft and breezy voice.

“Really? I thought that we’d have to fight before I left,” Ling Chen said as he shrugged, a bored and disappointed look appearing on his face. “Alright, since you’re so kind and merciful, I’ll thank you and leave. However, before I leave, I need to properly ‘thank’ you all. Otherwise, I’ll feel bad when I leave. I also need to take something when I leave.”

“Hmm?” White Snow and Purple Dress simultaneously frowned.

“Give me the Moon God Orb,” Ling Chen slowly said as he crossed his arms.

“Absolutely not!” White Snow did not hesitate at all as she refused. She knew clearly just what it would mean for a Shura to have the Moon God Orb. If this Shura really obtained the Moon God Orb and summoned the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear], there would truly be no way for them to stop him anymore.

“Is that so? In that case...” Ling Chen’s gaze became incredibly sharp as the crimson-black flames also flared. The fiendish aura around him became several times more intense, causing the surrounding Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies to cry

out. Ling Chen continued and said, “I’ll have to take it myself then!”

As Ling Chen spoke, he shot out towards the First Shrine like an arrow exploding out of a bow.

“Stop him!!”

As White Snow cried out, the surrounding 80 or so Moon God Representatives and the 100 or so Moon Ladies rushed up towards Ling Chen... each of the Moon God Representatives were powerful enough to control an entire continent, and they were existences that Ling Chen could only look up to in the past. All of the Moon Ladies were at least Heaven’s End grade as well. Facing this sort of group was something that he could not even imagine before... but now, facing these 80 or so Moon God Representatives and 100 or so Moon Ladies, he did not even show a trace of panic, and he instead calmly laughed.

“Since you dare to obstruct a Shura, let me give you a taste of hell!”

“Sacrificial Slaughter!!”

Bang!!

A large blood-red mist exploded out from Ling Chen’s body, instantly spreading nearly 1,000 metres around him. Sacrificial Slaughter had a range of 300 metres, but with [Burning Heart Blood Massacre], the range was increased by 200%, covering all of the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies.

“Ding... the Aries Orb’s effects have been activated, [Sacrificial Slaughter]’s negative effects have been nullified.”

Chapter 756 - The Unstoppable Shura

Within the blood-red mist, countless pitiful screams sounded out. All of the Moon God Representatives and Moon ladies flew backwards like broken kites and landed heavily on the ground.

Ling Chen did not add the body-shattering or instant-death effects to this [Sacrificial Slaughter]; instead, he only caused all of them to lose 30% of their HP – otherwise, those Moon Ladies would have been dead without a doubt, and their bodies would have been shattered to pieces. Even the Moon God Representatives had a 25% chance of being instantly killed. However, Ling Chen did not reduce the 800% pain at all, and even the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies' minds collapsed under the extreme pain, and all they could do was scream.

All of this was only from Ling Chen's first attack. Now, Ling Chen was so powerful that he did not need to put these Moon God Representatives in his eyes at all. He looked down with a sympathetic look. "You should thank me for being merciful. Otherwise, you beauties would have become a mountain of broken corpses. That scene wouldn't be very beautiful." After speaking, Ling Chen's body once again turned into a bolt of lightning and shot towards the First Shrine.

With Broken Shadow activated, Ling Chen could travel hundreds of kilometres in an instant. As he sped forwards, a holy light suddenly appeared above him, covering his body. He had experienced this light before – it was the Goddess Fate White Snow's 'Cage of Fate', which could seal away all of his equipment. However, the current Ling Chen did not even bother looking at it, and he allowed the white light to cover his body... in the next instant, the white light came into contact with his body, but it reacted as if it had touched the most terrifying in the world and quickly retreated.

"No! His aura's too powerful now, and even my Cage of Fate isn't

able to stop him!” White Snow said in a panicked voice.

“Hmph! You want to take the Moon God Orb... wishful thinking!” A bone-piercingly cold voice cut through the air. Moon Goddess Purple Dress’s body flashed and appeared above Ling Chen’s body, her snow-white hands quickly pressing downwards.

“Space Lock!” A tender cry sounded out as the area tens of metres wide around Ling Chen was completely locked down, causing Ling Chen’s body to freeze... however, this only lasted for less than a second before countless cracks started to spread along the spatial lock. Finally, with a ‘ping’, Ling Chen escaped from the spatial lock, causing it to completely collapse.

A look of deep shock appeared on Purple Dress’ body. “My spatial power... can’t seal him.”

“The Shura’s power can destroy anything; he was able to even destroy a sub-dimensional space like the Lunar Sky Hell, so how could normal spatial locks stop him?” White Snow shook her head, a solemn look on her face. “No! We can’t let him take the Moon God Orb! Even though his attack power is on par with the Shura from back there, he’s a player from another world, so his lifeforce must be incredibly weak. We might be able to kill him!”

“But since he’s a player from another world, he can limitlessly revive; what use will it be to kill him once? No matter what we do, we won’t be able to truly kill him,” Blue Heart said anxiously. This reminded White Snow and Purple Dress of their bleak reality, causing their hearts to once again tremble.

That’s right, he was an otherworlder... no matter how many times he died in the Mystic Moon world, he would be brought back immediately, and he would never truly die. This meant that not only was this Shura conscious and immune to lightning, but he was also even unkillable!

“We can’t let him obtain the Moon God Orb no matter what!” Looking down at the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies

who were no longer able to fight, a dark haze appeared on White Snow's face. She was worried because this Shura could barely be controlled, but at least he had not gone berserk, and he did not have an aura of evil about him. However, if he really did obtain the Moon God Orb, he would not be able to be controlled at all, and let alone the Moon God Clan, even if all of the most powerful clans allied together, they would not stand a chance at stopping him.

Ling Chen quickly advanced and arrived before the First Shrine in the blink of an eye. At this moment, he suddenly saw a white light flash as White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart simultaneously appeared in front of the First Shrine. Following this, 3 blinding white lights shone out: 3 Moon God Arrows that contained the powers of Fate, Order, and Freedom shot towards him.

From their appearances, the arrows looked just like normal elemental arrows. However, these were arrows of judgment from the 3 Moon Goddesses, and any one of them could easily tear through the sky and pierce into the earth. Ling Chen did not dodge them; the Shura Emperor Sword swept out to meet the 3 arrows of judgment, drawing out a blood-red arc. Instantly, the space in front of Ling Chen twisted, causing the 3 arrows of judgment to collide with the twisting space and then shatter soundlessly, turning into motes of white light that covered the sky.

“Ahh!” Blue Heart cried out, and even White Snow and Purple Dress had looks of disbelief on their faces. This was because Ling Chen's simple sword strike had not only twisted space, but it had also easily shattered their powerful attacks.

When one's power grew to a certain extent, there was nothing that it could not shatter, including energy. In the Mystic Moon world, shattering attacks was even more difficult than shattering space. The only one who could do such a thing was a Shura! With the Shura Emperor Sword in his hand, Ling Chen felt a wondrous feeling that he could destroy anything. When he destroyed the 3

Moon Goddesses' attacks with a simple swing of his sword, a calm and confident smile appeared on his face.

“Don't worry about the Moon God Palace; just stop him!”

As White Snow yelled out, an orb of white light suddenly exploded in front of Ling Chen. At the same time, he felt a sense of danger from all around him. He looked around and found that there were hundreds, if not thousands... of arrows of judgment pointing towards him.

Chi, chi, chi, chi, chi, chi...

The sound of the air being torn chaotically mixed together as innumerable arrows of judgment flew towards Ling Chen. Ling Chen frowned and sent out 2 [Shura's Exterminating Slashes] to the sides, destroying almost all of the arrows of judgment within 10 metres of him. However, following this, more arrows of judgment sped over, and the space around him also started to stir... evidently, Purple Dress was preparing to use the energy from ripping open space to forcefully create a dimensional fracture!

Ling Chen started to feel quite annoyed and stopped attacking the arrows of judgments. He also ignored the space that was about to erupt around him, and he gave a low roar as a light covered his body...

“Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor!”

Chi, chi, chi, chi...

Countless arrows of judgment fell on his body, but they were unable to harm him at all. The space around him erupted, but it was completely ineffective against him. Ling Chen didn't hesitate as he rushed up towards the arrows of judgment, and he arrived before the 3 Moon Goddesses in a few breaths. He narrowed his eyes and roared in a low voice, “If you don't want hundreds of bloody wounds, get out of the way!”

“Purgatory Blades!”

The sky, covered by dark clouds, became a blood-red colour after Ling Chen roared. There was a faint, demonic laughing face in the sky, following which countless blood-red lights appeared in the sky, completely covering it and causing the lighting to become dimmer. The blood-red lights then started to fall like rain.

“Hurry and go!!”

When the blood-red sky appeared, the 3 Moon Goddesses' faces completely fell. They, who had fought against the Shura before, knew what this skill was... that year, countless Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies had died because of this attack. As Moon Goddesses, they did not fear the damage from the Purgatory Blades, but they could not help but fear the extreme pain that the Shura's attacks brought. A single attack was enough to make a Moon God Representative feel so much pain that she was unable to fight, and these Purgatory Blades continuously dealt damage over an extended period of time, bringing about a true purgatory pain!

At the same time, the Shura's attacks ignored this world's gore-censor, and once they fell into the rain of Purgatory Blades, their bodies would be cut with countless wounds... they were certain that Ling Chen's words were not simply to scare them – rather, hundreds of wounds would be on the light end. If they could not quickly escape from the Purgatory Blades, thousands of wounds covering every inch of their bodies was possible. Even though they were the 3 Moon Goddesses, they were first and foremost women; they feared pain and their bodies and faces being torn apart.

With Purple Dress's spatial teleportation, the 3 Moon Goddesses instantly disappeared from within the Purgatory Blades' attack range. Countless blood-red blades rained down the instant they disappeared, landing onto the Moon God Palace's ground, destroying and damaging many of the Pavilions.

With [Burning Heart Blood Massacre], Ling Chen's [Purgatory Blades] had a range of 1,500 metres, and it lasted for 30 seconds. Within that period of time, no creature would be able to enter that area even if they had Absolute Defence. In front of the Lunar Scourge, Absolute Defence was like mere clouds.

The 3 Moon Goddesses attacked from over 1,000 metres away, and each of their attacks could cause massive damage. However, Ling Chen completely ignored them, rushing towards the First Shrine... he did not need to attack at all because the protective barrier in front of the First Shrine had already been crushed by the Purgatory Blades.

Ling Chen rushed into the First Shrine and checked the Lunar Scourge's reaction. Soon, he saw a silvery-white orb on a jade pillar at the end of the First Shrine.

"Found you, Moon God Orb," Ling Chen said as he gave a pleased smile. A month ago, the Moon God Clan was an ultimate existence that he did not even have the right to look up to. In order to sneak into the Moon God Palace, he and Fey had spent much effort, but they had ended up failing regardless. Now, he could openly charge into the First Shrine, and even the powerful Moon God Clan was unable to stop him at all. The Moon God Orb was right before him.

This was how powerful the Shura, which all creatures feared, was.

Seeing Ling Chen charge into the First Shrine, the 3 Moon Goddesses' hearts became taugth. Blue Heart yelled out worriedly, "What do we do? What do we do? We can't go near him, and all of our attacks are useless... what do we do?"

"There's nothing we can do!" White Snow shook her head and lightly breathed out. Now, she had instead become calm. "He's a Shura who isn't weaker than normal Shuras at all, and yet he still has his consciousness and does not fear tribulation lightning. He's simply unstoppable. The Moon God Orb is going to fall into his

hands.”

“But...”

“Now, we can only pray that he won’t use the Shura’s power for evil.” White Snow looked at the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies in the distance and slowly said, “Apart from the fact that he cannot be controlled at all, we don’t have to worry too much. Just then, he was able to kill most of our Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies and stain the Moon God Palace with blood, but he did not do so. This at least shows that not only does he still have his consciousness, but that his nature is also not affected by the Shura’s power. His nature is still benevolent, and he will not commit a massacre like 10,000 years ago.”

“I hope that’s the case,” Purple Dress said reluctantly and helplessly. Even though he was not evil, the appearance of an existence that could suppress the Moon God Clan was something that they could not accept.

Chapter 757 - Lunar Scourge Divine Spear

With Ling Chen's speed, going from the entrance of the First Shrine to the end took only an instant. The instant the orb came into his hands, the Lunar Scourge's 12 God Orbs lit up with a similar light. This light confirmed that the orb in his hands was definitely one of the Lunar Scourge's orbs. With the Shura's indomitable power, even this orb, which was hidden away in the most impossible of places, easily fell into his hands... obtaining this orb was even easier than obtaining any of the other orbs.

The orb in his hands was almost twice as big as the other orbs, and the light it gave off was even more intense. Ling Chen held it in front of him, looking at its stats expectantly.

[Moon God Orb]: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Super Saint Destroyer, Attributes: None, Equipment Requirements: Can only be socketed into the Lunar Scourge. Effects: HP+50,000,000 and can summon and put away the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] at will.

The Moon God Orb's effects caused even Ling Chen, whose mental state became many times stronger than before, to feel completely dumbfounded. His hands slightly trembled, and he almost threw up the Moon God Orb in excitement.

This Moon God Orb's grade was not Saint Destroyer as Ling Chen had expected but Super Saint Destroyer! This meant that it was something that surpassed even the Saint Destroyer grade!

50,000,000... that's right, a 5 followed by seven os! The Moon God Orb gave him a whopping 50 million HP! With the Virgo Orb's bonus and various other bonuses, the Moon God Orb gave him around 300 million HP!! It was even more than what Heaven's End grade creatures had! With this sort of HP, even the 3 Moon Goddesses would not be able to insta-kill him with their powerful attacks.

Just this stat alone was enough to make the Moon God Orb completely and utterly heaven-defying. Even a Saint Destroyer grade equipment should not give such monstrous stats, and it was completely worthy of the grade of Super Saint Destroyer. However, the Moon God Orb's effects were not just that: It also allowed him to summon the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear].

Lunar Scourge Divine Spear... this was the spear that the Lunar Scourge's ultimate destructive skill, [God-Killing Moon], had mentioned! So it wasn't a separate existence, and it instead existed within the Moon God Orb. Ling Chen became quite excited and hurriedly socketed the Moon God orb into the Lunar Scourge.

“Ding... the [Moon God Orb] has been successfully socketed. Your base HP+50,000,000, and you can summon the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] at will.”

Ling Chen looked at his current HP: 301,342,080!

This was a HP figure that could not appear on a player; it was a truly astronomical figure in the world of players!

“Ding... the Lunar Scourge's unique lunar skill, [Eternal Moon Grief], has been unlocked.”

“Ding... all 12 God Orbs and a Saint Orb have been socketed into the Lunar Scourge. Lunar scourge's unique lunar skill [Crescent Moon] has been upgraded into [Half Moon].”

[Half Moon]: Lunar Scourge exclusive lunar soul skill. When activated, the Lunar Scourge's lunar energy forms a half moon in the sky, letting out mysterious moonlight. Can be activated at any time and cancelled at any time. Can be cast for a maximum of 30 minutes per day. No MP cost.

[New Moon] had been unlocked after 6 God Orbs had been returned, [Crescent Moon] had been unlocked after 12 God Orbs had been returned, and [Half Moon] had been unlocked now that a Saint Orb had been returned. The unlocking of [Half Moon]

allowed the [Moon] to remain for longer period time, and it also increased the might and range of the related lunar skills. Most importantly... with [Half Moon], Ling Chen could now use [Eternal Moon Shadow], [Eternal Moon Flare], and [Eternal Moon Grief]!

[Eternal Moon Grief]: Gentle moonlight spills down to silently corrode the targets' minds, erasing all memories related to strength and magic, making them permanently forget all battle skills and abilities.

Effects: A super long-range skill, its maximum range is determined by the form of the [Moon]. Cannot be used with [Moon], [New Moon], or [Crescent Moon]. Maximum range is 3,000 metres with [Half Moon], 10,000 metres with [Waxing Moon], 30,000 metres with [Full Moon], and 600,000,000 metres with [Broken Moon]. Once activated, all targets' skills (including equipment skills) will disappear forever. Costs 3 MP, cooldown time: 1 month.

Eternal Moon Grief's effects were just as Ling Chen had expected, and it was just as terrifying as Eternal Moon Shadow and Eternal Moon Flare. Once affected by the skill, all of their skills would permanently disappear, turning them into a complete noob. To most martial experts, this was even crueller than killing them.

Now that [Half Moon] had been unlocked, Ling Chen could use all 3 of these monstrous skills! With these 3 skills, even if he didn't have the Shura's profession, he would be able to do as he wished in the Mystic Moon world.

“Congratulations little master on obtaining the Moon God Orb; this was something that even the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor was unable to do 10,000 years ago,” Qi Yue said joyously within Ling Chen's mind. “Little master can summon the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear now. This spear, which has not seen the sun or sky in 10,000 years, must be feeling incredibly impatient.”

After Qi Yue spoke, Ling Chen put away the Dark Samsara and

stretched out his hand, muttering, “Lunar Scourge Divine Spear.”

Ding...

A lightning-like white light shot out from the Lunar Scourge into Ling Chen’s hand and then instantly formed into a silver spear.

The spear shone with a faint light. It was more than 2 metres long, but it was incredibly light. The spear’s body was elegant and flawless, and the spearhead was shaped as a crescent moon. After being grasped in Ling Chen’s hand, the entire spear trembled as if it was feeling joyful and excited upon seeing the sun and sky again.

[Lunar Scourge Divine Spear]: Type: Spear of Heaven’s Wrath, Grade: Unable to be determined, Equipment Requirements: Master of the [Lunar Scourge]. A spear with an unknown history, it is made of unknown materials and has an unknown power core. It is an item that seems to have been left behind from ancient times, and it contains enough power to destroy the heavens and earth and obliterate the stars and moon. It was sealed into the [Moon God Orb] for unknown reasons, and only the Lunar Scourge’s master can summon it and use it.

Stats: Physical Attack Power+32,000, Magic Attack Power+32,000, Strength+1,000, Constitution+1,000, Agility+1,000, Spirit+1,000, Movement Speed+100, Luck+10, Comprehension+10, Fire Resistance+30%, Water Resistance+30%, Wind Resistance+30%, Lightning Resistance+30%, Earth Resistance+30%, Light Resistance+50%, Darkness Resistance+10%.

Bonus Attributes: Parry Level: 20. Contains the [Heaven’s Wrath] debuff. Every time a Lunar Scourge Divine Spear skill is used, maximum HP and maximum MP will be permanently reduced by 1000.

Bonus Skills:

[Peerless]: Passive Ability. When attacking with the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear], it will deal 2 identical amounts of damage

to the target.

[Shattered Moon]: Gathers the spear's power into the crescent moon-shaped spearhead, creating a large moon of power. When the moon of power shatters, the surroundings fall into an abyss of disaster. Effects: It is a super long-range destructive attack, and the largest area is 5000 metres around the user, dealing 8000% damage to the surrounding targets with a 100% chance of adding a 30 second [Blind] status. When focused on a single target, damage is increased to 15,000%. Costs 50,000 MP, cooldown time: 1 hour.

[Heaven's Tears]: The spear flies to the heavens, sorrowfully crying before turning into tens of thousands of spear shadows, falling like a destructive rain from the gods, destroying everything within 30 kilometres and dealing 10,000% damage. Costs 2,800,000 MP, cooldown time: 3 days. After using this skill, the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] will fall silent for a day and return to the Moon God Orb, and it cannot be summoned within a day.

[God-Killing Moon]: The Lunar Scourge's ultimate destructive skill. Condenses heaven's power, gathers moonlight, causes demons to weep, slays gods, and destroys buddhas. Requires the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] to activate, Attack Damage: ??? (Unable to be determined), range: ??? (Unable to be determined). Can only be used with [Full Moon] and [Broken Moon]. After using the skill, the [Moon] will immediately disappear, and the [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] will not be able to be used for 3 months (cannot be nullified by the Aries Orb's effects). Cooldown time: 1500 years (cannot be refreshed by the Libra Orb's effects).

Powerful! Indescribably, unbelievably powerful!

From the Moon God Orb's Super Saint Destroyer grade, Ling Chen guessed that the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear would be at least Saint Destroyer grade. However, how could the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear only be Saint Destroyer grade? From its stats, it had completely surpassed the Saint Destroyer grade... no, it even completely surpassed the Super Saint Destroyer grade!

The incredibly mighty Saint Destroyer grade [Shura Emperor Sword] gathered all of its strength into Physical Attack Power, giving it the extreme stat of Physical Attack Power+30,000. And yet, this [Lunar Scourge Divine Spear] gave even more Physical Attack Power than the [Shura Emperor Sword], and its overall stats and bonus skills were completely shocking... it was a bug-like existence! A heaven-defying equipment that even the heavens and earth feared – no wonder it had the [Heaven’s Wrath] debuff.

However, Ling Chen only glanced at the debuff that decreased his HP and MP by 1,000 each time he used a Lunar Scourge Divine Spear skill and paid it no further attention. After all, with the Aries Orb, he could ignore any negative effects from skills from the Lunar Scourge.

Ling Chen didn’t hesitate as he swapped out the Dark Samsara for the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear and then rushed out of the First Shrine. The instant he came out of the First Shrine, the dark clouds in the sky became even more agitated, following which, even more berserk tribulation lightning madly slammed towards him... as well as the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear in his hand.

Crack! Crack! Crack!!

+40,800,000!

+63,008,600!

+88,000,000!

3 bolts of tribulation lightning which had been gathering for a long time and possessed much more power than the previous ones slammed into Ling Chen’s body. The force from the crackling of lightning caused the entire Moon God Island to quake, and massive waves crashed within the surrounding ocean. Ling Chen closed his eyes, blissfully enjoying the comfortable feeling, and he did not forget to absorb the lightning into the Thunder God’s Bulwark.

“Qi Yue, tell me, am I invincible in my current state? I feel... that

I can easily step on even the Moon God Clan, the most powerful faction in the Mystic Moon world.”

With the Shura Emperor Sword in his left hand and Lunar Scourge Divine Spear in his right hand, Ling Chen looked at White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart, who were floating some distance away, giving off an aura that could cause the entire Mystic Moon world to tremble.

Chapter 758 - [Eternal Moon Shadow]

“He came out... eh? That spear in his hand... could it be...”

“The Lunar Scourge Divine Spear. It’s said that it’s the only True God Spear left behind from ancient times, and it was sealed with the Lunar Scourge Armour in the Lunar Scourge to prevent all of the True God Equipment from being destroyed along with all of the True Gods back then. If the Shura from 10,000 years ago was able to summon it, the entire Mystic Moon world would have been destroyed. Who would have thought that it would resurface 10,000 years later,” White Snow said as she sighed, feeling incredibly helpless and anxious. “He not only obtained the Shura’s power, but he now also has a True God Spear; there’s no one who can stop him anymore.”

“No, there’s still a way.” Purple Dress frowned as her eyes became filled with an icy determination. “If I expend all of my power, I’ll be able to use the god-sealing Purple Moon God-sealing Formation, and it will have a 90% chance to seal him in there forever.”

Purple Dress’ words gave Blue Heart a great fright, and she hurriedly said, “But if you do that, your power will completely disappear, and you will never recover... in fact, even your lifeforce might gradually be drained.”

“Don’t do this,” White Snow calmly said as she shook her head. “I said many times before that his consciousness and nature have not been affected even after obtaining the Shura’s power. Even though he has obtained this invincible power, he won’t do what the Shura did 10,000 years ago. In fact, he might not use his power for evil, and he might use it for good, protecting the player’s world. He might bring peace to the entire Mystic Moon world, so apart from us being unable to control him, all other worries might be unnecessary.”

Purple Dress fell silent for a while before her eyebrows slightly unfurrowed and she replied, “I hope that’s the case.”

“Even if it really comes to that and we have to use the Purple Moon God-Sealing Formation, the preparation time takes at least 1 month, so we can’t seal him here immediately anyways. As such, what we need to do is to make him leave here as soon as possible and try not to come into conflict with him. Otherwise, our Moon God Clan’s tens of thousands of years of foundations might be destroyed within a single day... you should all understand the Shura’s power.”

Whoosh!

A wild gale started to blow as Ling Chen’s body suddenly appeared in front of them, giving a lascivious smile as he looked at them. “3 beautiful goddesses, what are you secretly talking about? Can you talk a bit louder so I can listen?”

No more lightning fell after those 3 massive bolts of lightning. It was as if the lightning clouds had understood that it would not be able to harm him no matter how powerful the tribulation lightning was. The dark clouds in the sky chaotically moved around, colliding and causing furious rumbles.

Ling Chen’s frivolous tone caused the 3 Moon Goddesses to simultaneously frown, and White Snow calmly replied, “You’ve already obtained the Moon God Orb and have summoned the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, so there’s no reason for you to stay here anymore. Please leave. This isn’t a place you should stay.”

“Oh!” A surprised look appeared on Ling Chen’s face and his expression became one of amusement. “Heheh, the 3 beautiful Moon Goddesses are even more loving and benevolent than the legends say. Even though I intruded into the Moon God Palace, attacked Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies, and damaged 10 or so Shrines and over a thousand Pavilions, the 3 beautiful Moon Goddesses are not blaming me at all and are

instead allowing me to leave. Right, what makes me feel the most moved is that these 3 Moon Goddesses not only gave me the Shura's power, but they also gave me the Moon God Orb that I've wanted for a long time. How should I repay such a great favour? Heheheh..."

"Don't think you can act so arrogantly after obtaining the Shura's power and the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear!" Purple Dress could not keep calm like White Snow, a cold fury appearing on her face. "Get the hell out of here! If you dare to continue being arrogant, I'll definitely punish you."

"Hm? No, no, no," Ling Chen hurriedly waved his hands, looking extremely wronged. "Beautiful Moon Goddess, you must have misunderstood. In front of these 3 Moon Goddesses, I'm just a tiny player from another world; how could I be arrogant? The reason I haven't immediately left is because I want to express my lust – no, my gratitude – in a manly way... there's no other reason."

Even though Ling Chen was wearing the Evil God's Mask, it only covered half his face, and his lascivious smile could be fully seen. There was not a hint of gratitude within that smile. White Snow signalled at Purple Dress with her eyes, suppressing the ripples within her heart as she said softly, "Ling Tian, if you have any other objectives, just say them out loud. Honestly speaking, we don't want to become enemies with you."

"I just said that I'm only here still to show my gratitude." As Ling Chen spoke, his smile became wider. He raised his right hand and the Lunar Scourge flashed with a silver light. Ling Chen raised his head and looked up at the sky as he said with a smile, "First, let me use my most beautiful moonlight to show my admiration towards your beauty."

The 3 Moon Goddesses also raised their heads, and they saw that a bright moon had appeared without them even realising it. The moon was not a full moon, but it was only a half moon, hanging in the sky during daytime. However, its light was not covered by the

sunlight at all, and it looked incredibly beautiful and clear.

“This is the [Moon] created by the Lunar Scourge!” White Snow said as she suddenly thought of something and cried out, “Watch out!”

As White Snow yelled out, the 3 Moon Goddesses were not able to react in time before the half moon rained down silver light, covering the 3,000 metres around Ling Chen, which was nearly half of the Moon God Palace.

In that instant, the wind stopped blowing and the clouds stopped moving. The 3 Moon Goddesses, as well as all of the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies covered by the light, all froze in place...

This was not the time barrier from Fey’s Lachesis, but the Eternal Moon Shadow released by the Lunar Scourge’s Half Moon!

“Ding... the Libra Orb’s effects have been activated, [Eternal Moon Shadow]’s cooldown time has been reset.”

The Half Moon’s [Eternal Moon Shadow] covered the 3,000 metres around Ling Chen, forming a gigantic circle with a diameter of 6,000 metres. Within this area, everything had been completely frozen; what’s more, this could last for 30 minutes!

A 30 minute, super long-range freezing skill – just how terrifying was that?

The Moon Goddesses could defend against any lunar skill released by the Lunar Scourge with only 12 God Orbs. However, with an extra Saint Orb, even the 3 Moon Goddesses were unable to resist at all. Under the moonlight, the 3 Moon Goddesses peacefully stood on the spot, unable to budge an inch.

“This is the Lunar Scourge’s Moon Shadow... Ling Tian, what are you doing?”

A look of panic appeared in White Snow’s eyes as her voice travelled into Ling Chen’s ears. Even though she was unable to

move, she was able to use her power to transmit her voice. Ling Chen looked around at the Moon God Palace, most of which had been frozen by the silver moonlight, and gave a satisfied laugh, “Don’t be so nervous, 3 beautiful Moon Goddesses; I just don’t want anyone to disturb us. Now, it’s time for me to show my thanks for the 3 Moon Goddesses.”

“We don’t want your thanks; hurry and cancel out your Moon Shadow! If you dare to do anything to us, the entire Mystic Moon world will become your enemy!”

“No, no! That won’t do!” Ling Chen wagged his finger, completely ignoring White Snow’s words. As he smiled, he unhurriedly walked over to the 3 Moon Goddesses. “As a kind human being, if I can’t properly show my thanks, even I won’t be able to forgive myself... so, who should I start with?”

As he spoke, Ling Chen came right before the 3 Moon Goddesses, and he was only about 2 steps away from White Snow, who was the closest to him. At such a close distance, he could admire their facial features and bodies as much as he wanted... the 3 Moon Goddesses were the most powerful beings in the Mystic Moon world, and they also had flawless bodies and perfect faces. Their beauty was extreme to the point that it could not be described, even exceeding Yun Meng Xin’s beauty.

Ling Chen’s gaze slid down from their faces and became more and more obscene. The white, purple, and blue Moon Goddess dresses displayed their wonderful curves perfectly. Only when appreciating them at such a close distance could one realise that they were not just high and mighty Moon Goddesses but 3 women with incredibly enchanting and seductive bodies. Their chests were large and perky, filling the Moon Goddess dresses abundantly. Their Moon Goddess dresses clung to their figures perfectly, allowing Ling Chen to see that even though their breasts were so large and full and looked incredibly soft and bouncy, they did not sag at all. What’s more, their hips were incredibly sleek

like willows. Full breasts, large bottoms, and slender waists – all of the most beautiful body features a woman could have were perfectly combined in their bodies. Even though their bodylines were not as seductive as Qi Yue's, they were still incredibly beautiful and enchanting.

Ling Chen's gaze became hotter and hotter. At this moment, he heard Qi Yue's seductive voice in his head, "Little master, are you going to start taking the blood of the Moon Goddesses? Hehe... during the process, little master should properly enjoy himself; don't waste these 3 beauties... that's right, little master just needs to make sure the blood touches the Lunar Scourge; I will help little master absorb it within the Lunar Scourge... alright, I won't bother little master's enjoyment now."

Qi Yue's flirtatious voice stimulated Ling Chen's lust even more. He narrowed his eyes, throwing all caution to the wind and stepped forwards, almost pressing his body against White Snow's as he looked about her body...

His first target... White Snow!

Chapter 759 - Blood Of The Moon Goddesses

(1)

“What are you doing?!” As a mighty Moon Goddess, White Snow had never been so close to a man before.

“What am I doing? Of course I’m thanking you all; I already said it so many times.”

White Snow had incredibly white and soft skin, crystalline and deep eyes, lips like rose petals, an exquisite face, and a slender and long neck... the beautiful face in front of Ling Chen was completely unstained by the world, giving off a suffocating air of beauty. This peerlessly stunning Moon Goddess was defencelessly standing right in front of him, waiting for him to toy with her; even a god who had cast away all of his desires would not be able to hold himself back.

Ling Chen gave a wanton smile. If they hadn’t killed him and sealed him into the Lunar Sky Hell, making him feel that month of despair and agony, perhaps he wouldn’t have been able to bear laying his hands on them. Even if it was for Shui Ruo, he would have felt deeply guilty. However, now, with his vengeful nature, doing this was in the name of ‘taking revenge’, and he felt much more in the right, making him feel much less guilt. They had shown him no mercy, so how could he hold back against them? Ling Chen greedily looked at her incredibly enchanting body as his hands stretched towards the snow-white peaks under her white dress.

“Oh...”

As the proud peaks came into his hands, Ling Chen felt as if his hands were going to melt, causing him to give a pleasurable moan. This was because the woman he was defiling wasn’t just a peerlessly beautiful woman but the Moon Goddess Fate, one of the peak existences in the Mystic Moon world.

“Ahhhh!!!”

A trembling voice sounded out as terror appeared in White Snow’s eyes. “D-Don’t! Don’t!!”

“Ahhh!!! W-What are you doing? Let go of White Snow! Let go of her!” Blue Heart yelled.

“You bastard! Get your dirty hands off White Snow!” Purple Dress was like an ice sculpture, her voice filled with rage.

After being frozen by Eternal Moon Shadow, they had been quite surprised and confused, but they had not felt any fear. After all, they were Moon Goddesses, the most powerful beings in the Mystic Moon world, and they had held all of the power in the Mystic Moon world for over 10,000 years. They had never expected that anyone would dare to show any disrespect to them, nor did they believe that any man would have the courage and strength to touch their bodies or sully their purity.

When Ling Chen’s hand touched White Snow’s body – and one of her most sacred parts – White Snow reacted as if she had been struck by lightning, and Purple Dress and Blue Hearts’ minds also trembled. Their pupils constricted in disbelief, and they even felt dizzy, unable to believe what was happening.

Around them, the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies who had also been frozen by Eternal Moon Shadow clearly saw this scene as well, but they were unable to make any sound. Their pupils also contracted, and their hearts beat many times faster. They simply could not believe or accept this... the leader of the 3 Moon Goddesses was being defiled and sullied by a human.

None of this stopped Ling Chen’s actions or emotions at all. With his mental energy, how could anything affect him? Not only did he not stop, but he smirked smirked, rubbing and grabbing her large peaks even more vigorously. He enjoyed the feeling of her supple breasts to his heart's content, unwilling to let go. Even though the white dress was between her breasts and his hands, he could still

feel how soft and tender her breasts were. If he touched them directly, the feeling would be even better.

“Beautiful Moon Goddess, you don’t need to look so terrified. I’m showing my gratitude, so I’ll do my best and use all sorts of positions - no, ways - to send you up the peaks of pleasure that you’ve never experienced before and show you a true heaven. Only then will I be able to thank you for locking me in the Lunar Sky Hell for a month!”

Ling Chen wildly laughed as he enjoyed the feeling in his hands. Since he had made this decision, he would not stop. The Eternal Moon Shadow could last for 30 minutes, and within those 30 minutes, the 3 Moon Goddesses could not move at all, nor could any other beings move within the surrounding 3,000 metres, so he could do as he wished.

By now, how could the 3 Moon Goddesses not know that Ling Chen was not thanking them, but rather taking revenge for sealing him into the Lunar Sky Hell.

It was just that they naturally would not think that the main reason he was doing this was to obtain their blood to revive Shui Ruo.

“Stop your evil acts immediately...” White Snow could no longer maintain her calm and elegant tone; her voice was now trembling and filled with fear. “Otherwise, all creatures in the Mystic Moon world will become your enemy, and there’ll be nowhere for you to stay in the entire Mystic Moon world.”

According to the Mystic Moon world’s rules, if a female is assaulted by a male, they could summon lightning to punish the male; the worse the offense, the crueller the punishment. However, against Ling Chen, who did not fear lightning, the frozen White Snow had no way to protect herself.

“Heheheh.” Ling Chen squeezed, causing White Snow to moan. “You’ve already threatened me with that just then; don’t you have

something new to say? I don't even fear your Moon God Clan, so what else would I fear? Heh! Don't be too hasty, beautiful Moon Goddess; the real thanks has only begun!"

Half an hour was a bit short, so Ling Chen did not dally anymore and placed his hands on White Snow's hips, pulling her to him and falling to the ground. White Snow seemed to realise something, and her eyes became completely horrified, unable to even make a sound. At that moment, Ling Chen grabbed White Snow's white dress and vigorously pulled...

Which was when he experienced a problem.

In the Mystic Moon world, when someone put on equipment, only they could take it off. Even if they stood there without moving, it would be impossible for someone else to pull off their equipment and clothes. White Snow was wearing a long dress, and unless White Snow took it off, he would not even be able to lift it up, much less rip it off like in the real world. If that was the case, all Ling Chen could do was grope around her body on top of her dress; obtaining her blood would be impossible.

White Snow seemed to realise this, and the terror in her eyes lessened. Just as she was about to say something, she saw that Ling Chen did not seem disappointed or frustrated at all, and he instead started to strangely smile.

"Do you think I don't have a way around this?" As Ling Chen spoke, he took out a [Holy Spirit's Pearl] from his bag. Currently, Xiao Hui had created 3 of these pearls: one of them had been used on [Soul Demise], and he had not used the other 2 yet. Today, it was finally time to use them.

Ling Chen opened his skills page and evilly smiled, using the Holy Spirit's Pearl on [True Lucky Hand].

The LV5 True Lucky Hand was already incredibly cruel, and even the treasure creature Lucky Cat's True Lucky Hand was only LV5. If he used the Holy Spirit's Pearl, its maximum level would

increase by 20%, and it would be instantly raised to max level... in that case, what sort of effects would a LV6 True Lucky Hand have? Something that even the Lucky Cat did not have?

“Ding... the Holy Spirit’s Pearl has been successfully used. Your skill True Lucky Hand’s maximum level has been increased to LV6 and has been raised to max level.”

[True Lucky Hand]: Current Level: LV6, max level. The evolved version of [Lucky Hand], a godly skill that comes from the treasure creature Lucky Cat. Anyone who obtains this skill will receive world-dominating theft skills that will cause people to shudder at the sound of their name. Upon use, the user can use an unseen hand to steal any item from the target. Legends say that a pinnacle True Lucky Hand can instantly steal everything a target has. However, it is said that training to the pinnacle is as difficult as reaching the heavens, and even the Lucky Cat has not been able to unleash such power. With the Holy Spirit’s Pearl, its might has been raised to the extreme. Within a certain range, the user can steal gold, items, or equipment, whether they are being used or not. The user can choose whether to take a single thing or everything. Ignores level or grade and has complete certainty of success. It will also not be discovered by the target. Costs 50 MP, and because of how terrifying the skill is, it can only be used 5 times per day.

This did not disappoint Ling Chen at all. No, it was much more shocking that he had expected! After the Holy Spirit Pearl raised it past its limit, the LV6 True Lucky Hand allowed him to take everything away from his target, regardless of level and grade with complete certainty of success!!

In other words, if Ling Chen had levelled [True Lucky Hand] up to LV6 earlier, when he entered the Moon God Island, he could have instantly stripped the 3 Moon Goddesses!

This sort of effect was simply cruel to the extreme! Let alone using it 5 times per day, even once every 5 days would have been

too much. At the very least, he knew that even the invincible Shura would have had to avoided anyone who had this sort of skill.

However, since this skill had appeared on him, it was simply... too brilliant!

As the 3 Moon Goddesses watched on, Ling Chen's smile became dangerous. He let go of White Snow's dress, then...

None of the Moon Goddesses, Moon God Representatives, or Moon Ladies saw what had happened, nor did they see what Ling Chen did. In an instant, all of the clothes on White Snow's body... her Moon Goddess Dress, the Heart-Protecting Divine Mirror in front of her chest, White Moon Celestial Shoes, Moon Goddess jewellery... all of her equipment completely disappeared.

Snowy-white skin and a pair of large, soft breasts appeared before Ling Chen. Ling Chen's eyes lit up, a look of intoxication and passion within them. The exposed flesh was incredibly supple and tender, and her long, slim legs and feet looked like they were sculpted out of jade, beautiful enough to make one feel dizzy.

Ling Chen almost couldn't control his hands, and he started to move them around her body. At this moment, White Snow let out a shocked cry that she had never let out in over 10,000 years...

“Ahhh...”

Chapter 760 - Blood Of The Moon Goddesses

(2)

White Snow was a Moon Goddess, but she was also a woman. Her status as a Moon Goddess only made her even more embarrassed when completely exposed to a man.

“Ahhh...”

“You... let me go... let me go... don’t...” White Snow’s voice, which had remained calm all this time, started to contain a tone of pleading. She felt so embarrassed that she wanted to die, but her pride as a Moon Goddess didn’t allow her to show any panic. She gave up trying to threaten Ling Chen, hoping that his revenge towards them would end there... she desperately wished for everything that had happened today to only be a nightmare. After all, how could a Moon Goddess like her be defiled by a human?

“Let go of White Snow! Otherwise, even if I have to give up my life, I’ll seal you into the Purple Moon God-Sealing Formation!!”

“No! Hurry up and go away! You’re a bad person, a demon! White Snow even said you were not an evil person... you’re even worse than the Shura from 10,000 years ago!! If you continue to assault White Snow, I’ll...”

“Ahh...”

Purple Dress and Blue Heart continued to shriek when they suddenly heard a sob-like moan from White Snow...

The holy Moon Goddess blood flowed out of White Snow’s body, showing that this generation’s Goddess of Fate’s chastity was no more. At the same time, it signified the birth of the first Moon Goddess who had been tainted by a man... none of their voices or gazes could make Ling Chen stop or hesitate, and he unhesitatingly took White Snow’s virginity. Ling Chen did not forget to stretch down his hand, allowing the holy Moon Goddess blood to fall onto

the Lunar Scourge, after which it disappeared into it.

In that instant, Blue Heart and Purple Dress became completely dumbfounded, feeling as if an explosion had gone off within their hearts. All of the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies stared, feeling as if their hearts had been crushed from their rage and sorrow. They wanted to close their eyes, not wanting to see their Moon Goddess defiled by a human man, but because of Eternal Moon Shadow, they could only stare. They were unable to even look away or even blink, making it so that they could not miss a single second.

White Snow's eyes lost their focus, and she felt as if her entire world had collapsed. Her dignity and will had been completely shattered, and tears started to form in her eyes... following this, she felt her body being completely ravaged by this man, making her feel like a small boat being tossed and turned within a massive ocean...

“White Snow... White Snow... wuu...” Blue Heart sobbed. She and all of the Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies wanted to close their eyes, but none of them could do so, and they could only watch in anguish.

“Ling Tian! You demon! You'll definitely receive the cruellest punishment in the world! The worst judgment!!” Purple Dress's gaze was cold to the extreme as if it was an ice shard that was going to pierce through Ling Chen's body. She had not even hated the Shura from 10,000 years ago this much.

Until now, none of them dared to believe that this was real... no matter when, the Moon Goddesses had always been the highest existences in the Mystic Moon world, and they had been worshipped by countless beings. Let alone defile or commit blasphemy against them, no man had ever touched their sacred bodies before. To the humans, the Moon God Representatives were godlike existences, and even humans who had reached the peak of power would not dare to even think about defiling a Moon God

Representative, let alone a Moon Goddess.

However, this terrifying nightmare was, in fact, reality.

“Don’t worry, it’ll be your turns soon. If we have enough time, I might even show some of my favour to some of your Moon God Representatives. After all, I’m quite a generous person.”

Underneath him was a Moon Goddess who everyone worshipped. Just the thought of this alone made Ling Chen feel so pleasurable that he almost lost his senses. His mind was not taken over by the Shura’s power, but his temperament was no doubt affected by it. Otherwise, even if the Moon Goddesses had locked him into the Lunar Sky Hell before, he would not have felt guiltless like he did now.

“You demon! Our Moon God Clan has always been protected by the heavens; you’ll definitely suffer the heaven’s wrath!!” Purple Dress roared in fury and anger.

Ling Chen smirked... heaven’s wrath? The heavens had already displayed its wrath the instant he became a Shura, and the heavens had once again tried to punish him after he summoned the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear but so what? Not a single hair on his head had been harmed. He got off White Snow’s completely limp body, which was red from climaxing again and again, and he smiled as he walked over to Purple Dress. “Looks like the beautiful Goddess Order can’t wait anymore. Since it’s like that, how can I bear to make you feel disappointed? Come, let me see if your gaze and voice will still be as cold when you’re under my body.”

“D-Don’t come over here!”

Ling Chen cast another [True lucky Hand], instantly stripping Purple Dress of her clothes. A completely flawless body like White Snow’s was revealed, but it instead gave off a cold aura like an icy jade sculpture.

“Ah... Purple Dress!” Blue Heart cried out in fear.

Ling Chen did not immediately leap onto Purple Dress' body. Instead, he looked over at Blue Heart. "Beautiful Goddess Freedom, looks like you can't wait either. Aiya, this is quite a pain – I've only got one body... hmm, let's do this then."

Ling Chen cast a third [True Lucky Hand], making it so that Blue Heart became completely naked like White Snow and Purple Dress. Within their boundless embarrassment and despair, Ling Chen moved Purple Dress and Blue Heart so that they were facing each other, their breasts touching, after which he grinned lustfully and leapt onto them.

Weren't the Mystic Moon's 3 Moon Goddesses all high and mighty and worshipped by all creatures... in that case, he would play with 2 at once this time and see how they were different to normal women!

The Moon God Clan did not wake up from their nightmare. Instead, that nightmare became even darker. As Purple Dress moaned and Blue Heart sobbed, the blood of the Goddess Order and Goddess Freedom flowed out onto the Lunar Scourge and were absorbed inside.

The Moon God Representatives and Moon Ladies could not make any sounds, and they could only inwardly cry. The 3 Moon Goddesses had actually been defiled by a man within the same day. Now, even if they killed this person, they would not be able to change the fact that the 3 Moon Goddesses had lost their chastity.

Now, Ling Chen had obtained the blood of all 3 Moon Goddesses. Back then, he had never thought that the first thing he would obtain out of the 4 ingredients would be the blood of the Moon Goddesses. Now that he had fulfilled his goal, all that was left was to enjoy himself. He completely agreed with what Qi Yue had said – these were the incredibly dignified and beautiful Moon Goddesses; wasting even a second with them was an unforgiveable crime.

Dark clouds filled the sky, continuously booming as if even the

heavens were deeply enraged by this. However, even the heavens were unable to stop Ling Chen. Ling Chen was definitely the first, and only, person who dared to and had the power to cause such chaos within the Moon God Palace. Even he believed that this was definitely something that no one had ever done or would ever do again.

The [Moon] could only last for half an hour, and in order to make the most of his time, Ling Chen used his abundant experience and techniques to the extreme. He used all of the methods and positions he knew on White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart, causing these Moon Goddesses, who had maintained their vows of purity for 18,000 years, to feel like normal women for the first time in their lives.

Finally, the [Moon] in the sky started to flash, and just as it was about to disappear, Ling Chen stopped his bestial actions and put on his equipment while satisfyingly whistling. Only then did he saunter off. However, even he did not realise that he did not feel any guilt or shame at all after doing all of this apart from feeling incredibly pleased and refreshed. In fact, he even subconsciously thought that he had turned these 3 Moon Goddesses, who had lived for 18,000 years for nothing, into real women and that they should be thanking him.

This was partially due to Ling Chen's mental energy explosively increasing after the Mad Scientist's mental restriction was destroyed, and it was also partially due to the arrogant and aloof nature of the Shura's power, which ignored all virtues and morality.

One of the 4 ingredients for resurrection, blood of the Moon Goddesses: obtained!

After leaving the Moon God Island, Ling Chen checked the Moon Goddess blood that Qi Yue had collected then logged off. He knew that Tian Tian and the others were definitely worried sick after he had not logged off for a month.

As expected, when he opened his eyes, the first thing he saw was Tian Tian, her face covered with tears and filled with weariness. He felt a slight pain in his heart and gently hugged the stunned Tian Tian, saying apologetically, “I’m sorry Tian Tian for making you worried again.”

Only then did Tian Tian truly believe that Ling Chen had returned, and she stopped worrying that she was hallucinating. She dove onto his body and burst into tears. Feeling the tears drenching the front of his shirt, Ling Chen deeply breathed in and tightly hugged Tian Tian... during that 1 month in the Lunar Sky Hell, his mind had become more and more agitated primarily because he was worried about Tian Tian. He really didn’t know what Tian Tian would do if he couldn’t leave the Lunar Sky Hell and was sealed in there forever.

“Hehe, I told you Ling Chen would come back today, right?” Behind Tian Tian, Shadissika lightly smiled as a mysterious light glimmered in her star-like eyes.

Ling Chen, in my heart, no matter what you do, it won’t be evil. You’ll forever be someone who is imprinted on my soul.

It’s just that... the sinful and dirty me – do I really deserve to stay by your side?

If, one day, you found out the truth, would you still look at me with such a warm and loving gaze...

Looking at Ling Chen, Shadissika gradually felt more and more sentimental, and soon, she also leapt up and tightly hugged Ling Chen, burying her face in his embrace and breathing in that smell that she had missed, remaining silent for a long time...

Chapter 761 - A New Clue: 49554

After Ling Chen came out from the virtual world, the people who had been incredibly worried about him for the past month were finally able to relax. If it wasn't for the 'Purple Moon God-Sealing Formation' that sounded quite fearsome, Ling Chen would have used a [Vanishing Shadow] to go back and have a look to see how the 3 Moon Goddesses reacted after regaining their freedom... it would definitely be quite marvellous.

The second day, when Ling Chen logged on, system announcements sounded out, making him feel quite annoyed.

“Ding... important warning! Because you have committed unforgiveable crimes, the Moon God Clan has ordered your arrest. The Moon God Clan has already notified the main cities of each of Mystic Moon's continents as well as many powerful clans. As soon as you enter a human main city or a territory of the various clans, they will chase you down and kill you.”

“Ding... important warning...”

“Ding... important warning...”

“I say, I'm sure you didn't just take the Moon God Orb, right?”

Fey walked over to his side, a strange look on her face. “You've been listed as wanted by the Moon God Clan, and ever since yesterday, announcements have sounded out in all main cities and large territories ordering your arrest and death every 10 minutes. By now, it has sounded more than 100 times. Also, if any player provides any information on your whereabouts, they'll receive massive rewards, and if they can kill you, the rewards... are so great that even I want to kill you.”

“...Damn it, the Moon God Clan's women are that ruthless?” Ling Chen snorted and shrugged. After all, he was their first man, yet they were so desperate to hunt him down and kill him, and they

made it so that there was nowhere he could reside.

“This is the first time such a thing has happened in the Mystic Moon’s history. To be able to make the Moon God Clan hate you so much, I’m starting to suspect if you violated the 3 Moon Goddesses,” Fey said as she smirked. Of course, she had only said this casually, and she never would have thought... that Ling Chen really did violate all 3 of them.

“Ha... hahaha...” Ling Chen smacked his head and dryly laughed. “I just took a Moon God Orb; those women are too stingy... hmm? Wait.”

Ling Chen’s smile faded and he became pensive as he said, “Say, Fey, since the entire Moon God Clan is hunting me down, I’m sure they won’t stop without killing me, right? In that case, they’ll probably send Moon God Representatives to guard where I’ll most likely be, yes?”

“That’s right,” Fey nodded as she replied.

“Then they probably know that the place I’m most likely to appear is Ling Tian City. In that case, are there any...”

“Evildoer Ling Tian! Pay with your life!!”

As Ling Chen was speaking, a furious young woman’s voice sounded out from above. At the same time, an extremely dangerous aura descended, shooting towards Ling Chen.

Fey’s first reaction was to grab Ling Chen’s arm and activate the Lachesis’ power, teleporting with Ling Chen into the air 50 metres away, looking over to the source of the disturbance.

In front of them was a beautiful and angry-looking young woman in a white dress. The Moon God Light Dress on her body signified that she was a Moon God Representative, but evidently, she was not the Forgotten God Representative. She looked about 15 or 16 years old, and she looked quite young still – much too young to be a Moon God Representative. However, the furious attack from

before didn't seem too much weaker than Snow Cherry's or the Forgotten God Representative's...

Hm? Could she be an Apprentice Moon God Representative?

"Looks like your worries were not baseless; there's already a Moon God Representative standing guard here, waiting for you to appear. However, it looks like this little sister is only an Apprentice Moon God Representative... aiya! Even the well-nurtured Apprentice Moon God Representatives who never come out have come to kill you; the Moon God Clan must incredibly hate you," Fey said with a hint of schadenfreude.

"Evildoer Ling Tian, hurry up and surrender! Our Moon God Clan has started hunting you down in all of the continents; there's no way for you to escape!" The little Apprentice Moon God Representative locked onto Ling Chen's new position, her young voice filled with rage. As she spoke, she raised her Moon God Staff, summoning an intense Moon God light towards Ling Chen.

Just as Fey was about to grab Ling Chen to dodge, Ling Chen blocked her with his right hand and a light flashed in his right hand as the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear appeared within it. He swept it towards the Moon God light, and as a 'bang' sounded out, the Apprentice Moon God Representative's attack was completely destroyed.

Oh?" Fey's eyebrows slightly jumped, looking at Ling Chen in surprise.

"This cute little sister," Ling Chen said amicably as he placed the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear against his chest. "Even your Moon God Clan's Moon Goddesses weren't able to defeat me; how could you, a little and cute Moon God Representative, beat me? Aren't you afraid that this big evildoer will eat you up?"

"Hmph! The Moon Goddesses are the greatest existences in the Mystic Moon world; how could they be defeated by you? Yesterday, if it wasn't for the trap that made it so that they

couldn't move, you would have been punished by them already!" The little Apprentice Moon God Representative looked completely furious, her innocent eyes almost shooting out fire. "I've already notified the 3 Moon Goddesses that you're here; you won't be able to escape!"

"Is that so? That sounds a bit scary." Ling Chen raised his eyebrows as he turned to Fey and said, "Fey, I'm going to run away; I'll have to leave, so you'll have to ask Su'Er about the next orb."

"Take care, I won't be seeing you off; don't you come back!" Fey swiftly replied without even batting an eye.

"Goddamnit..." Ling Chen grabbed Fey's round bottom before he turned and rushed off using [Broken Shadow]. If it was just him, he would not fear the entire Moon God Clan, much less this Apprentice Moon God Representative who wasn't even matured yet. However, he had to give consideration to Ling Tian City. If he didn't leave this place and the Moon God Clan became desperate, they might redirect their rage onto Ling Tian City. The 3 Moon Goddesses definitely hated him to their bones, and they even gave the crazy order for the entire Moon God Clan, all the main cities, and the large clans to hunt him down; it seemed like they would do anything to get him. If they wanted to direct their rage at Ling Tian City, with their strength, even he would not be able to protect it.

As such, he needed to leave Ling Tian City and go as far away as possible. Fey naturally understood this, so she agreed with his decision to immediately leave.

"Don't you run, Evildoer Ling Tian! You won't be able to escape even if you run to the edge of the heavens!"

Seeing Ling Chen disappear in a wisp of smoke, the Apprentice Moon God Representative's body turned into a white light and chased after him. However, with the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear,

Ling Chen was much faster than he was before, so how could an Apprentice Moon God Representative catch up to him while he was running at full speed? In just a few moments, he left the little Apprentice Moon God Representative so far behind that she could not even see him anymore.

After reaching a 'safe' place, Ling Chen concealed himself and stopped as he muttered, "Looks like there's no way to openly return to Ling Tian City. This is quite a headache."

"You sullied the Moon Goddesses, and 3 of them at once at that, which is equivalent to destroying the pride and dignity of the entire Moon God Clan. How could they not stop at nothing to kill little master? Right now, I want to know how the entire Mystic Moon world would react if it was made known that an otherworlder violated the 3 Moon Goddesses... hahaha," Qi Yue's flirtatious voice sounded out in Ling Chen's mind as she spoke evilly.

"Err, let's not do that. It wouldn't be good for their reputation," Ling Chen said as he shook his head.

"Hahahaha," Qi Yue continued to laugh, making Ling Chen imagine her large chest rippling as she laughed. "Why does it seem so strange to hear little master say that?"

"Ding..."

At this moment, Ling Chen's communication device sounded out. After looking at it, Ling Chen immediately answered it, and Fey's voice sounded out, "Are you at a safe place now?"

Ling Chen felt quite speechless. "She's just an Apprentice Moon God Representative who hasn't even grown up yet; how could I be in danger?"

"Not too long after you left, 10 or so Moon God Representatives appeared above Ling Tian City and chased you in the direction that you left in. However, it looks like I don't need to worry – you were

able to casually destroy an Apprentice Moon God Representative's attack; the Shura's power is much more powerful than I expected. From how relaxed you seem, evidently you don't even put the 3 Moon Goddesses in your eyes anymore... come to think of it, did you really violate the 3 Moon Goddesses?"

Before, Fey had only been casually joking around, but now, she sounded quite suspicious. As a fellow woman, she could not imagine why else the 3 Moon Goddesses would be furious to such a degree apart from being violated. Moving out the entire Moon God Clan and ordering Ling Chen's death across the entire Mystic Moon world was simply too crazy.

A layer of cold sweat instantly appeared on Ling Chen's forehead... it was no wonder that it was said that a woman's instinct was the most terrifying in the world! Ling Chen wiped his cold sweat and awkwardly laughed, "Ahaha, you have quite the imagination." Following this, he quickly changed the topic. "Err, also, it's been more than a month since Su'Er last used the Heaven's Secrets power. She should be able to use it again, so has she been able to find out where the next orb is?"

"She has – I've already asked her," Fey replied.

"Really?!" Ling Chen felt incredibly happy. Before he had been sent to the Lunar Sky Hell, the 3 Moon Goddesses had said that the 3 Saint Orbs were in vastly different locations: the Moon God Orb had been in the Moon God Palace, and it had been obtained by him; the Star God Orb was with the Night Demon Clan, while the Sun God Orb... according to the 3 Moon Goddesses, it had been destroyed by the Moon God Clan using a special method a long time ago, and it no longer existed. Putting aside the question of whether the Sun God Orb had really been destroyed, Ling Chen had never come across the Night Demon Clan before, and he had no idea where to find them in order to retrieve the Star God Orb.

However, Su'Er had found a clue for the next Lunar Scourge Orb, which made Ling Chen feel delirious with joy.

“However, the clue is a bit strange: it’s a weird bunch of numbers,” Fey said unhurriedly.

“Numbers? What numbers?”

“49554. Those 5 numbers were all Su’Er was able to give me.”

“49554...” Ling Chen felt quite surprised, feeling that those numbers were quite familiar.

49554... a year ago, the Novice Village he had been in was Novice Village 49554, which perfectly matched the numbers that Su’Er had said!

Chapter 762 - The Novice Village That Cannot Be Returned To

“Have you got an idea?” Fey asked as she seemed to detect a change in Ling Chen’s emotions.

Ling Chen immediately replied, “Yes! Absolutely! When the Mystic Moon world first opened, my Novice Village’s number was 49554!”

“Oh? Novice Village? Does that mean the next Lunar Scourge Orb might be in Novice Village 49554?”

“That’s right. That should be it.” Ling Chen nodded. “Fey, you said that your Lachesis can travel through any space; in that case, it should be able to go to a Novice Village, right?”

“... Theoretically, yes, but do you know where Novice Village 49554 is? If you know the specific location, then there’s naturally no problem, but if you don’t... with how big the Mystic Moon world is, even if you give me 100 years, I might not be able to find a random little island.”

Ling Chen’s mouth fell open, feeling speechless.

Novice Villages were places that were sealed off from the rest of the world, and just the China region alone had more than 100,000 Novice Villages. These Novice Villages were all located in different areas around the Mystic Moon world, and the vast majority of them were tiny islands in the ocean. Players were sent to them at random, and they were sent to their corresponding continent when they reached LV10...

Who the hell could know the precise location of a Novice village?!

After feeling at a loss for a moment, Ling Chen weakly asked, “So... you don’t have any way to find it?”

“No, but I’ll try to have a look for it. I’ll go to my adoptive

father's place later and ask; maybe he'll know, but the chances aren't very high," Fey replied. "Also, there's something not too important that I should also mention to you."

"What is it?"

"When you were sealed into the Lunar Sky Hell, we all obtained citizenship. We reached China a week ago, and we met up with Gui Ya and the others. I heard you're staying at a place called the Bamboo Sea Wonderland and that the house there is quite big, so it shouldn't be a problem for Yola and I to live there, right? Oh, right, Yola and I are in the Su Hang City already, so after we've had a look around this 'heaven on earth', we'll come to find you. It should be within 5 days, so don't be too surprised... alrighty then, bye~~"

Clack! Fey immediately hung up. Ling Chen held the communication device, spacing out as he stood there... Fey and the others had already arrived in China? What's more, she wanted to live in the Bamboo Sea Wonderland... of course, Ling Chen was fine with sweet little Yola staying with them, but if Fey came... he wasn't worried about everyone else, but if she ran into Qi Yue...

Ling Chen's mouth twitched, not daring to think about it anymore. He put away his communication device and shook his head as he closed his eyes and said to Qi Yue, "Qi Yue, the next orb's location has been determined. If I'm not wrong, it should be at Novice Village 49554 where we met."

"Novice Village?" A tone of deep surprise appeared in Qi Yue's voice. "Why would it be in such a place? It shouldn't be in a place like that."

"That's the clue that Su'Er gave us, so it should be right. Do you know the location of Novice Village 49554 or how to get there?" Ling Chen asked.

Qi Yue fell silent for a while before slowly saying, "Your so-called 'Novice Villages' are havens that have existed for a long time in the

Mystic Moon world, and the ones who lived there were all humans without battle power and weak creatures who enjoyed absolute peace and safety. Afterwards, because of some unknown reason, they became the first places that you otherworlders arrived in, becoming Novice Villages.

“These Novice Villages all have special protective barriers around them, and they cannot be entered or exited from. Afterwards, the Village Chiefs were given the power to send the otherworlders to the various continents but returning there from the outside is impossible. The Mystic Moon world has countless different types of teleport scrolls, but there are none that can take one back to a Novice Village! This is because no one knows the specific locations of the Novice Villages, so it’s impossible to make teleport scrolls for the Novice Villages.

“Moreover, more than 90% of the Novice Villages are tiny islands, and most of them float around on the ocean, changing their location every few minutes. Let alone being unable to pass through the barrier, just finding their locations is as difficult as scaling the heavens. After all, not only are the Mystic Moon world’s continents extremely large, the ocean is 4 times as big as all of the continents!”

Qi Yue’s words caused Ling Chen to deeply frown. The Moon God Orb being in the Moon God Palace made Ling Chen think that it was the most difficult orb to obtain. After all, the Moon God Palace was the place where the strongest powers in the Mystic Moon world were gathered. On the other hand, Novice Village 49554 was the opposite of the Moon God Palace: it was one of the weakest places in the entire Mystic Moon world, making Ling Chen feel quite delighted, thinking that he could easily obtain the orb.

However, after hearing Qi Yue’s words, he realised in shock that the difficulty to obtain this orb would be as difficult... no, even more difficult than obtaining the Moon God Orb! At the very least, even though the Moon God Palace was powerful, he had a clear

target and location. However, Novice Village 49554... he couldn't even find where it was! Moreover, there definitely weren't any records about it.

Wait! Tao Tie!!

Ling Chen hurriedly asked, "What about Tao Tie? Can't it go to and from Novice Village 49554 and the rest of the Mystic Moon world? I remember it said that I could summon it once when I encountered danger."

"It indeed said that, but do you know why you can only summon it once?" Qi Yue asked slowly.

"Why?" Ling Chen asked.

"Tao Tie is a beast of greed, and it committed grave crimes in the Forgotten Continent before. It was subdued by Goddess Fate White Snow, and it was exiled by her to Novice Village 49554 and sealed at the bottom of a deep abyss to watch over the main body of the Lunar Scourge. You can summon it because part of its power is sealed in the Gemini Orb; when you use the Gemini Orb to summon it, it will hear your voice despite being far away in Novice Village 49554, and it will use the remnants of its power in the Gemini Orb to create a clone. Unless the Moon God Clan intervenes, its true body will never be able to leave Novice Village 49554."

"Oh..." Ling Chen sighed in disappointment and asked in a low voice, "Could it be that there's really no one who knows how to get back?"

"Of course there are. Not only that, there's 3 of them," Qi Yue said in a strange voice... with a hint of schadenfreude.

"Who are they?" Ling Chen immediately asked.

"Oh? I already hinted at those 3 people just then; with how smart little master is, can't you work out who they are?"

Ling Chen suddenly realised something as his eyes widened and

he stuttered, “T-Those 3 people? Surely they’re not... the 3 Moon Goddesses?”

“That’s right; it’s the 3 Moon Goddesses who little master used hundreds of techniques to violate in 30 minutes yesterday!” Qi Yue said in her soft voice, but the schadenfreude in her tone couldn’t be more evident.

Ling Chen: “.....⊙___⊙b” (No way?!)

Qi Yue continued to speak, “The reason those islands can exist for tens of thousands of years without being devoured by the ocean is because they weren’t formed naturally. They were created by the Moon God Clan long ago. Their protective barriers were also set by the Moon God Clan, and only the highest authorities in the Moon God Clan, the Moon Goddesses, can control these islands. Even Moon God Representatives are unable to come into contact with them. As such, if little master wants to return to Novice Village 49554, there are 2 methods... the first is to search the Mystic Moon world’s ocean; with little master’s extraordinary luck, perhaps you’ll find it within 300 or 400 years.”

Ling Chen’s eyes twitched.

“The other method is to ask the 3 Moon Goddesses to send you to Novice Village 49554. Within the entire Mystic Moon world, only they can do such a thing. Apart from these 2 methods, at least within my knowledge, there are no other ways,” Qi Yue said with great certainty.

To Ling Chen, using strength to resolve problems was not an issue at all. Even if an orb was at a place even more dangerous than the Moon God Palace, he would be filled with anticipation, and he would not feel worried at all.

The most terrifying thing was a situation where strength was completely useless!

Qi Yue had made it very clear: putting aside the impossible first

method, the only way to return to Novice Village 49554 was for the 3 Moon Goddesses to send him back... there was no other way! Facing this method, Ling Chen felt like coughing up blood.

This was because, currently, the 3 Moon Goddesses would rather agree to any request than a request from him... yesterday, he had completely enraged the 3 Moon Goddesses and the entire Moon God Clan, resulting in them hunting him down. Asking the 3 Moon Goddesses to send him to Novice Village 49554? He would simply be dreaming.

“What should I do then? Do I really have to go beg the 3 Moon Goddesses?” Ling Chen asked, feeling quite depressed.

“The situation isn’t as bad as little master thinks. After being taken by little master yesterday, maybe they’ve been conquered by little master. Perhaps they’ve moved out the entire Moon God Clan to capture little master to pleasure them every day,” Qi Yue said while smiling.

“.....” Ling Chen was sure that no one in the world would say such a thing apart from Qi Yue. Ling Chen could only pretend that he hadn’t asked, and he stroked his chin as he muttered unhappily, “I can’t go back to Ling Tian City and returning to Novice Village 49554 is impossible... since I’ve obtained the blood of the Moon Goddesses... what about the soul of the Demon Emperor?”

Thinking about the soul of the Demon Emperor, Ling Chen’s eyes lit up, a new goal in mind.

“Little master wants to find the 10 ancient demon beasts? And kill them all?” Hearing Ling Chen’s words, Qi Yue immediately understood what he wanted to do.

“Mm.” Ling Chen nodded. “Right now, that’s the best thing I can do. With my current strength, detecting the ancient demonic beasts then finding them shouldn’t be too difficult; it’s just a matter of time. Obtaining the Demon Emperor’s soul is something I’ll need to do sooner or later, and since I can’t find the next orb, I

might as well take the Demon Emperor's soul now. After dealing with the 10 ancient demon beasts, maybe I'll find more clues about returning to Novice Village 49554." At the same time, with his current strength, killing those ancient demon beasts would be as easy as flipping over his hand.

"Alright, since little master has made his decision, I'll do my best to support you... my soul's power in the Lunar Scourge is about to run out, so I need to go back and sleep. In order to help little master, I didn't do any beauty treatments yesterday, and if my skin gets worse, little master won't like me anymore... I'll be going back now; if you want me to serve you, I'll take off my clothes, lie on the bed, and wait for little master." After leaving behind some provocative words, Qi Yue irresponsibly disappeared. Ling Chen was left gnashing his teeth, wanting to log off immediately to rip Qi Yue's clothes off and screw her until she blacked out.

"Leng'Er, you're the most familiar with Darkness power. Xiao Hui, you as well. This time, our goal is to find the Demon Beast Clan's Darkness power, so I'll leave that to you!"

Ling Chen summoned Snow Cherry, Leng'Er, Cai'Er, Xi Ling, and Xiao Hui and rushed off.

Chapter 763 - Shattered Moon

July 30, 3101 was an ordinary day until China's Li family financial group released a statement that shocked the entire world, causing countless countries and people to focus their attention on the Li family. On that day, the Li family used various media outlets to announce to the whole world that they had created an incredibly effective cure to the Isrock Disease that could cure it within a day.

This news caused unprecedented shock throughout the entire world because if this news was true, hundreds of millions of lives would be saved, and a terrifying nightmare that had plagued the human race for the past 100 years would be eliminated. This medicine was something that the entire human race had desperately dreamed about.

However, at the same time, this news was greatly doubted because even though the Li family's enterprises extended into the medicinal industry, their medicinal industry was not very big. There were only 20 or so private hospitals and research centres that belonged to the Li family, and most of them only served the Li family financial group. As such, most people, especially the experts who had been studying the Isrock Disease for tens of years, did not believe that this was something that the Li family could possibly create.

However, very soon, one of the foremost research groups used the samples provided by the Li family to conduct a live experiment that was broadcasted to the rest of the world... the experiment was very simple: they chose 10 people who were infected with the Isrock Disease, who all consumed the medicine. 10 minutes later, it was found that the Isrock Disease within their blood had decreased by more than half, and 20 minutes later, the symptoms of the Isrock Disease had completely disappeared from their bodies. The people's faces regained their red, healthy glow, and their minds also recovered considerably. That's right, it only took 20 minutes

for those who consumed the medicine to recover. What's more, it seemed like there were no side effects.

This was an experiment conducted by one of China's most reputable research groups, and all 10 subjects were cured. After seeing this, the entire world was completely blown away. Those who had been infected with the Isrock Disease and had fallen into absolute despair, as well as their family members, burst into tears from joy upon seeing this.

The media all over the world fell over each other in their eagerness to report about this century's medicinal miracle. In just 2 days, the news spread across the entire world, and almost everyone knew about it. The name of the Li family financial group also became known across the world, reaching unprecedented heights of fame. Soon, some bitterness began to be spread... as the richest family in China, the Li family would definitely use this super-effective medicine to earn a large sum of money. There were at least 300 to 400 million people across the world infected with the Isrock Disease, and there would be many more in the future. The Li family financial group would definitely ask for hundreds of thousands of Chinese dollars for a dose, or even millions. Even if they were merciful, it would not be less than \$100,000... now, it was only a matter of time before the Li family financial group became the richest family in the world.

However, in just another few days, an even more shocking piece of news appeared: the Li family financial group had started to mass-produce the super-effective Isrock Disease medicine, and it was to the point that everyone in the world could be cured. However, because China was a peace-loving and kind country, the Li family should act accordingly and use this medicine to save everyone who was infected, as opposed to using it as a money-making tool. If they charged high prices for it, many Isrock Disease victims would not be able to be cured. As such, the Li family financial group announced that they were going to give out the

medicine to the whole world for free... that's right, completely for free. Anyone who was infected only needed their diagnosis to receive a dose of the medicine for free from the Li family financial group's distribution centres all over the world.

This time, no one dared to believe their ears. They simply couldn't believe why a financial group, whose sole aim was profits, would do such a selfless thing. No one could believe that such a grand financial group existed in the world. Mass-producing hundreds of millions of super-effective medicine, distributing them to nearly 200 countries, transporting them, and the management process... let alone the cost of researching and developing the medicine, just the transport alone would cost a massive fortune, and what's more... they were getting nothing back!

However, after a week, the Li family's actions proved to the world that this was the truth. When the first person hesitantly came to the distribution centre, he was not discriminated against or looked down on. He was instead greeted warmly, and he received the super-effective medicine for free... that's right, completely free, and it didn't cost him a single cent or anything else. After the person consumed the medicine, he was fully cured, and he received a new lease on life.

From the first day to 2 weeks later, there were thousands, if not tens of thousands, of people who had completely lost hope who were finally cured of the Isrock Disease.

In front of the Li family's completely selfless and transparent actions, the entire world was shaken. The Li family's name was heard by everyone countless times every day, and the media continuously sung its praises because it had truly saved hundreds of millions of lives. The Li family had allowed the entire human race to get rid of a nightmare that had plagued them for over 100 years. What's more, they had not asked for anything in return. The Li family financial group's name was deeply embedded in the

hearts of all of the cured people and their family member's hearts, and the Li Family became someone that they were determined to repay for saving their lives. In fact, some people even inscribed 'Li family' on their jewellery and ornaments.

There had never been a family who had saved so many lives before, nor any family that had done it so selflessly. As such, the Li family was given incredible amounts of praise and attention, and their reputation and status rose to a position that no one could rival. It was evident what sort of position they would hold in the hearts of those who were cured and how many people would become 'worshippers' of the Li family financial group.

It was just that no one knew that the one who had actually mercifully saved the world was a young girl who had not left the Bamboo Sea Wonderland and did not want to come into contact with worldly affairs.

When the Li family's name resounded in every corner of the world, they then tossed out more and more explosive news... the Li family had successfully created a near-perfect solar-powered system... a near-perfect environmental purifier... and were currently producing them... if the whole world could use them, the earth's environment would be greatly improved, and Nature would no longer create things like the Isrock Disease for revenge.

Following this, the Li family financial group started broadcasting experiments, completely shocking the world's most reputable and famed scientists... if the Li family could really produce the things displayed, the entire world would be changed by the Li family.

.....

Northwest of the Forgotten Continent, beneath the Firecloud Mountain.

This was a desolate area, and no people or plants could be seen. The ground was a dark red colour, and it gave off a scorching air, the temperature terrifyingly hot. Even though it was not as bad as

the Lava Purgatory, it was not a place that normal creatures could safely enter.

In front was a massive, weirdly-shaped rock. Ling Chen stopped walking and slightly raised his eyebrows as he calmly said, “Flame Demon Beast, come out.”

As Ling Chen spoke, his surroundings became deathly silent, following which a hot gale blew out, bringing with it ear-piercing laughter.

“Heheheh...”

As the ghastly laughter sounded out, a gale brought with it intense flames that spiralled in front of Ling Chen, forming a terrifying, fiery figure. Seeing this human, its laughter became even more arrogant, “Hahaha! Who would have thought that a tiny human would go through all of this trouble to seek his own death by calling on a demon who hasn’t left this place for 10,000 years. You were even able to call out my name – looks like my great name hasn’t been forgotten. Hahahaha... that’s right, this demon is one of the Demon Emperor’s 10 ancient demon beasts, the Flame Demon Beast. Did you come here to become this demon’s servant?”

“Not at all!” Ling Chen shook his head, a harmless smile on his face. He raised his right hand and flashed 5 hook-like black jades. “I’m here to send you to see your companions; the Forgotten Continent doesn’t quite suit you.”

Seeing the 5 Demon Jade Hooks in Ling Chen’s hand, the flames on the Flame Demon Beast’s body started to violently twist and turn, and its face became savage. “War, Darkness, Ice, Tyrant, Light... those are their Demon Jade Hooks! Why do you have them? What did you do to them?!”

Ling Chen grinned. “What do you think?”

“No! Impossible! Impossible!!” The Flame Demon Beast uncontrollably roared, its crimson flames flaring up to more than

10 metres high. “Impossible! You’re just a tiny human! How could you... how could you!!”

“Whether I can or not will be evident to you soon.” Ling Chen flipped his hand and the Demon Jade Hooks disappeared, replaced by the Shura Emperor Sword and the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear. At the same time, he activated [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames]. Dark clouds instantly rolled out across the sky, causing the silent air to become berserk as it was filled with a cruel and violent aura. A faint scent of blood and gore filled the region they were in, and the Shura’s power was like a wild gale, rushing around, completely dispelling the Flame Demon Beast’s powerful aura.

“S...S...Shura?!?!”

After countless generations had passed, most creatures had forgotten about the Shura, but the Flame Demon Beast, which had existed 10,000 years ago, would never forget the terrifying Shura. When the blood-red flames burst forth around Ling Chen’s body, its pupils contracted, and when the Shura’s power locked onto it, it was finally certain what power it was. In that instant, boundless terror filled its mind.

“I-I-Impossible... the Shura’s dead... how could it be the Shura... impossible...”

The Flame Demon Beast uncontrollably trembled as it retreated, the flames around its body chaotically moving around. It was the powerful Flame Demon Beast, and it normally looked down on all creatures, but in front of the Shura’s power, it only felt boundless fear. It did not have even a single thought about retaliating, and it almost couldn’t control its body because of how badly it was trembling.

“Arghhh!!!!” It did not beg for mercy because it knew that Shuras were the most merciless beings; begging for mercy from a Shura was incredibly stupid and laughable. The Flame Demon

Beast howled as a ball of crimson-black flames that was about 10 metres wide shot towards Ling Chen, while it rushed off in the opposite direction.

“Haha, the same reaction as when I killed the Light Demon Beast,” Ling Chen coldly laughed and raised the Shura Emperor Sword and Lunar Scourge Divine Spear...

“Shattered Moon!”

A moonlight-like power gathered at the spearhead of the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear and then shot out in a ray of light towards the escaping Flame Demon Beast.

BOOM.....

The bright moonlight shot into the Flame Demon Beast’s back in an instant, bursting into a brilliant glow amidst a splattering of blood.

-10,401,728,400, -10,401,728,400!

“ARGHHHHHH!!!!!!!”

Under the 8 times pain, as well as the Flame Demon Beast’s fear, a scream tore through the air, causing the air to quiver.

The might of [Shattered Moon] was enough to split the sky and crack open the earth, and adding on [Peerless], its might was even more devastating. This blow from him in his most powerful state was enough to insta-kill the Flame Demon Beast many times over. The 10 ancient demon beasts that had made him taste despair before were now just like the rabbits he had encountered in the Novice Village – noob monsters that could be easily insta-killed.

Ling Chen walked over to where the Flame Demon Beast had been destroyed. There, an incredibly deep crater had been formed. Ling Chen jumped into the crater, and by the time he came out, he was holding a jet-black jade hook.

[Demon Jade Hook?Flame]: Jade that the Flame Demon Beast

carries. It is said that it was given to it by the then Demon Emperor. Unable to determine what material it is made of and its use.

“6 pieces.” Ling Chen muttered after putting away the new Demon Jade Hook and summoning Snow Cherry, flying towards the south... because he had just used the Shura’s power, if he didn’t quickly leave, a large wave of Moon God Representatives would soon rush over.

Chapter 764 - Changing 'Strategies'

The Demon Beast Clan's 10 ancient demon beasts were scattered across the Forgotten Continent, and they were located in the most extreme places suited to their attributes, making them difficult to find... of course, this was to normal people. With Ling Chen's greatly-enhanced senses and Leng'Er, who was extremely adept at detecting Darkness energy, finding the ancient demon beasts was not too difficult for Ling Chen.

10 days after Ling Chen killed the Flame Demon Beast, he came to a barren expanse of land.

"Come out, Earth Demon Beast."

The silent barren land was suddenly filled with wind and sand as an extremely unpleasant laughter sounded out... this laughter filled Ling Chen with rage: The hell are you laughing for? Why does every ancient demon beast have to laugh before coming out, and so unpleasantly at that... just go and die!!

"Shura's Merciless Slash! Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation!"

Rip...

A long crack appeared in the air. At the end of the crack was the Earth Demon Beast that just appeared, as well as 3 purple damage figures that could cause even the sky to tremble.

"Arghhhhhhhhhhh!!!!!!" The Earth Demon Beast shrieked in despair, after which its body turned into a puff of jet-black smoke. After dispersing, only a jet-black jade hook was left behind.

From when it had started laughing to when it had died, only 3 seconds had passed... the poor Earth Demon Beast did not even have a chance to say anything or fully take shape before it had died.

The Earth Demon Beast was the second strongest out of the 10 ancient demon beasts, but under a Shura's hand, it was still insta-

killed. The arrogant laughter it had released before appearing was like a joke before a Shura.

“That’s number 7. There’s still the Sky Demon Beast, Rage Demon Beast, and the Wind Demon Beast. At this speed, it will take me another 2 months,” Ling Chen muttered as he picked up the jade hook that the Earth Demon Beast had dropped.

Now, it was not an exaggeration at all to say that the powerful 10 ancient demon beasts were like specks of dust in front of Ling Chen. He now rejoiced that he had risked losing his nature back in the Lunar Sky Hell to obtain the Shura’s power. Otherwise, he would not have been able to obtain the Moon God Orb, and he had no idea when he would have been able to defeat these 10 ancient demon beasts. At the very least, it would have been impossible for him to insta-kill them like this.

“Who should my next target be?” Ling Chen stood on the spot and silently thought for a while. Suddenly, he frowned as he looked up and muttered, “No way... they’re so fast this time!”

Just as he finished speaking, white lights flashed in the air as 3 elegant and peerless beauties in snow-white dresses appeared there... 3 sharp killing intents instantly locked onto Ling Chen.

“Evildoer Ling Tian! We’ve finally found you! Don’t you think about running!” The woman at the centre angrily glared at Ling Chen, holding a Moon God Bow with 3 light pink energy arrows already strung and pointing towards Ling Chen. The other 2 women in white also released their power, instantly creating a barrier to prevent Ling Chen from running.

Ling Chen wordlessly looked at the soap bubble-like barrier that they had created. Through Xiao Hui’s Eye of the Holy Spirit, the 3 women’s identities appeared in his mind.

Moon God Representative Moon Cherry, Moon God Representative Jade Flower, Moon God Representative Spirit Heart.

Every time Ling Chen used the Shura's power, the powerful aura would be immediately detected by the Moon God Clan's people who were nearby. However, this time, they had come much faster than before. The only explanation was that these 3 Moon God Representatives had just so happened to be nearby. Ling Chen replied in exasperation, "3 beautiful Moon God Representatives, if you're bored, you should go have a look at some nice mountains, lakes, or places with flowers; why would you come to barren lands like this? The air and sand here isn't good for your skin, and it might even make you look older... this is especially so for Moon Cherry. You should be the East Ocean Continent's new Moon God Representative, right? Why would you come to our continent instead of staying in your own? Won't your East Ocean Continent's people be incredibly hurt if they found out about this?"

"Hmph! Our Moon God Clan's first priority right now is to kill you, the demon who violated the 3 Moon Goddesses! This time you definitely won't escape!" Moon God Representative Moon Cherry said furiously.

"So it's like that," Ling Chen raised an eyebrow, feeling more frustrated. "I think you've misunderstood something - I've avoided you all over the past month not because I fear you, but because I'm worried that you beauties won't be so beautiful anymore after fighting. I was able to defeat even your Moon Goddesses, so aren't you worried that you'll be easily taken down by me?"

"Nonsense! The Moon Goddesses are the greatest existences in the world; how could they lose to you? That day, all of the sisters clearly saw you use trickery; otherwise, the Moon Goddesses would have made you disappear from the world with a single attack! How could a human like you compare himself to the Moon Goddesses? We're enough to bring judgment on you!" Moon God Representative Jade Flower shouted.

The words she said were exactly the same as what the other

Moon God Representatives had said to Ling Chen. In the Moon God Representatives' eyes, the Moon Goddesses were the most glorious existences, and they absolutely did not believe that there could be any existences greater than the Moon Goddesses. That day, when he had destroyed the pride and dignity of the Moon God Clan, they had all believed that it was only because he had used despicable methods to stop them from moving. In terms of strength, how could a human be compared to the supreme Moon Goddesses?

Fudge! Looks like running away each time to avoid hurting them has made them think that I'm afraid of them. Looks like I need to change strategies. Otherwise, being chased down like this isn't something that I can take...

After thinking about that, Ling Chen's gaze became dangerous. He narrowed his eyes and licked his lips as he swept his gaze across the faces of the 3 Moon God Representatives and lewdly smiled as he said, "Since your Moon God Clan has repeatedly delivered beauties to me, if I don't accept you all, I'll be letting you down."

"Die, you demon!" Ling Chen's words caused the 3 Moon God Representatives to become completely enraged. Moon God Representative Moon Cherry shot out the arrows from her Moon God Bow, which flew precisely towards Ling Chen's head. Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart also acted, their bodies flashing with light as two 3 metre long Moon God Spears quickly condensed above Ling Chen and shot down towards him.

Facing this combined attack from the 3 Moon God Representatives, Ling Chen only smirked, showing no signs of evading. Before the Moon God Spears and Moon God Arrows could come close to him, he used the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear to easily destroy them. Following this, as the 3 Moon God Representatives watched on in shock, he activated [Broken Shadow], rushed forwards, and passed the 3 Moon God Representatives like a wild gale. Following this, he stretched out his hands and slapped his hands on Moon God Representatives

Jade Flower and Spirit Heart's round bottoms...

Pa! Pa!

These 2 slaps sounded extremely crisp and clear.

“Ahh! You!!!”

These slaps caused Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart to cry out. They, Moon God Representatives who no one had ever dared to offend before, just had their bottoms slapped by a human. Their hearts were instantly filled with fury, indignation, and humiliation, causing tears to almost fall out of their eyes. Ling Chen, who had rushed behind them, rubbed his hands together in a pleased manner before bringing them to his nose and smelling them, as if he felt intoxicated by the smell on them. “Heheh, as expected from Moon God Representatives' bottoms; the texture is just great.”

“You demon, I'll kill you!”

The furious Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart almost lost their minds from the humiliation. They summoned their weapons and charged towards Ling Chen. However, no matter how terrifying they seemed, in Ling Chen's eyes, they were just like harmless little lambs. He easily dodged their attacks and then casually grabbed backwards with his hands, grabbing onto their round and perky breasts. At the same time, he vigorously squeezed, filling his hands with a soft feeling. He then rushed towards Moon God Representative Moon Cherry, rushing by her body without touching her... at the very least, she did not feel anything.

“Ahhh!!!”

2 cries once again sounded out. Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart simultaneously covered their breasts, their faces completely pink. Moon God Representative Moon Cherry, who had not been assaulted, was so furious that her face was

bright red. She turned and pointed her Moon God Bow towards Ling Chen, angrily yelling, “Evildoer Ling Tian, we definitely won’t forgive you!”

“Really? Heheh... heheheh...” Facing her yells, Ling Chen instead laughed, lasciviously eyeing her body, sweeping his gaze up and down... as if he was looking at a beautiful, naked woman.

“Moon Chery, y-y-your clothes...” Moon God Representative Jade Flower weakly said behind her. At this moment, a breeze blew over, and Moon God Representative Moon Cherry felt a slight chilliness... she looked down, and instantly, a scream almost shattered every eardrum in the vicinity...

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!!!”

Currently, Moon God Representative Moon Cherry’s body was completely uncovered, revealing her snow-white skin, her soft breasts, and her slim, long legs... all of them were completely displayed to Ling Chen. Apart from the Moon God Bow in her hands, there was nothing covering her at all.

As she cried out, Moon God Representative Moon Cherry looked like a little deer that had been given a great fright, and she hurriedly wrapped her arms around her breasts, covering her exposed peaks. She tightly pressed her legs against each other as a red glow appeared on her skin. She quickly tried to summon her equipment to cover her, but in her terror, she suddenly found that there was nothing left on her apart from the Moon God Bow, not even her storage ring.

“Heheh, Moon God Representatives are indeed Moon God Representatives. This skin, this figure, those breasts... heheh, exquisite. You’re not even too far behind those Moon Goddesses.” As Ling Chen spoke, he raised the communication device on his right wrist. “Just then, I took some photos, and the quality’s quite good. Do you want to appreciate your naked body yourself? Oh, right, I also recorded the massive battle I had with your 3 Moon

Goddesses; do you want a copy as a souvenir? The more the merrier, eh?"

Chapter 765 - The Approaching International Mock Battles

As a Moon God Representative that controlled the order of an entire continent, there were very few people in the entire continent who even dared to meet Moon God Representative Moon Cherry's gaze; when had she ever been treated like this before?

Shock, fury, humiliation, helplessness... and pitifulness. The current Moon God Representative Moon Cherry did not have any of the majesty that a Moon God Representative did, and she instead seemed like a normal young woman. However, the only difference was that... as a powerful and noble Moon God Representative, she had to fight back the tears of weakness.

“Moon Cherry!”

Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart quickly rushed over, standing in front of Moon God Representative Moon Cherry. Despite their brave front, the Moon God weapons in their hands slightly trembled.

Just then, Ling Chen had not held back when grabbing their chests, and even now, there was a numb feeling on their breasts, and their humiliation assaulted their minds. Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart had never thought that they would ever be bullied like this by a man. In their hearts, the strongest hatred and killing intent they had ever experienced started to grow, causing their chests to heave. However, the man in front of them could easily destroy their attacks, and his movements were incredibly fast. In just a few bouts, they were sufficiently convinced of how much stronger Ling Chen was. In front of him, their power could not take a single blow.

“L-Ling Tian! You'll... You'll definitely suffer the cruellest punishment!” Moon God Representative Moon Cherry shrank back behind Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart

and bit her pink lips as she angrily yelled.

“Heheh, is that so?” Ling Chen grinned. “I’ve heard the 3 Moon Goddesses say similar things to me, but I, this big evildoer, have been wandering around the Forgotten Continent for more than a month, but I’ve been completely fine.” After saying this, Ling Chen’s eyes flashed and the Lunar Scourge released a weak silver light.

“Moon Shadow!”

As Moon Shadow’s light was released, the 3 Moon God Representatives who were unable to react in time at all were frozen in place. Ling Chen’s body flashed over to the completely naked Moon God Representative Moon Cherry and didn’t hesitate as he stretched out his left hand and grabbed a handful of white flesh. As he squeezed, the white flesh filled his hand, while his other hand stretched in between her tightly closed legs. When he pulled it out, there was a transparent liquid on his fingers.

Ling Chen slowly wiped the liquid on Moon God Representative Moon Cherry’s lips, an evil light dancing in his eyes. “Go back and tell your sisters that they can come find me at any time if they want to enjoy this sort of treatment. I won’t disappoint them, heheheh...”

Ling Chen grinned and tightly squeezed with his left hand, her flesh almost spilling out of his hand... after that, Ling Chen finally let go and turned around, flying away like a flash of lightning and disappearing in the blink of an eye.

Moon Shadow’s effects ended, and Moon God Representative Moon Cherry’s breast, which no longer had Ling Chen’s evil hand on it, sprang back into shape, and it had a red handprint on it. Moon God Representative Moon Cherry desperately held back the tears in her eyes, her arms wrapped around her chest. Her matchlessly beautiful face alternated between pinkness and whiteness, feeling so humiliated and enraged that she could not

utter a single word. Moon God Representatives Jade Flower and Spirit Heart also stood still instead of chasing after Ling Chen. After experiencing how powerful and evil he could be, they did not have the courage to chase after him any longer because they would simply be seeking humiliation.

After [Broken Shadow]'s effects ended, Ling Chen slowed down and turned around, but he did not detect the 3 Moon God Representatives chasing after him. Ling Chen smiled in satisfaction and smelled the remaining smell on his fingers. "This time, they probably won't be stupid enough to deliver themselves into my hands again... hmm? Why do I feel a bit disappointed? Come to think of it, how great would it be to have a few beautiful celestial-like Moon God Representative little sisters to play with every day?"

Everything went as Ling Chen expected – no, even better than he had expected. In the next month, Ling Chen was no longer chased down by the Moon God Clan; not even a trace of the Moon Ladies, Apprentice Moon God Representatives, and Moon God Representatives, who had been searching for him, could be found. Ling Chen even released the Shura's aura a few times on purpose and waited for a while, but no Moon God Representatives appeared. During that month, Ling Chen found the Wind Demon Beast and the Rage Demon Beast and insta-killed both of them. In his most powerful state, anyone could feel his fiendish Shura's aura from a hundred kilometres away, but no one from the Moon God Clan appeared. This caused Ling Chen to feel quite strange.

During this period of time, the 2 names that the world paid the most attention to were the Li family financial group and Ling Tian City. Moreover, the Li family financial group was linked in countless ways to Ling Tian City, causing both of them to become incredibly famed and powerful figures in both the real and virtual worlds. Yun Meng Xin and Li Xiao Xue both became people who the world paid great attention to, and they were reported on by

countless media outlets. In fact, many media outlets started to boldly announce that China's time had come.

After obtaining the Rage Demon Beast and Wind Demon Beast's Demon Jade Hooks, Ling Chen now had 9 Demon Jade Hooks, which was even faster than he had expected. As long as he could find the Sky Demon Beast and obtain the final Demon Jade Hook, he would be able to go to the Underworld Blood Lake to summon the Demon Emperor's soul.

“Ding... World Announcement! Because 100 million players worldwide have reached LV70, the World Boundaries have been opened. Now, all barriers around the various regions have been removed. Anyone who has more than 1000 Fame can go to other continents. However, if a player dies in another continent, they will receive double the death penalties and will be sent back to their own continent's main city, and they will not be able to travel to another continent within 2 weeks.”

“Ding... in 2 months, the Mystic Moon world's first International Mock Battles will be held at the central island in the Mystic Moon Ocean. All Regions are required to make registration preparations. Each Region can send 6 people at most to fight. There are individual battles and group battles; further details will be provided in future.”

The system announcement rang loud and clear throughout the entire Mystic Moon world, instantly attracting all players' attention... the World Boundaries were finally being opened, and the much-anticipated International Mock Battles were going to formally begin in 2 months.

The player world once again became lively and bustling. The World Boundaries being opened meant that disputes in the real world could be settled with International Wars, and one of the virtual world's biggest meetings was about to take place.

“The World Boundaries being opened means that many

ambitious countries will set their eyes on Ling Tian City. If I were them, I would definitely ally together in order to suppress it and conquer it before it can develop. Otherwise, by the time Ling Tian City has fully developed and adding on the fact that the China region is becoming stronger, they won't have a chance," Ling Chen muttered and narrowed his eyes as he comfortably lay next to an ancient tree. He occasionally took in long and short breaths, and he would lightly inhale... Leng'Er lovably lay between his legs, blinking with her pure eyes, her head moving in sync with Ling Chen's breathing...

"As for the International Mock Battles, that's not interesting at all. Since Fey's interested, she can go and participate; she'll be enough to sweep away everyone else... mm..."

Ling Chen's body lightly spasmed and he hurriedly stretched out his hand and put it against Leng'Er's head and tilted his body back... after a while, he finally exhaled.

"Whew... alright, Leng'Er, we'll stop playing the game for today. We should go and find the Sky Demon Beast."

Hearing his words, Leng'Er obediently floated up, her innocent, jet-black eyes filled with more and more infatuation towards him. A bit of white, hot liquid dribbled out of her cherry-petal-like lips, but she immediately stretched out her little pink tongue, licking it up.

The Sky Demon Beast was the strongest out of the 10 demon beasts, but Ling Chen held absolute certainty in defeating it. The only issue was finding it. The Sky Demon Beast's power was more focused on physical attacks, so its Darkness aura was not as strong. Adding on the fact that it was purposefully hiding, finding it would be much harder than finding the other 9 ancient demon beasts.

"That's right, Qi Yue said that the 10 ancient demon beasts would gather once every 100 years, but with all the changes that have happened in the past 100 years, how do they know exactly where

and when to meet up? Before, the Ice Demon Beast went to the west to find the Tyrant Demon Beast to tell it about me having the Lunar Scourge... how did it know where the Tyrant Demon Beast was? Could it be that they have a special way of sensing each other?”

Ling Chen thought for a while and squatted down, taking out the 9 Demon Jade Hooks. He placed them on the ground and silently stared at them for a while. At this moment, Xiao Hui suddenly ran over and picked up one of the Demon Jade Hooks with his mouth.

“Xiao Hui?” Ling Chen raised his head in surprise and carefully observed Xiao Hui’s actions... this sort of reaction from Xiao Hui most likely meant that he had detected something with his peerless senses.

Xiao Hui moved the Demon Jade Hook forwards, and when he put it down, the inside curve was pressed against the back of another Demon Jade Hook. Following this, Xiao Hui picked up another Jade Hook and placed it behind the first one, and he repeated this... soon, Xiao Hui had ordered the Demon Jade Hooks in a circle, with a gap missing for the final Demon Jade Hook.

“What’s this?”

As Ling Chen stared on in surprise and curiosity, the circle of Demon Jade Hooks suddenly lit up with a faint black light, and it started to slowly move. It stopped after making 2 rotations, and the black light disappeared with the empty space pointing towards the southeast.

Xiao Hui ran over to the gap and barked towards the southeast. Ling Chen’s eyes immediately lit up – how could he not understand what this meant? He quickly picked up the Demon Jade Hooks, summoned Snow Cherry, and hugged Leng’Er as he sped towards the southeast.

Chapter 766 - The 3 Moon Goddesses' Counterattack

7 days later, Ling Chen reached the southeast of the Forgotten Continent, a place that was covered with mountains, had rugged terrain, and had overgrown land. The places where the ancient demon beasts had resided were devoid of any civilisation in the surrounding 100 kilometres, and after finding this sort of place, Ling Chen was able to slightly relax. This meant that he was getting closer to the location of the final ancient demon beast.

“It should be near here. Leng’Er, can you sense the origins of the Darkness aura?” Ling Chen asked as he looked around from the peak of the small mountain that he was on. There was a faint Darkness aura around here, and it was an evil aura that belonged to the Demon Beast Clan. The Sky Demon Beast was definitely hiding around here.

A cold, evil breeze blew over, and Leng’Er subconsciously hugged the doll in her arms tightly, her dark eyes looking forwards before pointing downwards. “There...”

Looking down to where Leng’Er had pointed to, Ling Chen could see a steep cliff that was tens of metres wide. There, the cliff split the land into 2, creating a gap that was difficult to cross.

“Are you saying it is below the cliff?” Ling Chen asked. The ancient demon beasts liked dark places, and the abyss was completely dark, making it a good place for the Sky Demon Beast to reside.

Leng’Er stared ahead for a while before replying, “Mm.”

“Alright, let’s go Snow Cherry!”

After flying at an extreme speed for 2 minutes, Snow Cherry stopped beside the cliff. Ling Chen looked down and could only see darkness; he could not see the bottom at all. However, he could

smell an incredibly dense Darkness aura. Ling Chen grinned, “I’ve finally found you, the last ancient demon beast...”

Now that he was going to have all 10 Demon Jade Hooks, Ling Chen became slightly excited. He lightly breathed in and covered Leng’Er’s ears as he explosively roared, “Sky Demon Beast... get the hell out here!!”

His roar sounded like a thunderclap in this incredibly peaceful place, causing the surrounding air to flow away from him. The 10 ancient demon beasts were undoubtedly powerful, but the demon beast Darkness power caused their natures to become quite wild and arrogant. Ling Chen was sure that it would definitely appear before him by naming it and yelling at it like this unless it wasn’t here.

As expected, before Ling Chen’s yell had finished echoing, a berserk and fiendish Darkness aura rushed up from the depths of the abyss. Following this, a dark fog quickly condensed in front of Ling Chen, revealing a demonic figure with 8 pairs of jet-black wings holding a demon pitchfork.

“Oh? A human...” Seeing Ling Chen, the Sky Demon Beast’s fury greatly decreased, then it wildly laughed, “It was actually a human who dared to call out this demon... hahahaha, silly human, are you here to seek your death? A low-grade being like you isn’t even worthy of being this demon’s minion!”

This design’s pretty good... Ling Chen stared at the Sky Demon Beast. He couldn’t help but admit that the 8-winged Sky Demon Beast holding a dark pitchfork looked quite cool, making him want to take its things and put it on himself. That sort of equipment was wasted on a demon beast.

“Since you’re the boss of the 10 ancient demon beasts, I’ll give you some face,” Ling Chen said. He stretched out his hand and said with a benevolent look on his face, “I’ll give you 5 seconds to run away; I definitely won’t chase you within those 5 seconds.”

“1...”

The Sky Demon Beast stared before unpleasantly and extremely wildly laughing, “Hahahaha!”

“2...”

“... Hahaha, ignorant and laughable...”

“3...”

“... Human, do you know...”

“4...”

“...Who you’re talking to? This demon...”

“5.”

Ding!

A meteor-like light flashed through the Sky Demon Beast’s body, causing it to swallow the words it was about to speak and instantly clearing out its HP. The most powerful of the 10 ancient demon beasts, the Sky Demon Beast, also could not take a single blow from a Shura, and it had not even been able to cry out before it died. It turned into a black fog and disappeared from the air above the cliff.

“At least say some meaningful last words; what a load of nonsense.” Ling Chen curled his lips in disdain and rushed downwards, catching the black jade hook that was falling to the depths of the abyss.

[Demon Jade Hook?Sky].

Seeing the jade hook’s name, Ling Chen happily laughed. He held the jade hook firmly in his hand as if he was afraid that it would vanish... because these Demon Jade Hooks contained his hope in reviving Shui Ruo.

“Now that I have the 10 Demon Jade Hooks, if I put them together and bathe them in the Underworld Blood Lake’s water,

I'll be able to summon the Demon Emperor's soul... I've obtained the Moon Goddesses' blood and I'm about to retrieve the Demon Emperor's soul. The Shura's tear... is something that I can obtain at any time, and the Lunar Scourge is only missing the 2 final Saint Orbs... Ruo Ruo, wait for me, wait for me... you'll be able to see me and Tian Tian soon."

Ling Chen put the hand grasping the Demon Jade Hook against his chest and closed his eyes as he silently muttered. Now that he had obtained all 10 Demon Jade Hooks, Ling Chen's aim was very clear: head to the Underworld's Underworld Blood Lake.

Just as he was preparing to move, his eyebrows suddenly twitched and he paused, looking up into the air. In the next moment, 3 holy white lights appeared above him, revealing 3 beautiful, celestial figures. At the same time, 3 ocean-like waves of Moon God power locked onto Ling Chen, causing even him, who possessed the Shura's power, to feel suffocated in that instant.

Goddess Fate White Snow, Goddess Order Purple Dress, and Goddess Freedom Blue Heart!

Ever since he had savagely toyed with the 3 Moon God Representatives, who had tried to take him down, the Moon God Clan had stopped trying to hunt him down, and he had not seen any Moon God Representatives after that. What he did not expect after this period of silence, however, was that the ones to appear before him would be the 3 Moon Goddesses!

After seeing Ling Chen again, the 3 Moon Goddesses', whose bodies had been tainted and their pride and dignity shattered, were unable to remain calm. Boundless fury caused the surrounding air to become extremely chaotic, and their gazes were so sharp that it was as if they could turn Ling Chen into shreds.

"Ling Tian! You big, big, big, big, big evildoer! We've let you wander around freely for so long, but today's the day of your judgment!" Goddess Freedom Blue Heart gnashed her teeth and

clenched her fists as she spoke as savagely as she could.

“Ling Tian, your crimes cannot be forgiven even with a hundred deaths!” Purple Dress’s words were like ice and bone-piercing knives.

“Ahem, wait, wait, wait, wait.” Ling Chen hurriedly waved his hands and said with an innocent tone, “3 beautiful Moon Goddesses, I won’t say anything else, but since we’ve been so intimate before and there are still many of my liquids in your bodies, we’re not strangers, right? Since we’re not strangers, shouldn’t we be happy after meeting again? Why must you be so fierce and savage?”

“You... shut your mouth!” The Freedom Goddess White Snow’s face became red. Ling Chen’s words had uncovered the humiliation in her body and mind, causing even her, who was normally cool and level-headed, to be unable to remain calm. Her chest heaved as she roared, “What do you mean we’re not strangers? There will forever be irreconcilable hatred between our Moon God Clan and you!”

“Ahh... alright, alright, even if we’re not so intimate, we’re at least friends, right? Even if we’re not friends, we can at least be friends with benefits, right?” Ling Chen said with a ‘fearful’ look.

“White Snow, Purple Dress, what are friends with benefits?” Blue Heart asked.

“I don’t know... but it’s definitely not something good! Blue Heart, this is our only chance. Think about the crimes he’s committed; we don’t need to show any mercy... Blue Heart, Freedom Barrier!”

“Ah... alright, got it!” Blue Heart nodded, the atmosphere around her becoming one of determination. She looked down and cried out as a orb of white light condensed around her body and then exploded out, turning into red, yellow, orange, green, blue, indigo, and violet lights, forming a large rainbow that grew bigger and

bigger, spreading in all directions.

“White Snow, Fate Barrier!”

A light similar to the white light from Blue Heart’s body condensed around her body. Following this, it exploded like Blue Heart’s light, but it turned into 3 similarly-sized orbs of light. One remained inside White Snow while the other 2 flew to Purple Dress and Blue Heart, attaching to them and causing a white layer of light to appear around their skins’ surface.

At this moment, the rainbow light from Goddess Freedom Blue Heart scattered hundreds of metres away in all directions, then continuously grew. By the time it stopped, it formed a 1 kilometre wide rainbow ball, sealing Ling Chen and the 3 Moon Goddesses inside.

A rainbow barrier? Ling Chen looked around him and indifferently smiled... in this world, there were no barriers that could stop a full-force strike from him. Even if it came from the Goddess Freedom, it was useless in front of him.

However, after Xiao Hui looked at the rainbow barrier for a while, he started to give unsettled barks. This caused Ling Chen to slightly frown, following which information from Xiao Hui flowed into his mind.

[Goddess Freedom’s Absolute Wall – Rainbow Glass Barrier]: An ultimate sealing barrier from the Goddess Freedom Blue Heart – the Moon God Clan’s ultimate barrier. It can separate everything inside from anything outside, including light and sound, making it impossible for anything to escape no matter how powerful the being. It is created from Moon Goddess Blue Heart’s source energy, and unless Moon Goddess Blue Heart dies, it is impossible to be destroyed or passed through. Moon Goddess Blue Heart can only use it once every 30 years, and every time she uses it, she needs to gather her Freedom Moon Goddess power for at least 1 month. The barrier will last for 6 hours and cannot be removed.

[Goddess Fate's Perfect Song – Heavenly Heart Mirror]: An ultimate interference skill from the Goddess Fate White Snow. It can be used within the [Rainbow Glass Barrier] and cast on targets within the [Rainbow Glass Barrier]. Those who the [Heavenly Heart Mirror] is casted on will reflect 3 times the damage when attacked, and this condition cannot be affected or cancelled by any other powers. The reflected damage cannot be dodged or reduced. Moon Goddess White Snow can only use it every 300 years, and every time she uses it, she needs to gather her Fate Moon Goddess power for at least 1 month. The effects last for 6 hours and cannot be cancelled.

The smile on Ling Chen's face gradually disappeared, and his expression became serious as he started to frown.

Chapter 767: The Perfect Counter, Lunar Prison Divine Mirror

The Moon God Clan proudly stood at the peak of the Mystic Moon world for tens of thousands of years, so how could they not have ultimate skills to protect themselves? Only now did Ling Chen realise that they had waited 1 month to find him and had told the Moon God Representatives to stop chasing him because they were preparing to use these extreme skills to lock him down and kill him.

“It’s impossible for you to escape from Blue Heart’s barrier, and 6 hours is more than enough for us to kill you. What’s more, this barrier is completely separated from the outside world, including the Mystic Moon world’s rules, so if you die in this barrier, you’ll be unable to revive. Your soul will leave this world and return to your own world, never to enter the Mystic Moon world again. In fact, if we combine our power, we might be able to destroy your soul, causing you to die a true death!”

“Even the Shura from 10,000 years ago wasn’t able to force us into such a predicament because using our most extreme power not only requires us to gather our strength for a long time, but it also damages our lifeforce. However, against an evildoer like you, no matter what price we have to pay, we have to punish you severely!!”

The Moon Goddesses’ furious voices reverberated around the Rainbow Glass Barrier. As Ling Chen frowned, he suddenly moved backwards and reached the boundary of the barrier in an instant. He simultaneously activated [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames], his body shining with a powerful light as he sent out a [Shura’s Merciless Slash] with his left hand and [Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation] with his right hand towards the Rainbow Glass Barrier.

Seeing his actions, none of the Moon Goddesses tried to stop him, and they instead gave an amused smile.

Chi...

The Ling Chen's full-powered strikes in his strongest Shura state were incredibly terrifying, and they could even create gaps in sub-dimensional spaces. If they landed on a mountain, even an incredibly tall mountain would be smashed into rubble. However, when the Shura Emperor Sword and Lunar Scourge Divine Spear landed on the Rainbow Glass Barrier, an incredibly and abnormally light colliding sound rang out, causing rainbow ripples to appear before Ling Chen's eyes. Following this, the powerful energy completely disappeared.

“Ding... you have poured incredibly powerful energy into the [Rainbow Glass Barrier], so the [Rainbow Glass Barrier] will last for even longer now.”

Ling Chen: “...!!!”

“Blue Heart's ultimate barrier has colour but no form. Because it's formless, it can never be destroyed; the energy that comes into contact with it will be absorbed and converted into the barrier's own power, and the extra energy extends the length of time that the barrier exists for. Even a True God can't leave this barrier, so you should give up.”

Ling Chen did not attack the barrier anymore, and he turned around while calmly smiling and saying, “Do you really think that you'll be able to take me down with this barrier and a reflective ability? You're too naïve...”

Even though Ling Chen was unable to escape from the barrier and the 3 Moon Goddesses were like hedgehogs, making it so that he could not attack them and could only be attacked, he did not panic at all. Eternal Moon Shadow? It could only last for half an hour, and it would not be of too much help during these 6 hours. Eternal Moon Flare? Ahh... these 3 Moon Goddesses were great

beauties, and they had been taken by him before. Making their beautiful, star-like eyes become blind forever was quite the pity... in that case, he could only use Eternal Moon Grief. Even though it would make them permanently forget how to use their powerful Moon God power, in this situation, it was his only choice.

“To be honest, I didn’t want to do this. Wouldn’t it be great if we could all get along and happily be friends with benefits? It was you who forced me to do this,” Ling Chen said with a helpless look as he raised his right wrist and narrowed his eyes. “But don’t worry. In the future, if anyone bullies, as a man who has been deeply intimate with you, I’ll definitely protect you!”

After saying this, the Lunar Scourge flashed with a silver light as a light flashed in the air, slowly forming into a bright half moon. Seeing the half moon form, Ling Chen smiled, about to release an [Eternal Moon Grief].

“It’s a [Moon]... White Snow, quick!”

The 3 Moon Goddesses looked up at the [Moon] that was forming. As part of the Moon God Clan, how could they not know what this [Moon] meant? At this moment, an ordinary-looking mirror appeared in White Snow’s hands, who pointed it towards the half moon in the sky.

Just as the mirror was pointed at the newly-formed half moon, it suddenly shot out a bright light into the mirror. As light streamed from the [Moon] into the mirror, the half moon quickly shrank... as if its power was being quickly absorbed by the mirror. In a few moments, the half moon that had just formed disappeared from the sky.

“Ding... the Lunar Scourge’s [Half Moon] has been forcefully absorbed by the [Lunar Prison Divine Mirror] and has completely disappeared. A [Half Moon] can no longer be formed today.”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

Seeing the mirror in Moon Goddess White Snow's hands, Ling Chen stared for a while, and he deeply frowned.

Lunar Prison Divine Mirror... was this the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror that the 3 Moon Goddesses had mentioned before? Lunar Prison... did its name mean a 'prison' for the moon? An existence that countered the Lunar Scourge's [Moon]?!

White Snow put the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror away and said expressionlessly, "In order to release its greatest might, the Lunar Scourge relies on its [Moon]. In order to prevent the Lunar Scourge's power from wreaking havoc in the Mystic Moon world, the Mystic Moon's moon was moved by our ancestors to a faraway place. However, the Lunar Scourge still has the ability to create a [Moon], so our ancestor created this Moon Prison Divine Mirror to deal with the Lunar Scourge's [Moon].

Because of how powerful the Lunar Scourge was, Ling Chen had neglected an evident problem... since the Lunar Scourge was so powerful, how had it been defeated by the Moon God Clan and sealed away time and time again? In the end, why was all of its power split away from it and only an empty shell sealed away at the bottom of an abyss?

Only now did Ling Chen realise that the Moon God Clan had been able to defeat the heaven-defying Lunar Scourge again and again not because their power had been able to suppress the Lunar Scourge, but because they possessed a perfect counter to the Lunar Scourge. Last time, he had been able to succeed in the Moon God Palace because he had unexpectedly broken out of the Lunar Sky Hell, obtained the Moon God Orb while the Moon God Clan was not expecting it, and then used Eternal Moon Shadow. That time, the Moon Goddesses had been completely unprepared, and perhaps they did not have the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror on them.

"Don't waste any words with him, attack!"

Goddess Order Purple Dress spread her arms and thousands of

flashing orbs of light instantly appeared in the sky. All of them were half a metre in diameter, and they shone with lightning-like light and crackled. Following this, as she pointed, the orbs of light flew towards Ling Chen.

Now that things had come to this, Ling Chen had no paths of retreat. The only thing he could do now was preserve his own life because all damage he dealt to the 3 Moon Goddesses would be returned to him many times greater. However, if he wanted to escape from this predicament, he had to survive the 3 Moon Goddesses' combined attacks for more than 6 hours!

No matter how he thought about it, this was simply impossible! The Shura's power was gathered in his attack power, and he was far inferior to these 3 moon Goddesses in terms of Defence and HP. Right now, he could not use any attack skills, and even though his HP and Defence had greatly increased over time, he would not be able to survive more than 3 rounds of attacks from these 3 Moon Goddesses, let alone 6 hours.

The destructive orbs of light that covered the sky descended, making it almost impossible for Ling Chen to dodge. Ling Chen frowned and stabbed out with his sword and spear, destroying the orbs that came close while quickly moving, dodging a mass of orbs of light. However, those that passed by him stopped, then came at him from behind.

They're homing?

“Eight Directions Annihilation!”

Ling Chen roared as a powerful light exploded out from Ling Chen's body, dissipating all of the orbs of light flying towards him. He rushed forwards and arrogantly yelled, “You really think you can trap me and deal with me so easily?”

The 3 Moon Goddesses simultaneously released their attacks, and berserk Moon God power filled the entire barrier. They knew that Ling Chen had the Feng Chen Sect's abilities, so he had exceptional

movement abilities. They used large AOE destructive attacks to cover the space within the barrier, making it so that no matter how fast and evasive Ling Chen was, he would not be able to dodge the attacks.

“Moon Shadow!”

“Ding... the Libra Orb’s effects have been activated. [Moon Shadow]’s cooldown time has been reset.”

Without the [Moon], Ling Chen could not cast any Eternal lunar skills, but he still had his normal lunar skills. The 3 Moon Goddesses were caught off guard, and their bodies and attacks froze in place. Ling Chen flashed in front of the 3 Moon Goddesses, his Shura Emperor Sword and Lunar Scourge Divine Spear raised. However, he simply could not attack because if he did, the damage would be reflected 3 times greater to himself. With the Cancer Orb, he could ignore all Defence, but the skill that the 3 Moon Goddesses had activated on their bodies did not reduce his damage, but instead reflected it!

Ling Chen stood there, facing the most awkward situation he had experienced since entering the Mystic Moon world. He knew that lasting for 6 hours against the 3 moon Goddesses in this restricted space was impossible. Perhaps he would not survive even 10 minutes. In his desperation, he gritted his teeth: Looks like there’s only one thing I can do... I must succeed!

Moon Shadow’s light disappeared and Ling Chen’s eyes glinted as he released Moon Grief. Following this, the 3 Moon Goddess’ attacks disappeared, and their actions froze. Ling Chen swept his gaze over the 3 Moon Goddesses before resting his eyes on Moon Goddess Blue Heart and rushed over, using a [True Lucky Hand] on her.

As Moon Goddess Blue Heart cried out, all of her clothes and equipment disappeared, her beautiful body exposed. Ling Chen smirked, but he did not have time to appreciate her figure, and the

Lunar Scourge flashed as he released a [Moon Flare].

“Ahhh!!!”

Under the intense light, even the 3 Moon Goddesses' sight was taken away, causing them to panic for a few moments. Just as the light disappeared, Ling Chen stared into Moon Goddess Blue Heart's eyes.

“Utter Despair Curse!”

Ling Chen gathered all of his mental energy and cast his first Feng Chen Curse after his mental energy was completely unlocked. His target was Blue Heart, who had just been stripped naked and blinded.

“Ding... your [Utter Despair Curse] has failed.”

“This is... the Feng Chen Sect's Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses!!”

Moon Goddess Blue Heart wrapped her arms around her breasts and pinned her legs together as she cried out. Hearing this, Ling Chen became greatly confused... he had stripped her, blinded her, and then used an Utter Despair Curse with his incredibly powerful mental energy... and yet, he had failed?!

No... he had to follow up! Otherwise, he would stand no chance!

Ling Chen gritted his teeth as an incredibly strange and colourless light flashed in his eyes, piercing into Moon Goddess Blue Heart's soul.

“Soulstealing Curse!!”

“Ding... your [Soulstealing Curse] has failed.”

“Ding... the [Aries Orb]'s effects have been activated, the [Soulstealing Curse]'s negative effects from failing have been nullified.”

Ling Chen deeply frowned in confusion.

He had thought that with his mental energy completely unsealed and adding on the fact that his Shura's power completely suppressed the 3 Moon Goddesses, that there would be a very high chance for his Feng Chen Curse to take effect. This was even more so with how flustered he had made Blue Heart... however, he had never thought that both the Utter Despair Curse and Soulstealing Curse would fail!

The Shura's power was indeed quite mighty, and his attack power completely surpassed that of the 3 Moon Goddesses'. However, apart from attack power, all of his other stats were far below the 3 Moon Goddesses', and his overall strength was weaker than any of them. In terms of mental energy, Ling Chen had already stepped into a demigod state; there was no one in the world who had more powerful mental energy than him. However, when the 3 Moon Goddesses were born, they already possessed demigod godhood, and even though their mental energies were not stronger than Ling Chen's and could even be said to be weaker, Ling Chen was only in his twenties, while the 3 Moon Goddesses had lived for over 18,000 years. How could their mental states, which they had built up over 18,000 years, be broken through so easily? Adding on the fact that Moon Goddess Blue Heart and Moon Goddess Purple Dress had been affected by Xiao Feng Chen's [Lovey Lovey Curse] a thousand years ago, they created subconscious defences against the Feng Chen Curses.

As such, even though Ling Chen had incredibly powerful mental energy, the chances of his Feng Chen Curses succeeding against the 3 Moon Goddesses were no more than 50%. Even if their minds were in complete chaos, his chances of success were 80% at most.

As for the Utter Despair Curse and Soulstealing Curse both failing, there was a reason for that. Ling Chen's luck just then had been quite poor! In Blue Heart's state just then, there was at least a 90% chance of it succeeding... but he just happened to fail. Otherwise, if the Utter Despair Curse had succeeded, there would

have been a 100% success rate for his Soulstealing Curse to work against the defenceless Moon Goddess Blue Heart! If Moon Goddess Blue Heart had fallen, then the situation would have been greatly changed.

Chapter 768: Heart End Cliff, Yama Curse (1)

“I knew you would use the Feng Chen Curses, the most despicable tricks in the world, so we were prepared! This time, don’t expect to escape from us!”

Moon Grief and Moon Flare’s effects ended, and the 3 Moon Goddesses once again gathered their power, releasing it and combining it into a massive attack that descended towards Ling Chen. In this sealed space, no matter where he ran, he would be hit by the attack. With no other choice, Ling Chen silently sighed and released the War God’s power.

“Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor!”

As the 3 Moon Goddesses’ powerful energy slammed into Ling Chen’s body, it was stopped by the layer of light on his body. The Libra Orb’s effects were not triggered, so Ling Chen’s absolute defence could only last 10 seconds. During those 10 seconds of invincibility, Ling Chen gritted his teeth and rushed up, quickly reaching White Snow and Purple Dress, casting 2 [True Lucky Hands] and stripping them as well.

“You!!!”

“Calm yourself and don’t panic; he won’t be able to escape today. As long as we can punish him, we can wash away all of our shame!” Even though White Snow’s face was slightly red after being stripped, she remained calm. An energy weapon reformed in her hand, and even more powerful Moon God power mercilessly blasted towards Ling Chen, shaking the entire space.

3 [True Lucky Hands] once again left the 3 Moon Goddesses completely naked, and the beautiful scene in front of Ling Chen’s eyes was able to make anyone feel dazzled and stunned. However, Ling Chen was in mood to appreciate this – after obtaining the items from True Lucky Hand, Ling Chen took out the Lunar Prison

Divine Mirror and frowned as he looked over it, hoping to find a way to release the devoured [Moon].

Seeing Ling Chen hold the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror, the 3 Moon Goddesses did not seem flustered at all, and White Snow said, “It’s useless; even if you’ve obtained the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror, it’s absolutely impossible for you to release the moon. This is because the moon’s power has been completely scattered after it was devoured, so you can give up.”

The 3 Moon Goddesses did not stop attacking, and when [Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor] was about to run out, Ling Chen’s hand holding the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror gripped it tightly before throwing it up into the air. He then smashed the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear upwards into it...

BOOM!!!!!!

As the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear slammed into the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror, a massive explosion sounded out and the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror instantly shattered into pieces. A berserk energy then crushed the fragments into dust too small to be seen by the naked eye, causing the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror to completely disappear from the world.

“Ahh!! He... He destroyed the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror!” Moon Goddess Blue Heart cried.

“With his destructive power, it’s indeed possible for him... now that the Lunar Prison Divine Mirror has been destroyed, we definitely can’t let him escape. Otherwise, even if we use all of our trump cards, we won’t have another chance like today!”

At this moment, the War God’s light around Ling Chen’s body finally disappeared.

“His absolute defence has disappeared... Purple Dress, Blue Heart! Attack with your full strength!”

The instant [Disdaining The Heavens and Scorning the Earth, I Am Emperor] disappeared, the auras around the 3 Moon Goddesses greatly grew, and light of judgment rained down in every inch of the space, covering Ling Chen who was completely unable to dodge...

Boom! Boom! Boom!!!

-78,000,000!

-96,300,000!

-120,000,000!!

Ling Chen felt as if he was hit by 3 incomparably heavy hammers, and he instantly lost more than 90% of his HP. His body was sent flying down like a cannonball, falling into the dark abyss below.

“A cliff?”

“Don’t worry, he won’t be able to escape. There are no gaps in the Rainbow Glass Barrier, and even the ground 500 metres down has been locked down. Even if he wants to travel through the earth, it will be impossible,” White Snow said calmly. Following which, she rushed down towards the abyss, sending a powerful wave of Moon God power out...

As the wind howled in his ears, Ling Chen fell hundreds of metres in less than 2 seconds and then heavily smashed into the bottom of the Rainbow Glass Barrier.

Below his feet was flowing rainbow light – the inescapable barrier – telling Ling Chen that it was impossible to even fall to the bottom of this abyss. Ling Chen quickly got up and raised his head, seeing the Goddess Fate’s merciless tracking attack. He raised his Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, sending forth an [Eight Direction Annihilation] and dispelling the Goddess Fate’s power. After his attack and the Goddess Fate’s attacks collided and disappeared, Ling Chen suddenly stared.

On both sides of him were 2 cliffs that were tens of metres apart,

each of which were hundreds of metres tall and extended down to unknown depths. After Ling Chen raised his head and dissipated the Goddess Fate's attack, he saw 3 large, crookedly-written words...

“Heart...”

“End...”

“Cliff...”

“Heart End Cliff?” Ling Chen muttered this name to himself and stared, feeling that this name was quite familiar. He was sure that this was the first time he had come to this place, or he would have long since discovered the Sky Demon Beast. However, he was even more sure that this was not the first time that he had come into contact with the name ‘Heart End Cliff’, and he was certain that he had heard it from somewhere before. It was just that in his current predicament, where a fatal attack from the Moon Goddesses could descend at any moment, Ling Chen was unable to focus and remember where he had heard this name before.

Crash!

As an ear-piercing sound tore through the air, a lightning-like burst of Moon God power descended incredibly quickly, and it was to the point that Ling Chen was almost unable to react in time. He leapt up with his body pressed against the cliff, jumping tens of metres high, narrowly dodging the Goddess Order's terrifying attack. As he reached the peak of his jump, his hand just so happened to touch the word ‘Cliff’ carved on the cliff face.

Clang...

The words ‘Heart End Cliff’ suddenly lit up with a strange light, and an attractive force dragged Ling Chen towards the cliff face, after which he mysteriously disappeared.

“Eh?”

Just as Ling Chen was sucked into the cliff, the 3 Moon

Goddesses' faces froze, revealing an extremely strange expression.

“What’s going on... his aura seems to have disappeared.” Moon Goddess Blue Heart’s body descended and looked around her surroundings, but she could not find Ling Chen. She then closed her eyes, but she could not detect his aura at all.

“I can’t sense him either.” Purple Dress also slowly shook her head as she deeply frowned.

“Blue Heart’s barrier is something that cannot be broken through, so it’s impossible that he escaped. When he was sent falling down the abyss, he must have used a high-grade concealment technique to hide from us. The Feng Chen Sect’s concealment abilities are top-tier, so it’s not impossible to be able to hide from us while our power was locked down on him,” White Snow said calmly as she looked down. “But no matter how perfect his concealment is, it can’t make him disappear. Continue using large AOE attacks around the entire barrier; even if he can hide, it’ll be useless.”

“Okay!” Blue Heart nodded and quickly gathered her Moon God power. At this moment, Purple Dress suddenly yelled out, “Wait!”

“Eh?” What is it, Purple Dress?” Blue Heart and White Snow looked over at Purple Dress.

Purple Dress did not immediately reply. Rather, she stared at the shoddily-written 3 large words.

“Heart End Cliff... Heart End Cliff... this name...” Following Purple Dress’s gaze, White Snow also looked at the 3 large words. After looking at it thoughtfully for a moment, she said in shock, “Isn’t that where the legends say that the Feng Chen Sect’s origins are? Could this place be...”

“Our ancestors said that the Feng Chen Sect’s power was extremely evil, but like our Moon God Clan’s power, it also comes from the ancient True Gods. In terms of strength, it’s not any

weaker than our Moon God Clan's power. It's just that the Feng Chen Sect's abilities have extremely high requirements for mental energy, and they cannot be used by normal creatures. As such, as the True Gods fell, there were less and less beings that could wield the Feng Chen Sect's true power. This Heart End Cliff is something left behind by the ancient True God that created the Feng Chen Sect. The Heart End Cliff has always been the Feng Chen Sect's most sacred place, and its location has never been disclosed before. Who would have thought that it would be hidden here; no wonder why our Moon God Clan has never found it before.

“Since it's a place left behind by a True god, it might contain the remnant divine soul of a True God; remember not to destroy the cliff face when attacking.”

.....

Within the strange attractive force, the scene before Ling Chen's eyes became completely dark. Following this, the attractive force quickly disappeared, and Ling Chen stepped on a cold and hard surface, a faint light in front of him.

“What... What's going on? What is this place?”

Ling Chen felt quite stunned. He felt as if he had been dragged from one world to another world by a mysterious force. Even the Moon God power that had locked onto him had disappeared.

He was in a simple stone room, and it was quite small and completely sealed. The only light was from 2 luminous pearls hanging above, allowing Ling Chen to see around the room. The stone room was quite empty, and apart from the 2 luminous pearls, there was an unnatural-looking stone slab in the centre of the room.

After looking around, Ling Chen walked over to the stone slab at the centre of the room, and it looked like an ordinary stone slab. On the centre were 2 small, craggily-written words:

‘Feng’ and ‘Chen’.

Feng Chen... Wait!!

These 2 words instantly reminded Ling Chen where he had heard of the name ‘Heart End Cliff’ before. He quickly opened his profession page and looked at the [Feng Chen Sect Leader] description:

[Feng Chen Sect Leader]: You have inherited the previous Feng Chen Sect Leader Xiao Feng Chen’s special profession that originated from the evil ancient sect ‘Feng Chen Sect’. After becoming the current Sect Leader, you can freely enter and exit the Feng Chen Sect’s secret grounds, [Heart End Cliff]...

Heart End Cliff... this was the Heart End Cliff mentioned in the Feng Chen Sect Leader’s description!

This place had not originally caught Ling Chen’s attention, and he had forgotten about it afterwards. Who would have thought that he would have entered after being sent flying down... no, he had been sucked into this place.

He had definitely been sucked into here because of his Feng Chen Sect Leader profession.

However, there was nothing in here, so what could he do here? What was the purpose of this place?

Chapter 769: Heart End Cliff, Yama Curse

(2)

After silently staring for a while, Ling Chen tried touching the stone slab with his hand, trying to see if there was a secret passage or item beneath it. However, just as his hand was about to touch the stone slab, an ancient voice suddenly sounded in his ears, “Are you sure you want to try?”

The voice was incredibly ancient and faint. It seemed to come from the faraway edges of the sky, and it also gave off a mysterious aura. Ling Chen’s hand froze above the stone slab and quickly raised his head, calling out, “Who is it?”

The ancient voice did not answer him, and it instead continued to say, “For you to be able to enter here is proof that you’re the successor of the Feng Chen Sect of this generation. However, the age of gods has concluded, and it will be difficult for the power that I’ve left behind to once again shine with glory. If you succeed, when you unleash the Feng Chen Sect’s ultimate curses, apart from True Gods, nothing in this world will be able to escape your control. If you fail, your mind will be greatly damaged, and you may never recover... are you sure you want to try?”

“What do you mean by trying?” Ling Chen quickly looked around, but he was unable to find the source of the voice.

However, the ancient voice once again ignored his question, leaving the stone room in silence.

Ling Chen finally concluded that this voice was not from someone who was hiding, but the voice of a soul left behind in this stone slab from a long time ago. When someone was about to touch the stone slab, it would automatically speak.

If you succeed, when you unleash the Feng Chen Sect’s ultimate curses, apart from True Gods, nothing in this world will be able to

escape your control.

If you fail, your mind will be greatly damaged...

Ling Chen completely ignored the consequences of failing. All of his attention was focused on the fact that if he succeeded, apart from True Gods, nothing could escape his control. That's right, everything! Even the incredibly powerful Shura would not be able to say such arrogant words. It was impossible for Ling Chen to tell whether those words were true or not, but they would greatly shock anyone who heard them – who wouldn't want the ability to control everything? Who could resist it?

However, just what sort of power was it to dare claim that it could control everything?

Ling Chen's heart started to rapidly thump. That's right, even he had been greatly attracted by those incredibly arrogant and proud words... at the same time, he was currently in the 3 Moon Goddesses' barrier and had no paths of retreat. The Shura's incredibly powerful attack power was useless to him, so if he really could obtain the power to control everything, why would he have to feel fearful in his current predicament?

“This power... could it be the Feng Chen Sect's ultimate secret technique? Can it really control everything... could this be true?”

Ling Chen muttered to himself in a low voice, his frown becoming deeper and deeper. Looking at the stone slab right in front of him, he only hesitated for a few moments before making his decision and pressing his hand against the stone slab.

The instant his hand came into contact with the stone slab, the seeming-ordinary stone slab suddenly flashed with a bright light. Suddenly, Ling Chen clearly felt an incredibly substantial wave of energy flow up from the stone slab and go through his arm into his entire body. Finally, it reached his head and crashed into his mind.

Ling Chen's mind went blank, and the scene in front of him

became completely white. However, Ling Chen's mind was still completely clear. He felt that this was not a mental attack, but rather, an external power was trying to fill his mind with a powerful wave of mental energy. If he could withstand it, this energy would be his to use. However, if his mental energy was not strong enough and he could not resist this energy, then his mind would explode like a balloon... this energy would explode, and his mind would also be damaged. If the damage was light, he would temporarily lose consciousness, but if it was severe, his mind might dissipate, and he would become a vegetable.

Upon realising this, Ling Chen calmed down. He closed his eyes and calmed himself down, relaxing his body, allowing the energy to flood into his mind. He knew that his mental energy was incomparably powerful after being released by the Shura's power; on earth, only Fey's mental energy could be compared to his. Compared to normal people, their mental energy was stronger by many times; at the very least, their mental energy had already exceeded the limits of humans, and it had reached the level of 'gods' according to the Mad Scientist.

However, even if what the Mad Scientist had said about their mental energies reaching the levels of 'gods' was true, that was only their mental energies – their bodies and strength had not reached such a level. As such, even though Ling Chen and Fey's mental energies had reached the level of 'gods', because of their body's restrictions, they could not manifest the true might of their mental energies.

As an analogy, a normal person's mental energy was like a balloon that was blown to the size of a soccer ball. Ling Chen's 'balloon' was the size of a lake, but with Ling Chen's current strength, he was unable to blow that 'balloon' to the size of a lake, wasting most of his power due to his body's limits. However, if a powerful external energy was sent into a normal person, their balloon would explode, while Ling Chen's would expand to its true

potential.

As Ling Chen calmed down, the wave of energy flooding in became more peaceful. The feeling that his mind was being assaulted gradually disappeared, and his vision and hearing slowly returned to normal. Finally, Ling Chen could only feel a stream of warmth joyously rushing into his body until the light in the stone slab disappeared.

This stone slab was from an ancient god clan, and it had existed for tens of thousands of years. However, after the True Gods all fell, no one in the Feng Chen Sect had been able to bear the stone slab's energy, and they were instead overwhelmed by the energy, their minds damaged. Afterwards, less and less people dared to attempt to receive this power, and more and more Feng Chen Sect Leaders would warn their successors not to touch the stone slab at the Heart End Cliff.

As for Ling Chen, apart from the impact he felt at the very beginning when he had not expected it, everything went incredibly smoothly. The energy from the stone slab was perfectly absorbed into his mind, becoming part of his mental energy.

Ling Chen slowly moved his hand away from the stone slab and opened his eyes, which seemed even deeper, and they flashed with a strange light.

“Ding... you have successfully accepted the ancient Feng Chen Sect's inheritance of power. Your sight, hearing, smell, touch, detection abilities, focus, and reaction speed have all been greatly improved. Comprehension+80, and you have obtained much greater comprehension of your skills, making it easier for your skills to be levelled up and advanced.”

“Ding... because of your incredibly high Comprehension, you have comprehended the War God ultimate skill [Eternal Battle Soul].”

“Ding... under the [Holy Spirit's Gift]'s effects, your skill [Eternal

Battle Soul] has been raised to LV5 (max level).”

“Ding... you have successfully unlocked the advanced Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses [Devastating Beauty Curse], [Descending Sovereign Curse], [Heart Murdering Soul Executing Curse], [Ultimate Sheepy Curse], [Body Cleansing Wild Dance Curse].”

“Ding... you can use the Feng Chen Forbidden Curse [Soulstealing Curse] +12 times and [Soukilling Curse] +6 times.”

“Ding... you have unlocked the Feng Chen Ultimate Curse [Yama Curse].”

The bonus 80 Comprehension gave Ling Chen a big fright, and he almost thought that he had heard incorrectly. This was because even with Xiao Hui’s powerful [Holy Spirit’s Aura], Ling Chen’s current Comprehension was only 35, which was already an astronomical figure among players. However, this time, he had received a whole 80 points, making it so that his Comprehension was now above 100, and it had reached 115!

Just what did a Comprehension of 115 mean? Perhaps even peak existences like the Underworld King or Sea Emperor would faint after seeing such a number.

In his excitement, Ling Chen opened his skills page and looked at his new abilities.

War God profession:

[Eternal Battle Soul]: Current Level: LV5, max level. An ultimate War God skill unlocked by ‘Ling Tian’ through his incredibly high comprehension, which allows him to release attacks that exceed the limits of the War God’s power. Effects: Passive ability, all War God profession attacks’ Damage+50%, and the chances of the effects activating+50%.

Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses:

[Devastating Beauty Curse]: Advanced level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, cannot be levelled up. It is the upgraded

version of the [Love Magnet Curse], and it can be cast upon multiple targets within one's field of vision. The targets (both male and female) will view the target as a devastating beauty and will be filled with love and adoration towards them. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and target's mental energy and their overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is everyone within the user's vision and detection. Can be used an unlimited number of times. Costs 10 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[Descending Sovereign Curse]: Advanced level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, cannot be levelled up. It is the upgraded version of the [Deity Curse], and it can be cast upon multiple targets within one's field of vision. The targets will believe anyone chosen to be a descended sovereign, and they will worship the 'sovereign' and obey all orders. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and target's mental energy and their overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is everyone within the user's vision and detection. Can be used an unlimited number of times. Costs 10 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[Heart Murdering Soul Executing Curse]: Advanced level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, cannot be levelled up. Can be used on multiple targets within the user's vision or detection. It forcefully stimulates the targets to feel either hopelessly depressed, outrageously joyful, madly hysterical, utterly despairing, or absolutely berserk, and they will maintain that emotion or emotions. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and target's mental energy and their overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is everyone within the user's vision and detection. Can be used an unlimited number of times. Costs 10 MP, cooldown time:

100 seconds.

[Ultimate Sheepy Curse]: Advanced level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, cannot be levelled up. It is the upgraded version of the [We're All Sheep Curse], and it can be cast upon multiple targets within one's field of vision. All targets will think that they are a sheep. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and target's mental energy and their overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is everyone within the user's vision and detection. Can be used an unlimited number of times. Costs 10 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

[Body Cleansing Wild Dance Curse]: Advanced level Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, cannot be levelled up. Can be used on multiple targets within the user's vision or detection, and the targets will take off all of their clothes and start dancing. The success rate is dependent on the difference in strength between the user and target's mental energy and their overall strength. The number of seconds the effect lasts for is equivalent to the user's Comprehension stat; maximum number of targets is everyone within the user's vision and detection. Can be used an unlimited number of times. Costs 10 MP, cooldown time: 100 seconds.

Feng Chen Forbidden Curse:

[Yama Curse]: Ultimate Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curse, cannot be levelled up. In the legends from the ancient True God times, the being with the greatest mental energy was the Yama King, who looked down on all creatures. The Yama King reaped tens of thousands of souls every day, and the energy of the souls caused his mental energy to become boundless. However, anything in excess can have the opposite intended effect. The Yama King's mental energy became more powerful than he could control, resulting in it scattering, and the Yama King was forever forgotten. Yama's power has become synonymous with the highest level of

one's mental energy.

Effects: Can only be used on the user. It madly increases one's own mental energy for a period of time, causing all of the user's Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses within the next 10 minutes (including the Feng Chen Forbidden Curses) to not have any cooldown times or restrictions, and it causes them to have certain success. Costs 10 MP. After the effects end, the user will lapse into a severe lethargic mental state. Can be used at most (level/25) times (rounded down). Current number of uses available: 3/3.

[Author's Note: after killing the 10 ancient demon beasts, Ling Chen's level is LV85].

Chapter 770: Yama Looks Down On The World

Every corner of the Rainbow Glass Barrier was filled with the 3 Moon Goddesses' power, but after continuously attacking for a long time, they still could not detect where Ling Chen was.

“What’s going on? He can’t pass through the barrier or log off, and he can’t leave even if he dies... even if he’s concealed, no matter how powerful the technique is, once hit, he’ll be revealed. How could this be...”

“Looks like there’s only 1 possibility!” Purple Dress stopped attacking, turning her cold gaze to the cliff face that White Snow had prohibited them from attacking. “Since this place is where the Feng Chen Sect originated, it shouldn’t be as simple as a cliff: there might be another space within that cliff. Ling Tian possesses the Feng Chen Sect’s power, so perhaps he has hidden inside. It seems like there’s no other possibility.”

White Snow and Blue Heart stopped attacking and slowly nodded. Indeed, apart from this explanation, there was no other way of explaining the situation. This was because that cliff face was the only place that they had not attacked, and only by hiding in there would he have been able to avoid them for so long.

“What should we do, White Snow? Should we destroy the cliff?” Blue Heart asked. Even though she did favour the Feng Chen Sect, the Heart End Cliff was still a place left behind by a True God. The Moon God Clan’s ancestor had reminded them not to intrude into places left behind by True Gods unless it was an absolute necessity, much less destroy them.

White Snow did not hesitate and slightly nodded, stretching out her palm towards the cliff face carved with the words ‘Heart End Cliff’. “We have to get rid of evildoer Ling Tian. If we miss this opportunity today, it will be difficult for us to ever wash away our

shame, and our Moon God Clan will not be able to rest at ease for fear of his revenge. Even if we have to destroy this place left behind by a True God..." Before she finished speaking, a light suddenly flashed above the Heart End Cliff, and a person strangely passed through the cliff face, appearing before them... it was Ling Chen!

At this moment, Ling Chen's whole body was filled with a sensation that he wanted to go against the heavens. This was because once he activated the terrifying Yama Curse, anyone who was not a True God would fall victim to his Feng Chen Curses. However, 'True Gods' had long since vanished from this world. According to the Mystic Moon world's records, the True Gods all died in the ancient times, and even the 3 Moon Goddesses had only inherited demigod godhood. In other words, no one in this world could resist his Feng Chen Curses anymore. Before, there were already very few beings in the world that could threaten him, and now that he had the Yama Curse, there was nothing able to stop him from dominating the entire Mystic Moon world.

Even the 'desperate situation' that the 3 Moon Goddesses had forced him into was not worth mentioning anymore. After coming out from the Heart End Cliff, Ling Chen did not feel even a trace of fear when facing the 3 Moon Goddesses again, and he instead dangerously smiled. He widened his eyes as he looked at their naked bodies... he would never tire of this scene.

"It's Ling Tian! He has come out!"

"Don't waste any words with him; focus your attacks on him!"

The 3 Moon Goddesses' power once again locked onto Ling Chen. This time, even if Ling Chen once again hid within the Heart End Cliff, they would not hesitate to destroy it.

Seeing the Moon God power rapidly gathering and covering the sky, Ling Chen slowly smiled as he inwardly sighed in bliss... making the 3 Moon Goddesses, who were worshipped by countless

creatures, his servants, and turning the entire Moon God Palace into his harem... no, into his power... this was something that no one had even dared to think about before... that sort of satisfaction would be much greater than defeating the 3 Moon Goddesses by many times.

However, the fantasy that was even more fantastical than a fantasy was right in front of him... hohohoh... hahahaha...

Ling Chen wildly laughed inwardly. As he looked at the 3 Moon Goddesses, he thought of the current Feng Chen power that he had, and it became even more difficult to not burst out laughing. He spread his arms out and looked up to the sky as he muttered, "Yama... Curse!!"

As Ling Chen faintly muttered, he felt a slight explosion within his mind. Following this, he felt his mental energy rapidly grow at an incomprehensible rate, causing his vision, hearing, smell, taste, and touch to become incredibly acute. He could even clearly feel the movement of the air and elemental essence, and his thoughts became incredibly clear. The pressure from the 3 Moon Goddesses instantly vanished completely as if he had entered an incredibly mystical world.

"Ding... you have activated the Feng Chen Forbidden Curse [Yama Curse]. In the next 10 minutes, all Feng Chen Murdering Heart Curses you use apart from the Yama Curse will have no cooldown time or usage limits, and they will have complete certainty of success."

"This feeling's simply too wonderful; I feel that even the heavens and earth can't escape my mental energy's control."

"Ding... [Yama Curse] remaining uses: 2/3."

Ling Chen stretched out his hands, revelling in his current state.

"Evildoer Ling Tian, we'll send you to eternal damnation today!!"

The 3 Moon Goddesses' furious yells sounded out from the air.

After gathering their power, their massive killing blows were about to land. At this moment, Ling Chen raised his head with an extraordinarily evil smile on his face. His gaze fell on the 3 Moon Goddesses' beautiful and naked bodies, and after staring for a while, his gaze locked onto White Snow. His expression changed as his dark pupils suddenly enlarged, and a strange light that could not be detected by the naked eye rapidly grew before silently rushing towards White Snow's mind... following this, Ling Chen turned to look at Purple Dress... then Blue Heart... in just 1 second, he had sent formless power into the 3 Moon Goddesses' minds.

The 3 Moon Goddesses simultaneously felt their visions blur, and their pupils uncontrollably dilated. Everything in their vision disappeared and were replaced by a pair of eyes... Ling Chen's eyes. They did not know why Ling Chen's eyes had suddenly filled their vision, and they only felt his eyes giving off an irresistible attractive force, drawing their gazes and minds towards them. They could not look away or even close their eyes.

Soon, this sort of feeling spread to their souls, and their powerful mental energies could not resist this strange feeling at all... following this, they started to feel their vision grow hazy, and their bodies started to feel light as if their bodies had no weight. Only Ling Chen's eyes were left in their eyes and their minds, and it was as if they contained a boundless universe, sucking them in. They felt as if they were being tossed and turned, helplessly floating...

“Ling Tian...”

“Ling Tian...”

“Ling Tian...”

The 3 Moon Goddesses' eyes lost their focus, and they subconsciously muttered Ling Chen's name. As they muttered, every inch of their souls was filled with Ling Chen's name and image. All they could think about was him. Slowly, all of their negative feelings towards him completely disappeared, and they

were replaced by an indescribable sense of closeness and intimacy, a sense of worship and dependence. His figure was much, much bigger than everyone else's added together to them, and he was more important than their own lives or even the future of the Moon God Clan. Even the humiliation they had suffered at his hands became a precious and important memory.

“Ding... Soulstealing Curse has succeeded! Target White Snow’s soul now has your mark imprinted on it, and she will view you as the most important person in her life and will be absolutely obedient.”

“Ding... Soulstealing Curse has succeeded! Target Purple Dress’ soul now has your mark imprinted on it, and she will view you as the most important person in her life and will be absolutely obedient.”

“Ding... Soulstealing Curse has succeeded! Target Blue Heart’s soul now has your mark imprinted on it, and she will view you as the most important person in her life and will be absolutely obedient.”

“Ding... because [Yama Curse] is activated, you have not used any of the uses of [Soulstealing Curse]. Number of uses left: 18/20.”

White Snow, Purple Dress, and Blue Heart, the 3 Moon Goddesses standing at the peak of the Mystic Moon world, had fallen for Ling Chen’s [Soulstealing Curse] at the same time and place. The Soulstealing Curse was not as cruel as the Soukilling Curse, and it did not completely control the victims. Rather, it imprinted the user’s mental mark on the target’s soul. From now on, the most important thing to the 3 Moon Goddesses was no longer the Moon God Clan but Ling Chen. Nothing could ever come close to him or replace him.

Come to think of it, ever since Ling Chen had obtained the [Soulstealing Curse], he had only ever used it on the Moon God Clan’s people. The first time was on the Cherry Blossom God

Representative, Snow Cherry, the second was on the Forgotten God Representative, Mu Cai Ling, and this time, he had used it on the 3 Moon Goddesses.

The Moon God power that covered the sky and earth disappeared, and the 3 Moon Goddesses stared at Ling Chen with extremely complicated expressions on their faces: confusion, haziness, nervousness, guilt, struggle... it was difficult to guess what they were thinking.

“Do you still want to kill me?” Ling Chen crossed his arms and raised his face as he smiled, his tone incredibly bright. Looking at them from below, the angle was simply too marvellous, and adding on his extraordinary eyesight, he could see the scenery between their legs perfectly, causing all of the blood within Ling Chen’s body to become restless.

The high and mighty Moon Goddesses revealed an expression of fear upon hearing this, and White Snow shook her head and softly said, “No, how could we harm you? Before... I don’t know why I would do such a thing.”

“I won’t harm you, nor will I allow anyone to harm you!” Purple Dress said resolutely.

“I wouldn’t harm you... wuu, why would I do such a thing; I simply can’t forgive myself, wuu...” Blue Heart covered her face, feeling incredibly guilty.

Even though they were the 3 Moon Goddesses, after being affected by the [Soulstealing Curse], they reacted the same way as the Cherry Blossom God Representative and the Forgotten God Representative. Ling Chen felt so blissful that he felt as if he would start flying – from now on, he controlled the 3 Moon Goddesses and the entire Moon God Clan... ohmygod! Who would dare to think of such a thing? Who could believe such a thing? Who would dare to imagine such a thing?!

Chapter 771: Evil Plan

While it was still day in China, at another place on earth, it was completely dark. The creator of Mystic Moon, the largest virtual gaming company in the world, Cosmos Corporation, still had lights on in its headquarters.

The Cosmos Corporation's headquarters' security was incredibly tight, and many reporters who had been rejected countless times bitterly smiled outside, wanting to enter. Entering this place was even more difficult than entering the presidential building of a country.

Only internal staff could enter the Cosmos Corporation's headquarters. After entering the first door, they had to pass through a facial check, fingerprint check, retina check, security card check, and biological systems check. If anyone tried to force their way through, they would immediately be electrocuted. It was more difficult than scaling the heavens for any outsiders to enter; at the very least, no one had succeeded, and those who wanted to bring in dangerous items did not even need to think about it.

As such, for the 1 year that Mystic Moon had been released, apart from the internal staff, no one knew where the main servers were, nor did anyone know the daily operations and processes. However, without a doubt, Mystic Moon was incredibly successful, and its current CEO, the godfather of virtual gaming, Arlington Smith, was given extremely high praise. However, Smith had appeared far less than before, and he had only spoken on television once, as if he had put all of his effort into Mystic Moon.

The security outside of the Cosmos Corporation's headquarters was incredibly tight and rigorous, and bright lights filled the inside, as did the sound of machinery. The headquarters were quite large, but from the inside, it looked extremely empty. From the first level to the thirtieth level, there were only around 5 people per level standing in front of a massive screen, controlling

various screens, devices, and keyboards.

It was just that if anyone came close, they would find their movements extremely stiff and their expressions frozen with no light in their eyes. They looked exactly like... robots.

If a single person was like this, perhaps it was because of tiredness. However, everyone inside was like this. Within the entire Cosmos Corporation's headquarters, an eerie and strange atmosphere persisted.

At 12am, the rarely-opened large doors of the thirtieth floor slowly opened. Behind the doors were 2 short and skinny people with yellowed faces staring at a gigantic screen, both of their hands running over controls. Their gazes did not deviate from the screen at all, and it was as if they had not noticed that the doors had opened and that a person had walked in.

Pa!

All of the lights on the thirtieth floor lit up, illuminating the person who had walked in. It was a short and skinny old man whose back was severely hunched. He was wearing a white Chinese-styled garment, and he wore a pair of white-framed glasses. He was so skinny that he looked like he was all skin and bones. This was especially so for his head – he simply looked like a skeleton, but the ancient eyes behind his white-framed glasses gave off a terrifying light like those of a venomous snake's.

At the same time, the lights illuminated another elderly man in the hall. He had a head of messy white hair, and his face was quite gaunt. His eyes, which were once full of wisdom and intelligence, were hollow and lifeless. He was tied to a chair, unable to move at all. When the lights turned on, his eyes twitched as he opened them, and after seeing who had walked in, his pupils constricted, revealing an expression of deep fear and rage as he roared in his hoarse voice, “Y-You... what have you come for this time?!”

“Heheheh...”

The hunchbacked old man unpleasantly laughed. He walked with his hands behind his back, his withered body looking like it could be blown over by a gust of wind. “My dear Mr Smith, I’m very happy to see you again; have you been well? There are some things I need your help with. No, no, more accurately speaking, I’m here to give you a big present. In a month, it will be your 80th birthday. Heheh, that day is truly worthy of celebration, heheheh...”

“You... What do you want to use me for this time?”

“Haha, it’s very simple.” The hunchbacked old man raised his white-framed glasses, his eyes giving off a glow that even a venomous snake would be fearful of. “I want you to make a media announcement telling players all over the world to break the ‘most logons in the Mystic Moon world’ record for your 80th birthday. I’m sure a smart person like you will understand and do it well, right?”

“No, no!” The hunchbacked old man’s words caused a deep uneasiness and fear to grow in Smith’s heart. He could feel that there would be terrifying consequences that might doom the entire human race if he really did this. His eyes widened as he desperately shook his head. “Keep dreaming; I definitely won’t keep working for you!”

“Oh? Heheh...” The hunchbacked old man sinisterly laughed. “Looks like you’ve forgotten about your cute little granddaughter. Since that’s the case, I’ll help you remember her.”

Pa!

The hunchbacked old man flicked his finger as one of the massive life support systems at the side of the hall opened, and through a layer of glass, a 7 year old girl with golden hair could be seen. Her eyes were closed as she silently lay there... only her grandpa knew that she, who had been so lively and spirited, had lain there for more than 1 year.

“Tina... Tina!” Seeing the girl in the life support system, tears

flowed out of Smith's eyes. He struggled to reach out with his bound right hand towards the girl. However, he immediately closed his eyes – he knew what the Mad Scientist wanted to do, and he said with great pain and hatred, “Give up! This time, no matter how you threaten me, I won't help you anymore!!”

“Aiyaya, what admirable determination.” The hunchbacked old man eerily smiled as if he did not mind Smith's resistance at all. He glanced at the girl in the life support system and said while smiling, “What a poor little fellow. Since your grandpa has abandoned you, there's no point in keeping you here anymore... hehehehe...”

As the hunchbacked old man gave a horrible, ear-piercing laugh, he flicked out with his finger. Sparks flew from the life support system, causing the sleeping girl to cry out in pain, her little face twisting in discomfort.

Hearing that cry, Smith felt as if his heart had been pierced by a blade. He closed his eyes as tears flowed down his elderly face. He clenched his fist, his fingernails digging into his flesh. “I'm sorry, Tina. Grandpa loves you the most in the world, but... but... grandpa can't sacrifice the whole human race for you... I'm sorry, Tina... grandpa's sorry...”

Smith's voice was filled with pain and helplessness. If it wasn't for his granddaughter, he would have long since tried to commit suicide over the past year. This time, he simply could not give in again.

“Heheh, this scene is moving to the point that I'm about to laugh. Since you've chosen to abandon your granddaughter, of course I can't disappoint you. However, don't worry, I'll be merciful so that she doesn't die immediately. I'll keep her alive to the day that all living creatures on earth disappear. Moreover, while she lives here, every cell and nerve of hers will be perfectly stimulated by me, making her feel that death is something that's wonderful; it will be to the point that she will think that hell is heaven. Hahaha,

heheheh...” The hunchbacked old man wildly laughed. Every sentence he spoke, Smith’s face became paler, and by the end, his body started to violently tremble. Following this, the hunchbacked old man flicked his finger. “Now, my dear Mr Smith, have a good listen to your granddaughter’s beautiful song, heheheheh...”

Pa!

The hunchbacked old man snapped his fingers, and the life support machine was suddenly filled with berserk electricity.

“Arghhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!”

The instant that the electricity appeared, a horrifying shriek came from the girl’s mouth. This scream seemed like it came from hell, and it was so horrifying that no one would be able to listen to it. One could only imagine what sort of pain the owner of this voice was in.

Smith’s face became completely pale. He squeezed his eyes shut, his face twisting until it looked terrifying. The screams persisted, but she had become hoarse. Hearing the voice, Smith felt as if his heart was being torn to pieces, and the scream was so piercing that even the air trembled.

“No... stop! Stop it!! I’ll do it... I’ll do anything! Stop torturing my Tina!”

In just a few seconds, the hellish screams caused Smith’s determination to completely crumble. If the one being tortured was himself, even if it was 10 times worse, he would not have given in. However, the one suffering was his innocent and cute granddaughter who he loved with all his heart...

“Oh? How can that be? Surely your granddaughter isn’t as important as the entire human race. How can you doom the entire human race for your granddaughter? You should know what a catastrophe you’re pushing the world into.” The hunchbacked old man eerily smiled, his eyes filled with delight and vindictiveness.

“Stop!! Hurry up and stop! I’ll do whatever you say... I’ll follow your commands... just stop... I beg you, just stop!!”

Every second he listened to his granddaughter scream, the pain in his heart increased by many times. He desperately struggled and pleaded, falling with the chair right in front of the hunchbacked old man. He rapidly banged his head against the ground, his face covered with tears as he pleaded, “Please... stop... I’ll do whatever you say... please...”

“My dear Mr Smith, I’m starting to like you more and more.” The hunchbacked old man gave an ugly smile and snapped his fingers, causing the electricity within the life support machine to disappear. The girl finally stopped screaming, and she weakly fell silent again.

“I hope our cooperation will be just as enjoyable as before.”

Smith’s body was covered with sweat, and he lay on the ground, feeling completely spent. Even though it was not him who had been tortured, he could not take the psychological torture of hearing his granddaughter screaming like that. After a while, he finally said hoarsely, “You can... turn me into a puppet like them... and make me do anything... so why... must you do this...”

“Heheh,” The hunchbacked old man laughed. “Puppets are indeed the most obedient things in the world, but if they’re too obedient, they become boring. However, having someone who hates my guts to the point that they want to rip me to shreds while still having to obediently do things that they would rather die than do... making them feel furious, helpless, and despair to the point that they want to die... heheh, do you know what a wonderful feeling that is? Heheheh...”

“Y-You... You demon! Madman!”

“Oh! Thank you for your praises; I’m indeed the world’s greatest madman, heheheh... now, you have 24 hours to think about how you can do this perfectly. If you disappoint me, the consequences

won't be good.”

Smith's eyes widened, and his body spasmed before he fainted.

The hunchbacked old man turned around, his skeleton-like head slightly raised. “The Mystic Moon Plan has finally reached its conclusion; in 1 month, it will be the beginning of the end. Even though I wanted to play for a few more years, since King gave the order, I'll have to speed up this poor planet's apocalypse.”

The hunchbacked old man took a few steps forwards to the people who were controlling the screen. He swept his eyes over the screen, on which there was a big patch of blue, as well as a crescent-moon shaped object on the patch of blue. There were gaps within the crescent moon, and was made up of different colours, looking quite complex. This was evidently a map of the Mystic Moon world!

The hunchbacked old man's gaze fell on the region with the darkest colour within the crescent moon, speaking in a sinister voice, “Forgotten Continent? It's that place they call China. This place's overall strength has surpassed all of the other regions by so much, causing the perfect world I created to become unbalanced! It's simply destroying my perfect creation!”

“Since that's the case, I'll personally create a lovable disease and spread it on that region, heheheh...”

Chapter 772: Returning To The Novice Village

The Rainbow Glass Barrier would last for 6 hours, and even if Blue Heart wanted to, even she was unable to remove it. As such, even though Ling Chen had used the [Soulstealing Curse] to leave his mark on their minds, he was still unable to immediately leave the Rainbow Glass Barrier. As such, he could only wait another 6 or so hours until the barrier disappeared.

However, if Ling Chen did not make full use of his time with the 3 naked Moon Goddesses, who would not resist him at all, then he was not a real man. Within those 6 hours, he used 3 minutes to ask the Moon Goddesses what he wanted to know, started to lay his hands on White Snow during the 4th minute, and by the 5th minute, he had sprung on top of her.

Compared to last time, when the 3 Moon Goddesses could not move and he only had thirty minutes, Ling Chen enjoyed himself fully this time. He barely stopped during those 5 hours, and putting aside their moans and embarrassed looks as they 'united' with him, just the thought that the women under him were the high and mighty Moon Goddesses made Ling Chen so excited that he couldn't stop...

When the Rainbow Glass Barrier disappeared, Ling Chen, with his incredibly tough and vigorous body, did not feel tired at all. On the other hand, the 3 Moon Goddesses' faces were completely red, making them seem less sacred and more enchanting.

This world's too wonderful... Ling Chen closed his eyes and raised his face to the sky, spreading out his arms as if he was trying to hug the sky. Now, he truly felt that he was invincible within the Mystic Moon world. Putting aside his invincible fighting power, even if he was a LVO normal player, with the 3 Moon Goddesses protecting him, he could do anything he wanted in the Mystic

Moon world.

“The places that your ancestors created – the Novice Villages that we arrive at when we first come here – are you able to find them?” Ling Chen asked with a smile after muttering to himself. After conquering the 3 Moon Goddesses, the problem that he had been fretting about could be easily solved... the only way to return to Novice Village 49554 was for the Moon Goddesses to send him back. This was impossible before, but now, it was simpler than simple.

“Those places were created by our ancestors, and each of them still has our Moon God Clan’s aura; it is quite simple to find their locations. Where do you want to go?” White Snow said softly, her gaze no longer filled with hostility but gentleness and infatuation.

Hearing White Snow say this, the last trace of worry in Ling Chen’s mind disappeared. “In that case, can you send me to Novice Village 49554?”

Blue Heart immediately replied, “Of course we can; going there will be incredibly simple. But why do you want to go there? Only the weakest creatures exist there, and there’s nothing fun there.”

“I want to go there to find something. If you can do it, just send me there,” Ling Chen said. Of course, doing this as soon as possible would be for the best.

White Snow lightly nodded. “Alright, since that’s what you want, we definitely won’t refuse. In that case, do you want us to come with you? That way we’ll be able to protect you.”

“No.” Ling Chen shook his head. “Going by myself will be enough. In this world, apart from you 3 working together, there’s essentially nothing that can threaten me anymore. That’s right... you said before that the Lunar Scourge’s Sun God Orb was destroyed by your ancestors using a special method; is that true?”

White Snow and Purple Dress looked at each other, and Purple

Dress expressionlessly replied, “It’s true, though we didn’t see it ourselves. However, since this was what our ancestors told us, it should be true.”

Ling Chen’s chest lightly heaved... according to what Qi Yue had said, reviving a person required 4 key ingredients. If he had the other 3 ingredients, the Lunar Scourge with only 12 God Orbs would be sufficient to revive someone. However, that person would lose all of their memories and 3 out of their 5 senses. If he was missing a Saint Orb, the effects would not be as bad, but the revived person would still lose one third of their memories and one of their senses.

If the Sun God Orb really had been destroyed, then the Lunar Scourge would never be complete, and even if he had all of the other ingredients and the legend about resurrection was really true, Shui Ruo would still be missing some of her memories and would lose one of her senses. If Shui Ruo was missing some memories, her life would not be complete.

“Okay, send me to Novice Village 49554 then,” Ling Chen said lightly.

“Alright.” The 3 Moon Goddesses simultaneously closed their eyes and locked onto Novice Village 49554 in a few moments. As they moved their hands, a holy energy covered Ling Chen before disappearing along with him.

“Ding... you have arrived at Novice Village 49554.”

It was an ancient-looking village and had only a few buildings. The roofs were all made from yellowed bricks, and the main bodies of the houses were made from wood, looking quite old. The air was quite fresh and clear, and there was not a single trace of pollution. If one raised their head, they would be able to see a blue sky with scattered clouds, as well as a few birds happily flying over now and then.

The system announcement in Ling Chen’s ears announced that

he had returned to Novice Village 49554. Ling Chen opened his eyes, looked around the familiar village, and then deeply breathed in the fresh air here. As a region separated from the rest of the continents, the air here was incredibly fresh, and this place was a heaven-like existence.

The only difference was that the once-bustling village that had been filled with players was now exceptionally quiet. Looking around, apart from a few buildings and a few NPCs, there was not a single player. This didn't mean that there were no new players, but that the number of new players entering the Novice Villages had decreased as less and less new players entered the Mystic Moon world. Currently, China's players would only be placed in the first 5000 Novice Villages, and from half a year ago, no new players had been sent to Novice Village 49554.

The clue that Su'Er had given him was only '49554', and it most likely referred to this Novice Village. Even though it was only a Novice Village, it was fairly large, and even with Xiao Hui's help, finding an orb in such a large area would take quite some time.

Ling Chen decided to first ask the villagers for any clues... after making up his mind, Ling Chen walked forwards, and not too long after, an elderly but well-built man appeared in his vision. Ling Chen immediately recognised him and walked over.

"Hello, Village Chief, long time no see," Ling Chen greeted the Village Chief as he took off his Evil God's Mask. Even though he had not seen him for a year, he was the first player in the entire world who had left the Novice Village, so the Village Chief most likely had an impression of him and might still remember him.

"Hello, young man... oh! Oh?" After blankly replying, the Village Chief suddenly came to his senses and stared at Ling Chen. From 6 months ago, new players had stopped being sent to Novice Village 49554, and Ling Chen was evidently not someone from the village. As such, the Village Chief was quite shocked, and he asked in surprise, "May I ask who you are? Could you be an adventurer

from another world? Wait... young man, why do you seem so familiar? Have we met before?”

“That’s right, we’ve met before. It was about a year ago,” Ling Chen said as he smiled.

“A year ago? Oh... ah! That’s right! You’re the first adventurer to walk out of a Novice Village!” The Village Chief quickly remembered and said excitedly, “That’s right, it’s you. I remember you’re called... called... Ling Tian! That’s right, Ling Tian!”

“It’s my honour that Village Chief still remembers me after such a long time,” Ling Chen said as he smiled.

The Village Chief laughed loudly, “How could I not remember you? The first adventurer to walk out of a Novice Village was actually from my Novice Village; I was quite proud about that for a long time.” Following this, a confused look appeared on his face. “I remember that it should be impossible for otherworlders to come back here after they leave for another continent, so how did you come back?”

“Haha, I’m here to find something.” Ling Chen did not give a direct answer, and he took off the Moon God Orb from the Lunar Scourge, showing it to the Village Chief. “Village Chief, have you seen something that looks similar to this orb in the village? I’ve come back to look for this; it’s very important to me.”

“Oh, what a pretty orb; its light has a mysteriousness that’s hard to describe,” the Village Chief exclaimed after looking at it for a while before shaking his head. “But it’s a pity that I’ve never seen a similar orb before. If I’ve seen one before, I definitely would have some impression of it.”

“So it’s like that...” Ling Chen nodded in slight disappointment and put the Moon God Orb away. Since the Village Chief said that he had not seen it, it was most likely not in the village itself but perhaps in the wilderness region outside of it. However, if it was in the wilderness, finding it would be quite troublesome. Ling Chen

did not know just how big this Novice Village was because when he had left, he had not explored the entire region.

“Thanks for your time, Village Chief, I think the thing I’m looking for might be in the wilderness.”

“Oh!” The Village Chief nodded. “For you to come back and look for it, it must be very important to you. May the Moon Goddesses bless you so that you find it soon. I’ll also have a look around for you.”

“Alright, thank you Village Chief.” Ling Chen thanked the Village Chief before preparing to re-socket the Moon God Orb into the Lunar Scourge.

At this moment, at the northeast of the Novice Village, the door of an incredibly tattered grass hut was opened as an old man wearing ragged clothing stiffly walked out, giving off a putrid smell. Suddenly, his body paused and he quickly looked around, his dirty hair covering his face as his turbid eyes sharply fell on Ling Chen’s body, the Moon God Orb, and the Lunar Scourge.

In that moment, his body started to tremble, and he madly cried out and stumbled before rushing at Ling Chen...

Chapter 773: Night Emperor

The strange old man's sudden yell gave the Village Chief a big fright, and seeing him rush over, the Village Chief blocked his path to Ling Chen and hurriedly said, "This person's very dangerous; hurry and leave this place."

Back then, when Ling Chen was about to leave the Novice Village, he had seen a very similar scene. This old man had yelled strangely while charging at him, and back then, he had felt quite afraid because he had casually slapped another player for an astronomical amount of damage... and that had been an incredibly simple attack without using any weapons or skills. That was why the Village Chief had quickly sent him away back then.

However, the current Ling Chen was no longer afraid of anything in the Mystic Moon world.

When the crazy old man's yell sounded out, Ling Chen focused his attention on the old man and did not move despite the Village Chief yelling at him to get away. This was because he noticed that as the old man was rushing over, his eyes were staring at the Moon God Orb and the Lunar Scourge!

Come to think of it, last time, when he had charged over, Ling Chen had been showing the Village Chief the Lunar Scourge and asking him if he had seen it before. Could it be... that this crazy old man recognised the Lunar Scourge?

If he did recognise the Lunar Scourge, he had to have lived for over 10,000 years. After all, even the knowledgeable Village Chief knew nothing about the Lunar Scourge, so did this crazy old man know about it? If that was the case, why would he react in such an exaggerated way?

The crazy old man brought with him a putrid smell. Even though he was incredibly old, he moved like a flash of lightning, moving past the Village Chief in an instant and springing towards Ling

Chen. His hands, which were as dry as tree bark, grabbed onto Ling Chen's right foot and ankle, and it was as if he was afraid of Ling Chen running away. He raised his incredibly dirty face, his eyes staring fixedly at Ling Chen's right wrist...

“Lunar Scourge... Lunar Scourge... Lunar... Scourge... Yue... my daughter... my daughter...”

The old man's words caused Ling Chen to feel quite shocked... he had evidently called out the name 'Lunar Scourge'! This meant that he knew the Lunar Scourge and that he... had lived for over 10,000 years!!

Even people like the War God Chi Xuan Wu Hen and Xiao Feng Chen, peak existences among humans, had only lived for 2,000 to 3,000 years, and that was also the lifespan for Moon God Representatives. That range was already the limit for humans. Moon Goddesses also counted as humans, so from that aspect, the Moon Goddesses were the only humans that could live for over 10,000 years. What's more, they possessed Saint Destroyer grade power or even surpassed that, but this old man... was he really more than 10,000 years old?

“This... This... hurry up and let go of this young man; he's our village's guest.” The crazy old man's actions caused the Village Chief to feel at a loss as to what to do, and he hurriedly grabbed at the old man's arms, trying to drag him away from Ling Chen. However, he was much weaker than the crazy old man, and even though he used all of his strength, he couldn't make his hands budge even an inch.

“Wait, Village Chief.” Ling Chen shook his head and stretched out his hand, motioning to the Village Chief. “I don't think he has any ill intent by grabbing onto me; maybe he even has something important to say to me.”

As Ling Chen spoke, he suddenly felt a strange sensation from his right wrist. As he looked over, he saw that the Lunar Scourge's 13

Orbs were letting out a faint silver light.

Ling Chen instantly felt dumbfounded... because the Lunar Scourge's Orbs were reacting, this meant that there was a Lunar Scourge Orb nearby!!

The only thing that had come close to him was this crazy old man who was grabbing onto him. Could it be... that this crazy old man had an orb on him?

Ling Chen suddenly remembered that Qi Yue had suddenly said that she had detected a Saint Orb as they were being sent from the Novice Village to Azure Dragon City. When she said that, this crazy old man had been leaping towards him. After that, he had been transported from the Novice Village to Azure Dragon City.

“You recognise the Lunar Scourge?” Ling Chen brought his right wrist closer to this crazy old man, displaying the Lunar Scourge to him fully. Immediately, the old man madly nodded, grabbing onto his right wrist with a steel-like grip as he muttered, “Lunar Scourge... Lunar Scourge... my daughter... my daughter... can you hear my voice... oh, my daughter...”

“This... This... What's going on? I've never seen him like this before,” The Village Chief said in confusion.

“Your daughter?” Ling Chen asked in surprise.

“My daughter... she's inside... oh, my daughter... I've searched for you for 10,000 years... 10,000 years...” Tears flowed down the crazy old man's face as his grip on Ling Chen's wrist tightened, making Ling Chen feel as if his wrist was going to snap.

His daughter... was inside the Lunar Scourge? 10,000 years... could it be... Qi Yue?

This guess caused Ling Chen's heart rate to increase. He frowned and hesitantly asked, “What's your daughter's name? Why would she be... in here?”

“She's called Yue... my Yue'Er... she doesn't have a body

anymore... her soul was devoured and locked in here... these years, I've continuously searched for her... I've finally found... my daughter... 10,000 years, a whole 10,000 years..."

Yue...

Qi Yue...

Ling Chen's heart started to tremble. When he had first met Qi Yue, she had told him that she had no body, that she was only a soul that was attached to the Lunar Scourge, and that her name was 'Yue'. In that case, she was definitely this crazy old man's daughter! This crazy old man was Qi Yue's father!!

This was a shocking conclusion that Ling Chen had never expected.

Since this old man was most likely Qi Yue's father, Ling Chen naturally couldn't act violently or rudely towards him. He grabbed the old man's arms and said slowly, "Elderly one, please get up... I won't run away; at the very least, let's talk somewhere else. The Lunar Scourge has been on me for the past year, so I'll try to answer any questions you have. Perhaps your daughter is the person I know."

The crazy old man's body quivered and stared at Ling Chen for a while before shakily getting up and following Ling Chen. The Village Chief stared at them as they left, his gaze filled with confusion.

By the time Ling Chen stopped walking, they had reached a quiet area with no one else around. The old man, who had remained a few steps behind him, rushed up and his body trembled as he emotionally cried out, "My daughter... is my daughter in the Lunar Scourge? Have you met her already? Yes... she has to be in there... as long as the Lunar Scourge doesn't disappear, she won't disappear... has she been well over the years? Has... Has she suffered a lot... does she... hate me..."

“Elderly one, don’t get too emotional,” Ling Chen said calmly as he asked, “Is your daughter’s name ‘Qi Yue’?”

“Qi... Yue?” Hearing this name, the old man paused, then tears started flow down his face again. “Qi... Yue... Qi Yue... that’s right, staying for 10,000 years in that dark place without seeing the sun, who can imagine that sort of bleak pain, and who could stand it... the only thing she’s felt over these years is bleak pain...that’s why she’s called Qi Yue... perhaps she hates her useless father for not being able to save her... hates me so much that she doesn’t want to be called ‘Ye Yue’ but ‘Qi Yue’... my poor daughter, it’s my fault...”
[TLN: The ‘Qi’ in Qi Yue’s name means ‘bleak’ or ‘mournful’]

The old man once again started to weep, while Ling Chen felt quite startled. Ye Yue? His daughter was called Ye Yue... was this Qi Yue’s name in the past? Did Qi Yue rename herself to that because of the bleak and mournful pain she had felt?

Wait!!

Ye Yue... Ye?!

In the Forgotten Continent’s Chronicles, the only family with the surname ‘Ye’ was... was...

Ling Chen quickly summoned Xiao Hui behind him and used Xiao Hui’s Eye of the Holy Spirit to see the crazy old man’s information.

[Ye Wu Ya]: Type: Night Emperor, Grade: Saint Destroyer, HP: 32,000,000,000. A male Moon God birthed by the previous generation’s Moon Goddess, and his power was weaker than the female Moon Goddesses. However, he had an unruly and free personality, and he wished for living creatures to be equal instead of there being a hierarchy. He advocated for powerful creatures to be able to join the Moon God Clan.

Because his ideologies differed too much from the Moon God Clan’s ideologies, he split away from them and wandered by himself. Afterwards, he established the Xiao Yao Sect. Later, his

daughter Ye Yue was devoured by the Lunar Scourge, which greatly needed an item soul. When he finally found a way to save her, the Moon God Clan had already destroyed the Lunar Scourge and sealed its main body into a remote place. He flew into a fit of rage, becoming enemies with the Moon God Clan, and he changed the Xiao Yao Sect's name into something that went against the Moon God Clan's name, the 'Night Demon Clan', becoming the Night Emperor. [TLN: 'Xiao Yao' means free and unfettered]

In order to save his daughter, Ye Wu Ya attacked the Moon God Clan many times, hoping to force the Moon God Clan to tell him the location of the Lunar Scourge. However, the Night Demon Clan's overall strength was far below the Moon God Clan's, and after many battles, it was annihilated by the Moon God Clan. Afterwards, Ye Wu Ya heard that the Lunar Scourge was sealed in a remote place, and he spent thousands of years searching for it fruitlessly. Finally, he fell into despair and remained in Novice Village 49554, living crazily and aimlessly. [TLN: 'Ye' means Night]

Passive Abilities: (Omitted...); Attack Skills: (Omitted...); Weaknesses: (Omitted...)

Even though Ling Chen was somewhat prepared, when the information from Xiao Hui's Eye of the Holy Spirit appeared in his mind, his jaw still dropped, almost spitting out a mouthful of saliva.

This incredibly dirty, smelly, and crazy old man, who looked worse than a beggar, was that mysterious Night Demon Clan's... Night Emperor!! A Saint Destroyer grade peak existence!

Chapter 774: Star God Orb

“You’re the Night Emperor!” Ling Chen said as he stared at the old man in shock.

“Night Emperor?” This name, which the old man had not heard in many millennia, did not evoke any intense emotions from him, and it only caused him to bitterly laugh, “What Night Emperor... the Night Demon Clan disbanded long ago, so how can there still be a Night Emperor... I’m just a trash who can’t do anything, a trash...”

Ling Chen’s expression rapidly changed. From the information he had received from Xiao Hui, he not only knew who this old man was, but he had also found out about the origins of the Night Demon Clan and the dreary and bitter life that the Night Emperor had led. It turned out that the Night Demon Clan had been part of the Moon God Clan, but its original name had been the ‘Xiao Yao Sect’ and originally had no enmity with the Moon God Clan. However, the Lunar Scourge resurfaced and somehow devoured the Night Emperor’s daughter, turning her into the Lunar Scourge’s item soul. From that timeline, it seemed that this happened right before the Shura’s Devastation.

After the Shura’s Devastation ended, the Lunar Scourge fell into the 3 Moon Goddesses’ hands. However, the Night Emperor’s daughter was within the Lunar Scourge, so he couldn’t allow the 3 Moon Goddesses to destroy the Lunar Scourge no matter what. He desperately looked for a way to save his daughter from the Lunar Scourge, but the 3 Moon Goddesses evidently weren’t very patient, and when the Night Emperor finally found a way to save her, the 3 Moon Goddesses had split the Lunar Scourge and sealed its main body into a remote place.

After finding out about this, the Night Emperor became enemies with the Moon God Clan, leading to the birth of the Night Demon Clan. However, the Night Demon Clan could not defeat the Moon

God Clan, and after suffering repeated defeats, the Heaven's Secrets Sect, Feng Chen Sect, and Earth Fiend Sect left the Night Demon Clan, and the Night Emperor vanished without a trace... for the past thousands of years, he had travelled all over the Mystic Moon world, trying to find the Lunar Scourge.

It was just that he had never imagined that Novice Village 49554, where he had remained after falling into despair, was exactly where the Lunar Scourge's main body had been sealed! Qi Yue had said that she had been in the Lunar Scourge for over 10,000 years, which was why she knew about many things from over 10,000 years ago.

In that case, she was definitely the person who had been devoured by the Lunar Scourge, the Night Emperor's daughter! It was just that with how Ye Wu Ya currently looked, even if he stood in front of Qi Yue, she definitely wouldn't be able to recognise him, and this was even more so given that they had been separated for 10,000 years.

Ling Chen comforted him and said, "Night Emperor, you shouldn't be so pessimistic. If your daughter is the item soul sealed inside the Lunar Scourge, I've already met her. She... is doing well."

Ye Wu Ya looked incredibly emotional, and he stumbled forwards and grasped Ling Chen's shoulders as he said, "I-Is that true? You've really met my daughter? Where is she? Right... Right... She's inside the Lunar Scourge. Can... Can you ask her to come out? I want to see her..."

As he spoke, Ye Wu Ya's voice started to tremble. After looking at him, Ling Chen inwardly sighed. This was the Night Emperor – he was a man with real emotions and was a truly great father. For his daughter, he had become enemies with the Moon God Clan and had searched for his daughter for thousands of years. For his daughter, he had fallen to such a state. He had incredible power and status and could do as he wished in the world, but he had given

up all of this for his daughter. Even after a whole 10,000 years, he had not forgotten about his role as a father.

Even though he was in an extremely sorry state, Ling Chen could not help but admire him. He thought for a moment before saying, “Don’t worry, she’s definitely doing much better than you think. However, she’s not in the Lunar Scourge right now because of some reason. You could say she already has an independent body.”

“She’s not in the Lunar Scourge? She has an independent body... is this... true? Where is she now? I want to see her; I’ve wanted to see her for the past 10,000 years!”

Ling Chen fell silent for a moment and said, “Wait here, I’ll bring her over. It won’t take too long; it’ll be 5 minutes at most.”

“Alright! I’ve already waited 10,000 years, waiting another few minutes is nothing.” Ye Wu Ya emotionally nodded.

Ling Chen nodded and logged off, disappearing from before Ye Wu Ya.

After returning to the real world, Ling Chen immediately headed to Qi Yue’s room and opened the door, seeing Qi Yue pleasantly sleeping on her bed. Her sleeping position was incredibly seductive: he had no idea if it was on purpose or not, but her low-cut top was hanging incredibly low, revealing 2 large and white globes, creating a massive valley as she lay on her side.

The instant Ling Chen walked into the room and saw Qi Yue, he felt his blood rush up, but he pressed down on his blood and forced his mind to think about other things. He walked over to the bed and woke her up, “Qi Yue, come with me into the game; there’s something incredibly important.”

“Wu...” Qi Yue, who had been woken up, lazily opened her hazy eyes and said in a soft voice, “Doesn’t little master know that all beauties need their beauty sleep...” Following this, Qi Yue gave a long yawn before lazily closing her eyes again.

Ling Chen got straight to the point. “Was your name Ye Yue before? Is your father called Ye Wu Ya?”

Qi Yue’s closed eyes instantly flew open, her sleepiness disappearing. She stared at Ling Chen for a while before asking, “You met him?”

Qi Yue’s reaction dispelled any doubts that Ling Chen had. He nodded. “That’s right! I met the Night Emperor Ye Wu Ya, and I was talking to him just then. His greatest wish is to meet his daughter, who had been sealed in the Lunar Scourge. You were sealed in the Lunar Scourge 10,000 years ago, and you’re evidently his daughter, Ye Yue... after being separated for so many years, I’m sure you want to see him as well, right? So come with me into the Mystic Moon world; he’s waiting for you there. You can be reunited with your father right now.”

Hearing Ling Chen’s words, a complicated light flashed in Qi Yue’s eyes. However, there was no happiness, excitement, or even sadness in her eyes. Following this, she slowly shook her head. “Little master, I won’t come with you because I don’t want to meet him.”

“Why?” Ling Chen was quite surprised towards Qi Yue’s reply, and he asked in confusion, “He’s your own father, and after being separated for 10,000 years, don’t you want to see him?”

Qi Yue gave a faint sigh but did not say anything. Ling Chen had no idea what she was thinking.

“Perhaps you hate him for not being able to save you back then, making you suffer a bleak and miserable pain... the darkness and solitude in the Lunar Sky Hell nearly drove me mad, while what you experienced was 10,000 years of darkness and solitude. You must have suffered indescribable pain, so you must have hated your father, the Moon God Clan, or even the entire world. Perhaps you were right in doing so. However, he’s your own father, and even though he was one of the successors of the Moon God Clan, he

became enemies with them for you, and he walked across the entire Mystic Moon world for 10,000 years to find you. Even now, he hasn't given up on finding you. Back then, it wasn't his fault, and even if it was, he has done so much for you and has held on for 10,000 years. There's really no reason for you not to forgive him."

"No, it's not that I don't forgive him." Qi Yue slowly shook her head and closed her eyes, "It's just that the Ye Yue from 10,000 years ago was gentle and mild and was extremely close with her father, but it has been a whole 10,000 years. During those 10,000 years of darkness and isolation, any creature's personality would be twisted. The current Qi Yue is not the Ye Yue from back then. Her personality, nature, and mental state are completely different, and even her feelings towards her father have become indifferent to the point that she does not feel any joy or expectation after hearing about him. This kind of me standing in front of him won't make him feel happy at all, and it will instead make him feel like he's facing a stranger... to give up everything and search the world for 10,000 years to find out that his daughter is like a stranger; that would be an incredibly cruel shock, right?"

Ling Chen: "....."

A faint conflicted look appeared in Qi Yue's eyes but she continued to speak. "Even though I can't see him right now, tell him to wait another 3 years because I need 3 years to reshape my body. My current body can only appear in this world, so I cannot appear in the Mystic Moon world. Perhaps in 3 years I'll know how to face him."

Ling Chen frowned – he couldn't quite understand Qi Yue's words, and the final reason seemed incredibly forced and was more like an excuse not to see the Night Emperor than a real reason. However, Ling Chen had never been able to change Qi Yue's mind, and this matter was unrelated to him, so he did not try to convince her. As such, he nodded and returned to his own room.

After Ling Chen left, Qi Yue did not seem sleepy at all anymore.

She sat up from the bed, fixed up her clothes that could barely contain her breasts, and stared outside the window for a while before muttering to herself, “It’s better this way... I hope you won’t blame me...”

.....

Ling Chen returned to the game and reappeared before Ye Wu Ya. Facing his eyes full of hope, Ling Chen could only shake his head. “Apologies, I wasn’t able to bring her because she said... she can’t see you right now.”

“Can’t see me... Can’t see me?” Ye Wu Ya felt incredibly surprised, and his eyes full of hope seemed as if they had been extinguished by a bucket of cold water. He stumbled backwards and said in disappointment, “Why can’t she see me... does she still hate me... does she hate me for not being able to save her back then, making her suffer so much...”

“No.” Ling Chen shook his head. “It’s not that she doesn’t want to see you. It’s just that... she said that her nature had greatly changed after 10,000 years and that she’s afraid that you’ll see her as a stranger. At the same time, she doesn’t have a body, so she’s afraid that you’ll feel sad when seeing her... so she hopes that you can wait for her for 3 years. In 3 years, she’ll have a new body and will be able to meet with you.”

Ling Chen’s words caused some light to reappear in Ye Wu Ya’s eyes, and he said dispiritedly, “Is that... what she said? 3 years... 3 years, alright, I’ve already looked for her for 10,000 years; how could I not wait for 3 years? As long as she’s willing to see me, let alone 3 years, I’d be willing to wait 300 years if not 3,000 years.”

Ling Chen nodded. “Don’t worry, after these 10,000 years, her nature has greatly changed, but since she said 3 years, she won’t go back on her word. However, you should also use these 3 years to regain your bearing as the Night Emperor; I’m sure you don’t want your daughter to see yourself like this when you meet, right?”

Ye Wu Ya looked down at himself and bitterly laughed, “That’s right, that’s right... young man, your eyes are incredibly deep, but I can see clarity and sincerity in them. I trust everything you’ve said. All in all, thank you. Even though I don’t know how you obtained the Lunar Scourge and became its master, that’s not what I care about. I know that you saved my daughter and that you’ve given me a chance to be reunited with my daughter, so I hope that I’ll be able to repay you in the future.”

As he spoke, he slowly stretched out a withered right hand. Within it was an orb with a star engraved on it that had the same size and shape as the Moon God Orb, and it even gave off the same light. “Young man, as someone who inherited the Moon God Clan’s power, I know that returning to this sort of place for anyone who isn’t from the Moon God Clan is incredibly difficult. You braved many dangers and difficulties in coming back, and I’m sure you came for this... since you have the Lunar Scourge, this should belong to you, so I now return it to its proper master. What sort of disasters the Lunar Scourge will bring now that it has resurfaced has nothing to do with me; I just hope that returning the Star God Orb to the Lunar Scourge will help my daughter recreate her body soon.”

Chapter 775: A Different Kind Of Shura

Ling Chen stretched out his hand and received the Star God Orb from Ye Wu Ya. Now, he had retrieved 2 out of the 3 Saint Orbs, and he was now missing the final Sun God Orb to complete the Lunar Scourge.

Ling Chen did not immediately look at the Star God Orb's stats; he hesitated before asking with a serious expression, "Night Emperor, the Lunar Scourge is something that the Moon God Clan must destroy, and your bloodline and power are from the Moon God Clan – this is something you can't change even if you're the Night Emperor. Moreover, you experienced the Shura's Devastation 10,000 years ago, and your daughter was dragged into that and separated from you for 10,000 years... so shouldn't you hate and fear the Lunar Scourge? Why would you give me this Star God Orb? Back then, the Lunar Scourge only had the 12 God Orbs, but it still caused the Shura's Devastation. Now that you've given me the Star God Orb, things might turn out even worse than 10,000 years ago."

"Haha..." Hearing Ling Chen's words, Ye Wu Ya unexpectedly calmly laughed. Perhaps the '3 years' from Qi Yue had given him new hope. His gaze was no longer turbid, and even his hunched back was now straightened, nor were there any signs of madness about him... as the Night Emperor, how could he really have gone mad? Over these years, he had waded in despair and self-blame, using his madness to numb himself. He said calmly, "Since you've obtained the Lunar Scourge, you naturally know about the Shura's Devastation 10,000 years ago. That was indeed a terrifying disaster, but everyone back then only saw the disaster and not the effects on the world afterwards... I'm sure that even though the Shura's mind was filled with killing intent, even if the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor's mind was clear, he still would have done the same things."

Ling Chen felt incredibly startled... he immediately remembered the things that the Shura's remnant soul had said to him. He said he did not regret becoming a Shura or massacring all of those people...

At that time, the Shura's remnant soul had been completely conscious, but it had not regretted it... back then, Ling Chen could not understand why the Shura had said that he did not regret it. This was because the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor was a righteous and true expert, so why did he do such a damning thing and resolutely say that he did not regret it...

Ye Wu Ya raised his face to the sky and said sentimentally, "That's right, he massacred 10% of all the living creatures in the Forgotten Continent. Back then, I also felt fear and hatred towards him... but as time went on, I realised that the Shura from back then was not just massacring but also cleansing... despite destroying 10% of the creatures in the Forgotten Continent, he brought thousands of years of peace! No one has ever done such a thing before. The fear and hatred I felt towards the Shura gradually became respect and admiration."

"This... I can't understand this at all," Ling Chen said with a confused expression. He massacred 10% of the living creatures in the Forgotten Continent but brought thousands of years of peace? What sort of logic with that?

"Without having experienced that era, you wouldn't understand," Ye Wu Ya said calmly. "Do you know what the Forgotten Continent was like 10,000 years ago? Back then, demons terrorised the Forgotten Continent and devils were everywhere. The warring clans continuously fought and destroyed each other because of their ambitions, and the peace-loving clans went extinct one by one. Some clans had no choice but to hide away. This was especially so for the human world: it was filled with utter chaos, and battles erupted every day all over the place... the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor's beloved wife and son died amidst all of the

chaotic fighting brought about by humans.”

Ling Chen: “!!!!!!”

“The Chi Xuan Sword Emperor loved his family above all else, and the deaths of his wife and son made him feel pain to the point that he wanted to die. Back then, the Forgotten Continent still had legends that the Lunar Scourge could create Shuras. As such, after countless hardships and much suffering, he finally found the sealed Lunar Scourge and asked to become the Lunar Scourge’s puppet. He collected 12 God Orbs and devoured my daughter to allow the Lunar Scourge to have the ability to create a Shura... finally, the Shura was born and started a massacre... no! A cleansing process.

“Now that I think about it, when he started searching for the Lunar Scourge, he had already known his fate. He must have known that he would soon be killed by the Moon God Clan after becoming a Shura. However, this was what he wanted because his goal was not to kill the masses but to accept his death after cleansing the land... afterwards, he bore the heaven’s wrath and destroyed 10% of the Forgotten Continent’s creatures before dying.

“After that, the Demon Beast Clan, which had been in hiding, finally moved out to make chaos, and it was destroyed by the Moon God Clan and the Fairy Clan... if it wasn’t for the Shura’s Devastation, who knows how long the Demon Beast Clan would have hid for. If they returned after fully gathering their strength, the consequences would have been unimaginable.

“After the Shura’s Devastation, the Forgotten Continent, which had been washed with blood, became peaceful for many years. In order to rebuild their destroyed homes, countless clans had to work together, and wars and conflict stopped erupting. The human world was united by an Emperor, and it also became peaceful and stable with wars only erupting once every hundreds of years. After thousands of years, the Forgotten Continent is still relatively peaceful, and the clans interact harmoniously. The

largest human clan was also managed by the Emperors to be quite harmonious. I'm sure that the current Forgotten Continent is still just as peaceful and tranquil.

“If it wasn't for the Shura back then bathing the world in blood, the current Forgotten Continent would not exist. Even though bathing the world in blood was quite cruel and ruthless, I found that it was the most effective method, if not the only effective method. The Shura indeed destroyed countless lives, but it's not an exaggeration to say that he saved the entire Forgotten Continent. To the Shura from back then, the Chi Xuan Sword Emperor, I feel only admiration and respect. This is because he took upon himself thousands of years of cursing and lost his own life to purchase all of this. No hero in the Forgotten Continent can compare to him.”

Ling Chen felt quite dumbfounded. In the 1 year that he had been in the Mystic Moon for, he had heard many things about the Shura. However, he had only heard about a powerful, merciless, cruel, and evil creature. The Shura that the Night Emperor talked about was a different kind of Shura, a hero who had saved the Forgotten Continent.

“Is that why you're willing to give the Star God Orb to me?” Ling Chen asked in surprise.

“That's not the main reason,” Ye Wu Ya said lightly. “The main reason is because of my daughter, and also...” He gave Ling Chen a deep look as he said, “Back then, I fought with the Shura, and I barely escaped with my life. Even after 10,000 years, I still remember his powerful aura, which I also feel on you. You must have obtained the Shura's power from the Lunar Scourge, right?”

“Yes...” Ling Chen nodded, not denying it.

Ye Wu Ya said slowly, “Even the legends have never mentioned anyone obtaining the Shura's power without losing themselves. This is evidence that your mental energy is incomparably powerful to the point that you don't have to pay a price with your mind and

soul to control the Lunar Scourge and the Shura's power. Moreover, you're not an evil person, and you might even be a kind person. At the very least, you won't use this power for evil, and you might use this power to possibly help this continent. As such, so what if this power falls into your hands?"

Ling Chen gave a slight smile. "No less expected from the Night Emperor to have such breadth of mind and wisdom."

"Hahaha," The Night Emperor laughed loudly. Perhaps it was because he hadn't laughed in such a long time that his laugh seemed somewhat stiff. He patted Ling Chen's shoulder. "Now that you've obtained the Star God Orb, you're probably going to return to the Forgotten Continent, right? In that case, I'll come with you. Even though I wasn't able to see Yue'Er, I saw that the Lunar Scourge has returned and has an invincible master whose strength even I can't see through. As such, I'm able to feel at ease. Moreover, if I wait 3 years, I'll be able to fulfil my greatest wish, so I can't keep wasting away here. I should return to the Forgotten Continent and see how the Forgotten Continent's condition is... and perhaps I should go to see my old acquaintances."

"Alright." Ling Chen nodded before remembering something and then shaking his head. "But I have some things that I need to do here, so I won't be able to return with you."

"That's fine." The Night Emperor didn't mind and nodded. "I'm sure you'll be able to return to the Forgotten Continent even without my help. Go and do what you need, I'll be returning first."

"Don't worry, you won't be disappointed in 3 years."

"Hahaha, let's meet again in 3 years." As the Night Emperor spoke, his body vanished in a glow of white light. He possessed Moon God power, so he could naturally return to the Forgotten Continent easily. Even though he had not met his daughter, who he had desperately searched for, he at least knew that she was safe, so he had hope. As such, he was able to set his mind at ease.

After the Night Emperor left, Ling Chen looked at the Star God Orb's stats:

Star God Orb: Type: Energy Orb, Grade: Super Saint Destroyer, Attributes: None, Equipment Requirements: Can only be socketed in the Lunar Scourge. Effects: MP+50,000,000 and can summon and put away the [Lunar Scourge Divine Armour] at will.

The Star God Orb's stats caused Ling Chen to marvel in awe. As expected from a Saint Orb of the same grade as the Moon God Orb, its effects were just as monstrous as the Moon God Orb's. The Moon God Orb gave him 50,000,000 HP, while the Star God Orb gave him 50,000,000 MP. The Moon God Orb allowed him to summon the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, while the Star God Orb allowed him to summon the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour!

Spears were for attacking, while armour was for defending. With how powerful the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear was, the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour would have incredibly heaven-defying defensive abilities!

Ling Chen instantly felt quite excited and hurriedly socketed the Star God Orb into the Lunar Scourge.

“Ding... the [Star God Orb] has been successfully socketed. Your basic MP+50,000,000, and you can summon the [Lunar Scourge Divine Armour] at will.”

Ling Chen looked at his current MP: 200,472,880!

This was a MP value that could not appear on a player, and it was an astronomical figure that completely broke the limits of the player world! After all, it was much harder to raise one's MP than HP, and this was especially so for creatures that mainly had physical capabilities – their MP was usually less than 10% of their HP or even lower. Even human Mage Gods would not be able to rival Ling Chen's current MP.

“Ding... the Lunar Scourge's unique lunar skill [Moon Disaster]

has been unlocked.”

“Ding... all 12 God Orbs and a Saint Orb have been socketed into the Lunar Scourge. Lunar scourge’s unique lunar skill [Half Moon] has been upgraded into [Waxing Moon].”

Chapter 776: Lunar Scourge Divine Armour

All of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs flashed as if they were celebrating the return of the fourteenth orb.

[Waxing Moon]: Lunar Scourge exclusive lunar soul skill. When activated, the Lunar Scourge's lunar energy forms a waxing moon in the sky, letting out mysterious moonlight. Can be activated at any time and cancelled at any time. Can be cast for a maximum of 40 minutes per day. No MP cost.

The return of the Star God Orb caused the [Half Moon] to be upgraded into [Waxing Moon]. With the [Waxing Moon], all of the skills that required [Moon] became much more powerful, once again raising Ling Chen's overall strength.

[Moon Disaster]: Lunar Scourge exclusive lunar skill. Using the moon's light to release a light of disaster and misfortune, the merciless light sending all targets into an abyss of disaster.

Effects: Super long-range impairing skill that does not deal damage. All targets who are covered by the moonlight will have their levels permanently reduced by 30 levels, all of their skills will be reduced by 3 levels, and their Luck will be permanently decreased by 20 points. Effects can be stacked. The maximum range is determined by the form of the [Moon]. Cannot be used without [Moon], [New Moon], [Crescent Moon]. Maximum range is 3,000 metres with [Half Moon], 10,000 metres with [Waxing Moon], 30,000 metres with [Full Moon], and 600,000,000 metres with [Broken Moon]. Costs 5 MP, cooldown time: 1 hour.

(When the target's Luck is negative, they will be plagued with misfortune. When the target's Luck falls below -10, they will never deal a Critical Hit, and many of their attacks will be Misses. It will also be likely for Critical Hits to be dealt against them, fall over while walking, choke when drinking water, fall into pits while playing on their phones... When one's Luck falls below -20, they

may be struck by lightning, etc...)

As a powerful lunar skill after retrieving 2 Saint Orbs, this [Moon Disaster]'s effects gave Ling Chen a big fright. It was the first time that Ling Chen had seen a skill that could directly decrease his targets' level, skill levels, and Luck. What's more, the decreases were simply crippling, and the range was even more monstrous. What was the most terrifying was that the skill's effects could stack against a target. After being hit 3 times, their level would fall below at least LV10, and their Luck would be so low that they would be able to die from falling over. This was even crueller than killing a player tens of times every day. To the monsters, spirits, and demons that had taken over 10,000 years to grow powerful, this Moon Disaster alone was enough to make them wet their pants, turning their thousands of years of hard work into nothing.

“Lunar Scourge Divine Armour!” Ling Chen muttered in a low voice.

Ding....

A lightning-like white light flew out from the Lunar Scourge and covered Ling Chen's body. Afterwards, it rapidly took form, and when the light disappeared, Ling Chen's Chilling Crystal Battle Armour had disappeared, replaced by a silver, strange-looking full-body armour that gave off a faint light.

[Lunar Scourge Divine Armour]: Type: Armour of Heaven's Wrath, Grade: Unable to be determined, Equipment Requirements: Master of the [Lunar Scourge]. An armour with an unknown history, made of unknown materials, and has an unknown power core. An item that seems to have been left behind from ancient times, it contains incredible defensive abilities. When receiving attacks, there is a chance that the berserk power within it will be released. It was sealed into the [Star God Orb] for unknown reasons, and only the Lunar Scourge's master can summon it and use it.

Stats: Defence+32,000, Strength+1,000, Constitution+1,000, Agility+1,000, Spirit+1,000, Luck+10, Comprehension+10, Fire, Water, Wind, Lightning, Earth Resistances+50%, Light Resistance+70%, Dark Resistance+20%, cannot be destroyed.

Bonus Skills:

[Star Spirit]: An extreme passive defensive skill unique to the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour. When the wearer's HP is greater than 50%, they will not be instantly killed by any attack, and the wearer will instead be left with 1 HP when suffering fatal attacks; when the wearer's HP is less than 50%, the first 10 fatal attacks suffered in a day will be cancelled out.

[Star Soul]: An extreme passive defensive skill unique to the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour. When taking damage, there is a 50% chance to nullify any Physical damage or Magic damage, and the nullified Physical damage will be converted to the wearer's HP, while the nullified Magic damage will be converted to the wearer's MP.

[Star Fury]: An extreme reflective defensive skill unique to the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour. When receiving any damage, there is a 50% chance to reflect 100% of the damage and a 50% chance to reflect 200% of the damage. The reflected damage ignores distance and cannot be evaded or cancelled out.

[Star Fall]: Unreservedly explodes the powerful energy within the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour, giving the wearer the ultimate defensive and reflective abilities of the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour. When the light of Star Fall flashes, within the next 24 hours, the wearer will be immune to and absorb all damage received, as well as reflect 500% of all damage received. After using this skill, the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour cannot be summoned or used for 30 days. Costs 300,000MP, cooldown time: 3 months.

After seeing the monstrous attack capabilities of the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, Ling Chen witnessed the unbelievably-

terrifying defensive capabilities of the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour. After seeing the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, Ling Chen could not believe that there could be such a destructive spear in the world, and now, looking at the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour, even though he was somewhat prepared, he still couldn't believe his eyes.

This armour could only be described as heaven-defying!!

Nullifying damage, absorbing damage, reflecting damage, giving resistance to being insta-killed, saving his life 10 times in a day... there was also a skill that made him invincible for a whole day and viciously reflected all damage... wearing this incredibly light armour, Ling Chen simply could not think of anything in this world that could threaten his life.

In fact, he might even be able to stand in front of the Underworld God Cannon that even the 3 Moon Goddesses feared without his expression flickering.

With the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, Ling Chen was already an invincible existence, and now that he had the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour, he was invincible to the point that nothing could threaten him in the slightest. Now, even if he had not conquered the 3 Moon Goddesses' minds and was trapped in the Rainbow Glass Barrier again, he would be 100% confident in surviving their combined attacks until the Rainbow Glass Barrier disappeared... putting all else aside, if he activated [Star Fall], the 3 Moon Goddesses would not be able to do anything at all, and even if he took a nap, they would not be able to harm a hair on his head.

“Now there's just the Sun God Orb remaining,” Ling Chen said to himself. He had now witnessed the might of the Moon God Orb and Star God Orb, so as the most powerful of the 3 Saint Orbs, the Sun God Orb definitely wouldn't be weaker than the Moon God Orb and Star God Orb. In fact, it might even be far more powerful... but where was it? Could it really have been destroyed 10,000 years ago like the 3 Moon Goddesses had said?

It had been nearly 2 months since Su'Er had used her powers to find out where the Star God Orb was, so Su'Er would most likely be able to use her Heaven's Secrets power again. What would the results be this time?

After his trip to the Novice Village ended, Ling Chen planned to head to the Underworld Blood Lake to summon the Demon Emperor's soul and then ask Su'Er if she could find any information on the next orb... because if he could obtain the Sun God Orb, then he would come incredibly close to gathering all 4 of the ingredients for revival! Everything he had been working for was for that.

After putting away the extremely eye-catching Lunar Scourge Divine Armour, Ling Chen equipped his Chilling Crystal Battle Armour again and took out a spatial orb, reaching the Wolf's Cliff in an instant.

The appearance of this unfamiliar human caused howls to sound out in the Wolf's Cliff. Following this, a pack of wolves gathered behind Ling Chen and sprang at him, but Ling Chen did not even bother turning around as the Shura Emperor Sword appeared in his hand. He waved it backwards, instantly annihilating all of the wolves on the Wolf's Cliff. Standing on the edge of the cliff and looking down at the darkness below, Ling Chen inwardly sighed... back then, he had fallen from here and had accidentally obtained the Lunar Scourge, changing his fate forever. It was just that he had never thought that falling down from here would affect his entire life back then.

Ling Chen did not think much and fell forwards, plummeting into the abyss... after falling for a long time, Ling Chen felt that he was about to reach the bottom. He flipped over and activated the Feng Chen Technique, slowing down his descent until his feet touched onto the ground, barely making any noise.

“Broken Shadow!”

Afterimages traced behind Ling Chen as he shot into the depths of the Forgotten Cave. He passed from the First Region to the Second Region to the Third Region to the Fourth Region, then the Fifth Region... and stopped in front of the Sixth Region.

Back then, it had taken him 2 or 3 days of cautious advancing to reach this point; this time, it had taken him less than 1 minute.

After entering the passageway leading to the Sixth Region, Ling Chen cancelled [Broken Shadow] and walked forwards. After reaching the end of the passageway, right before he was about to step into the Sixth Region, he called out, "Tao Tie!"

Back then, Tao Tie had given him the Gemini Orb and the powerful [Item Manipulation Technique] and [Heaven Wind Technique]. More importantly, he had given him Xiao Hui, so he always felt gratitude towards Tao Tie, a greedy divine beast with a poor reputation. This time, he had come to find it not to thank it but because he wanted answers from it. With his current strength, he had the right to know all of the answers he wanted. For example, where did Xiao Hui come from? And when Tao Tie had sent him away from here, he had said something strange to Qi Yue that Ling Chen had not paid much attention to before, "...Don't let the Night Demon Clan discover you too early..."

Qi Yue should be the Night Emperor's daughter, so Tao Tie should have wished that Qi Yue would find the Night Demon Clan and be reunited with her family as soon as possible. Why had he said not for her to be discovered?

Before, when the Night Emperor had suggested leaving together, Ling Chen had suddenly remembered this, and adding on the fact that Qi Yue was unwilling to meet the Night Emperor and had asked for 3 years, Ling Chen felt quite confused. He felt that he had to ask Tao Tie for answers before leaving the Novice Village.

With Tao Tie's Mysterious God grade senses, Ling Chen should have been discovered when he entered the passageway, but even

after Ling Chen called out, he did not detect any reaction from Tao Tie. Ling Chen felt quite surprised, and as soon as he stepped into the Sixth Region, he immediately saw the massive azure-coloured beast silently lying there. Its body filled half of the ground, and its appearance was extremely strange and terrifying – its head was incredibly big, and just looking at its savage eyes could cause one's heart to tremble. Its mouth was shockingly big, and its nose protruded from its face in an exaggerated way. It also had a curved horn at the bridge of its nose. On both sides of its head were 2 fleshy wings. Its body shape and tail were like a normal cow's, but it was countless times bigger than a cow. There were 2 gigantic claws on either side of its body that looked like human hands.

This was Tao Tie.

Looking at Tao Tie, Ling Chen suddenly stopped, and after remaining silent for a while, he deeply frowned.

Chapter 777: Demon Emperor's Soul

Even if such a powerful Mysterious God grade beast was sleeping, it would give off the mighty aura of a divine beast. Ling Chen could not feel Tao Tie's aura, but that was not because Ling Chen was too powerful and suppressing its aura. There was only one explanation.

Tao Tie... was dead.

Ling Chen slowly walked in front of Tao Tie's body, and Tao Tie still did not move, not a trace of life in its body. Ling Chen stretched out his hand and pressed it against Tao Tie's mouth, feeling a body heat that was far greater than a human's.

Tao Tie was indeed dead, but from the heat Ling Chen felt, he concluded that Tao Tie had only just died, and it might have been just 5 minutes... no, even just 1 minute ago!

This was simply too coincidental: it was as if someone knew that he would come to find Tao Tie and had killed it.

Ling Chen swept his eyes around, but he found the space to be incredibly peaceful, and there were not any traces of powerful energy remaining. The ground was also flat and unmarred, and Ling Chen could not find any signs of battle. If one wanted to kill a Mysterious God grade beast and it retaliated even once, the entire space would be destroyed. However, it was too peaceful here, which meant that Tao Tie had either committed suicide, or it had allowed itself to be killed... or that it did not even have the chance to struggle because it was killed in one swift blow!

Apart from himself, Ling Chen could not think of any other existence in the Mystic Moon world that could kill an ancient divine beast in a single strike.

"Xiao Hui, see if there are special traces left." After silently thinking for a while, Ling Chen summoned Xiao Hui, who quickly

looked around the space. However, after Xiao Hui looked around every inch of the space, he did not find any strange traces.

After remaining next to Tao Tie's corpse for a while, Ling Chen finally left. Combining what Ye Wu Ya said before, Qi Yue's reaction, and the words Tao Tie had said to him in the past, facing Tao Tie's sudden death, Ling Chen thought of something...

Qi Yue!!

“Could it be that Qi Yue isn't Ye Wu Ya's daughter, Ye Yue?!”

If Qi Yue wasn't Ye Yue, then everything would make sense. However, Qi Yue was evidently the Lunar Scourge's only item soul, and she had been within it for over 10,000 years. Otherwise, she wouldn't have known so many things from so long ago. However, if she was Ye Yue... just what was going on? This couldn't be a weird coincidence.

Ling Chen wanted to immediately log off and ask Qi Yue about this, but after thinking about it, he decided not to do this. This was because since Qi Yue had decided to hide this, he would never get a true answer from her. Moreover, whether or not Qi Yue was Ye Yue from back then did not have much to do with him.

After thinking about that, Ling Chen looked at Tao Tie's corpse one last time before walking out of the Forgotten Cave and returning to the Novice Village. After finding the Village Chief, he asked him to send him to the Azure Dragon City. Following this, Ling Chen took out a Spatial Orb and came to the Ghastly Grounds – the entrance of the Underworld.

“Leng'Er, let's go to the Underworld!”

Ling Chen summoned Leng'Er, and with the protection from her power, Ling Chen passed through the Underworld Door and immediately headed to the Underworld King's Residence.

“Underworld King, I need to go to the Underworld Blood Lake!”

Ling Chen called out as soon as he entered the Underworld King's

Residence and even before he saw the Underworld King. Just as he called out, the Underworld King's massive body appeared before him with a 'whoosh', his large eyes staring at Ling Chen. "Hoh! Son-in-law! You're still alive? Heheh, as expected from the Underworld King's son-in-law. You've been wanted by the Moon God Clan for a month, and yet you can still appear here alive."

After saying this, the Underworld King looked over at Leng'Er, his expression becoming incredibly warm and gentle. "Chan'Er, have you been well? Have you suffered at all? If you've been bullied, make sure you tell your royal father... When you're free, come back to see me..."

However, no matter how warm and gentle he tried to seem, the Underworld King's fierce face still caused Leng'Er's body to slightly tremble, and she clutched at Ling Chen's clothes as she ducked behind him. Ling Chen grinned. "Don't worry, the Moon God Clan will stop chasing me down today, and they will never try again in the future. Even if they do, I won't have to care about it. I need to go to the Underworld Blood Lake to use the Underworld Blood Lake's water, but I don't know what will happen, so I thought I'd tell you beforehand. If anything out of the ordinary happens, I might need you to help."

The Underworld King waved his hand. "You're already my son-in-law; you can go wherever you want in the Underworld... oh, I'll send you there right now. Since you don't even need to worry about the Moon God Clan anymore, there's nothing in the Mystic Moon world that you can't solve anymore; why would you need my help for anything? You can go now." After speaking, the Underworld King waved his hand, sending Ling Chen and Leng'Er to the Underworld Blood Lake.

After Ling Chen and Leng'Er disappeared, the Underworld King slowly lowered his hand, his expression serious as he deeply sighed, "My goodness, my goodness, that was the Shura's aura just then, and that aura was even more powerful than the Shura from

10,000 years ago... and not only has he not lost his consciousness, but he also wasn't followed by a divine tribulation... this sort of Shura is indeed powerful enough not to care about the Moon God Clan anymore.

“To be able to conquer the Lunar Scourge, I knew he would be able to reign above everything in this world and might be able to keep his sanity after becoming a Shura. Looks like I wasn't indulging in fantasies, and the reality was even crazier than I expected. These days, I've been gathering my strength and preparing to use the entire Underworld's strength to help him fight with the Moon God Clan... but looks like all of that was unnecessary. With someone like that, I don't need to worry about Chan'Er anymore, hahahaha.”

The air was extremely gloomy and eerie, and blood bubbled within the lake – this was the number 1 forbidden area in the Underworld, the Underworld Blood Lake.

Standing at the side of the Underworld Blood Lake, Ling Chen took out the 10 Demon Jade Hooks and arranged them into a circle like Xiao Hui had before. When the 10 Demon Jade Hooks were arranged, all of the jade hooks shone with a faint dark light and then started to spin. As they spun, a faint ghoulish howl seemed to sound out.

If they poured the Underworld Blood Lake's water on the 10 Demon Jade Hooks, they would be able to summon the Demon Emperor's soul. If Ling Chen touched the Lunar Scourge to the Demon Emperor's soul, he would be able to absorb it into the Lunar Scourge – this was what Qi Yue had told him that he needed to do to retrieve the Demon Emperor's soul.

“Leng'Er, help me gather some water and pour it on top.”

The Underworld Blood Lake's water could devour all creatures, and even the 3 Moon Goddesses did not dare to touch it. However, it would not harm creatures with the Underworld Royal bloodline.

Leng'Er rose up and flew above the Underworld Blood Lake, using her small, snow-white hands to cup a handful of water. She then flew beside the Demon Jade Hooks and carefully poured the water over them.

Immediately, the Demon Jade Hooks began to spin twice as fast, and masses of dark air streamed out from them, instantly filling the surrounding area. Ling Chen retreated a few steps, warily looking at the dark air that was becoming denser and denser. He immediately saw that the dark air was forming a terrifying, demonic head, and as the dark air continued to stream out, the demonic head continuously twisted and grew larger and clearer. Following this, a wild, ear-piercing laughter sounded out from within the dark fog...

“Hahahaha... after 10,000 years, I, the Demon Emperor, will once again... descend... hahahaha... hahahaha...”

The wild laughter suddenly stopped, and a shocked expression appeared on the demonic head. “Who are you... why are you summoning me... where are Sky Demon, Earth Demon, War Demon, and the others... why is it you...”

“Haha,” Ling Chen calmly laughed and slowly walked towards the dark air that was no longer growing. He raised his right hand and said unhurriedly, “You must be the Demon Emperor’s soul, right? I summoned you because... all of your Demon Beast Clan’s demon beasts have died, and I’ve obtained the Demon Jade Hooks that contain your soul.”

“What... impossible!” The demonic head greatly twisted, its voice becoming berserk and savage, “Impossible! All of my clan’s 10 ancient demon beasts have at least Mysterious God grade power, so how could a tiny human like you be their match? Even if you really did defeat them, why would you summon me?”

“Why did I summon you? To make you disappear from this world forever!” Ling Chen sinisterly smiled and walked closer and closer

to the demonic head. Before becoming a Shura, he would have felt quite fearful facing the Demon Emperor. After all, it was an existence on the level of the 3 Moon Goddesses, and even though it was only a remnant soul, it still had massive power. However, with Ling Chen's current strength, even the Demon Emperor at its peak would be of no threat to him; how could he fear his remnant soul? If it wasn't for the fact that the Demon Emperor's soul was one of the necessary ingredients to revive Shui Ruo, he would not be interested in this Demon Emperor in the slightest.

As Ling Chen spoke, he shot his right-hand forwards towards the black air. The instant the Lunar Scourge touched it, the 14 orbs shone with a faint silver light.

“L-Lunar Scourge!!!”

The instant the Lunar Scourge lit up with light, the Demon Emperor felt as if it had seen a nightmarish light and it screamed in terror. Its large face, which seemed whole, started to twist and turn in fear. “No! This is impossible! The Lunar Scourge definitely disappeared from the world... how can this be? How can this be?? Arghhh!!!”

A massive attractive force was released from the Lunar Scourge, and though it did not affect the dark air at all, the Demon Emperor's image was like a small boat in a storm at sea and was sucked into the Lunar Scourge. The Demon Emperor's image started to struggle – after being locked away for 10,000 years, it had finally been released. It had been delirious with joy, but in the blink of an eye, that joy had turned into despair. Even the Demon Emperor felt as if its mind was going to collapse, and the irresistible attractive force caused it to hoarsely roar, “No! Let me go... let me go... I'm the Demon Emperor! The Emperor of the Demon Beast Clan... I can't be devoured... let go of me... arghhh!!!”

As a demonic howl sounded out, the Demon Emperor was completely sucked into the Lunar Scourge, and the dark air spinning around dispersed after the Demon Emperor was absorbed

by the Lunar Scourge. The 10 Demon Jade Hooks lost their lustre, turning into ordinary black rocks.

Chapter 778: The Unsearchable Sun God Orb

Real world, Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

Qi Yue, who had been sleeping, lazily opened her eyes, a faint smile on her face. “He’s obtained the Demon Emperor’s soul. This means that all of the ingredients for resurrection have been gathered. After all, he already has the Shura’s tear. In that case...”

Qi Yue lightly got up, her hair cascading over her shoulders like a waterfall. She adjusted her clothes as her gaze became somewhat hazy. “The blood of the Moon Goddesses, the soul of the Demon Emperor, the tears of a Shura, and the Scourge of the Moon... the first 2 should have been easily obtainable, and what I needed most were the Lunar Scourge and the Shura’s tear. Who would have thought that in just a short year... just a single year... it’s too fast to the point that I think it’s a dream...”

“But why don’t I feel any joy...”

“Mother...”

.....

Ling Chen had easily obtained the Demon Emperor’s soul. After becoming a Shura, the things that had once seemed as difficult as scaling the heavens became incredibly simple – this was the result of having absolute power. It could be said that there was no creature that he could not defeat within the Mystic Moon world, much less threaten him. Even the powerful Moon God Clan’s 3 Moon Goddesses had fallen under his control, turning it into one of the powers he controlled.

“I’m only missing the Sun God Orb and tear of a Shura now.” Ling Chen muttered to himself while standing on the banks of the Underworld Blood Lake. He was not worried about the Shura’s tear because any tear he shed would be a Shura’s tear. In his life, there were many memories that could bring up tears. As such, the

only thing that he was truly missing was the Sun God Orb.

After saying goodbye to the Underworld King, Ling Chen left the Underworld, returned to Ling Tian City, and headed to Su'Er's residence. It had been quite a long time since she had found the Star God Orb's location, so she could most likely use the Heaven's Secrets power again. Her power had never failed before, so if the Sun God Orb still existed, Su'Er's Heaven's Secrets power would definitely be able to pinpoint it.

“Ah! You're back, big brother Ling Tian!” Seeing Ling Chen, Su'Er happily came over to greet him, “That's right! Just then, all of the kill orders on you in all of the main cities were withdrawn, and it seems like the Moon God Clan is no longer hunting you down. Big brother Ling Tian, you're so amazing; even the powerful Moon God Clan can't do anything to you.”

Heheh, can't do anything to me? The entire Moon God Clan now belongs to me, huehuehue... Ling Chen inwardly laughed in pleasure before he said with a smile, “But of course, it's just the Moon God Clan; there's nothing to be afraid of. Su Su, are you able to use your Heaven's Secrets power again?”

“Mm! It's been ready since a long time ago.” Su'Er lightly nodded. “Eh? So big brother has found the previous place? So amazing! Only big brother Ling Tian could find a place with only the numbers '49554'. In that case, do you want me to find the next place?”

“Mm, help me have a look where the next orb is. This orb is the final one, so if we can find it,” Ling Chen paused and breathed excitedly, “my greatest wish will be fulfilled, and from now on... I won't have any more regrets.”

Indeed, if he could successfully awaken Shui Ruo, the greatest sadness and regret in his life would be gone.

Ling Chen's words caused an excited look to appear on Su'Er's face, and she nodded somewhat nervously. “What big brother Ling

Tian wants is what I want; I'll do my best. I was able to find the locations before, so I'll definitely be able to find it this time."

After saying this, Su'Er calmed herself down and gently opened her hands as the Heavenly Star Horsetail Whisk appeared before her. She then drew a few white trails of light through the air. From the Heavenly Star Horsetail Whisk's reaction and the light that it gave off, Ling Chen could see that Su'Er's Heaven's Secrets power was much more powerful than before. Every day, it had been greatly growing, and even though she had entered the Heaven's Secrets Sect for less than a year, with her incredible talent and profoundly pure heart, she was currently completely qualified to be the 'Heaven's Secrets Sect Leader'.

When the Heavenly Star Horsetail Whisk stopped moving, a white cloud-like fog appeared in front of Su'Er and Ling Chen... but it was merely a white fog.

"Ahh..." Su'Er stared dumbly at the white fog, giving a soft cry, her expression instantly becoming nervous and embarrassed. Ling Chen raised his eyebrows and hurriedly asked, "What is it, Su Su?"

Su'Er continued to stare dumbly, and only after a while did she weakly reply, "The results of the Heaven's Secrets divination is... is... if big brother Ling Tian wants to find the next orb, it's... it's not even in the Mystic Moon world... no! This can't be right! That can't be it, it must be that my power's still too weak, so I obtained an incorrect answer. I-I'll try again, and I'll definitely succeed this time!"

Because this time's Heaven's Secrets divination was linked to Ling Chen's greatest wish, the result that it was not in the Mystic Moon world was not something that Su'Er could accept. This was because this meant that Ling Chen's greatest wish could never be fulfilled. Su'Er quickly calmed herself down and waved the Heavenly Star Horsetail Whisk again, drawing out a mysterious white light again... soon, the white light disappeared and a similar white fog appeared before Ling Chen and Su'Er.

Looking at the white fog, Su'Er once again stared dumbly and muttered dispiritedly, "Why is it like this... it shouldn't be like this, it shouldn't be..."

From Su'Er's reaction, Ling Chen knew that she had obtained the same result... the Sun God Orb was no longer in the Mystic Moon world. This could be interpreted as the Sun God Orb being in another world, or... it no longer existed. However, no matter what the answer was, Ling Chen was destined not to obtain the Sun God Orb.

The white fog slowly disappeared, and tears appeared in Su'Er's eyes. Ling Chen took a step forwards and gently put his arms around Su'Er's shoulders as he said softly, "It's alright, Su Su, it's not because your power wasn't enough or that your answer was wrong. In actuality, not too long ago, some people already told me that this thing didn't exist anymore, and those people were the Moon Goddesses, the beings with the highest authority in the Mystic Moon world. As such, I was already prepared for this. I came to find Su Su because I wasn't willing to give up and was hoping that a miracle would happen."

"But... But if that's the case, doesn't that mean big brother Ling Tian's greatest wish will never be fulfilled," Su'Er looked at Ling Chen worriedly with tears glimmering in her eyes.

"It's alright." Ling Chen smiled and shook his head. "Even if I'm missing this last orb, with the ones I've already obtained, I can still fulfil my wish; it just won't be as perfect. However, that imperfectness can be made up for over time, so Su Su doesn't need to worry."

"Really?" Su'Er raised her head. Ling Chen's words of comfort allowed her to stop worrying and blaming herself, and after hesitating for a moment, she nervously asked, "Then... can big brother Ling Tian tell me... what this wish, that you've spent all this time searching for things, is for?"

Ling Chen once again laughed and said, “I can’t tell you right now, but I’m sure not too long in the future you’ll all know. That will be a pleasant surprise to all of you.”

After leaving Su’Er’s place, the smile on Ling Chen’s face completely disappeared, turning into haziness and reluctance... the 3 Moon Goddesses had told him that the Sun God Orb had been destroyed long ago, and now, the results of Su’Er’s divination had confirmed this... it seemed that it was impossible for him to obtain the Sun God Orb.

Qi Yue had said before that the Lunar Scourge only required 12 God Orbs to resurrect a person, but there would be heavy side effects. If he was missing 1 Saint Orb, there would still be side effects... any creature resurrected would lose 1 or 2 of their 5 senses and would lose nearly one third of their memories.

Ling Chen could help Shui Ruo regain her memories – he was certain that even it would be impossible for her to forget him even if she forgot everything else. However, losing 1 of her senses... if he could transfer this side effect to himself, he would not hesitate at all. He simply could not accept Shui Ruo living like that.

As Ling Chen thought to himself in distress, Snow Cherry brought Ling Chen above the Lady of the City’s residence. Hearing the noise below, Ling Chen stopped and looked down.

“I’m the father of the Lady of this city! You can’t stop me, otherwise... otherwise I’ll ask my daughter to chase you all out of Ling Tian City!” This was what a crazed voice screamed.

“Apologies, but without an appointment or the Lady’s permission, no one can enter.” The Fairy Guard’s voice was very calm, but there was a faint look of contempt in his peaceful eyes. This was because he had to face these shameless people every day.

“Let us in... let us in immediately... Meng Xin! I know you can hear me; your second uncle and I have come to see you... have you received the Isrock Disease medicine that we asked your big

brother Yun Feng to give to you?”

“Meng Xin, I know you blame us for the things from before, but we didn’t really want to abandon you. When you were infected with the Isrock Disease, your father couldn’t sleep for many nights, and he cried every day... afterwards, when a medicine that could cure Isrock Disease was developed, your father became delirious with joy... you’re our Yun family’s daughter, and our Yun family will never abandon you, nor can you forget the Yun family.”

“Meng Xin, your grandpa has fallen ill, and he has been wanting to see you. He’s extremely sick this time, and if you don’t return home, you might not be able to see your grandpa, Meng Xin...”

Yun Zheng Fan and Yun Zheng Hao were desperately yelling in front of the Lady’s residence. They now completely regretted abandoning Yun Meng Xin when she had been infected with the Isrock Disease, but since what was done was done, how could they make up for it so easily? During this period of time, Li Xiao Xue, who had become famous across the world, had financially punished the Yun family severely for treating Yun Meng Xin so mercilessly before.

Back then, when the Li family had been the richest financial group with the Yun family in second place, the Li family might have still acted reservedly towards the Yun family. However, now that the Li family had developed a cure for the Isrock Disease and had futuristic technology, their influence had increased by thousands of times, and now, toying with the Yun family was like toying with a child. In just half a month, they had destroyed many of the Yun family’s finances, causing them to suffer a devastating decline. Even the ones that had once tried to curry favour with them now avoided them like the plague... what a joke, now that the Li family financial group was taking action against them, anyone who dared to help them would be asking to be kicked out of the Chinese market. The Yun family was indeed quite powerful,

but in front of the Li family, who could now cause the world to tremble by stomping, they were simply nothing.

The only one who could save the Yun family was Yun Meng Xin. Yun Zheng Fan and Yun Zheng Hai could only thicken their faces and come here to plead to see Yun Meng Xin every day, because if Yun Meng Xin refused to help, then the Yun family was doomed.

Ling Chen watched on like he was watching monkeys perform, and he coldly laughed. He did not feel a trace of favourability towards the Yun family, and he even felt a hint of hatred towards them. This was because after Yun Meng Xin had become the Lady of the City, she had silently given much help to the Yun family, and she had even reluctantly returned home to celebrate Yun Ba Fang's 70th birthday... because of that time, she had been infected with the Isrock Disease. However, in her time of desperate need, when she needed her family the most, she was mercilessly cast away by them.

Ling Chen knew that even though Yun Meng Xin was quite kind, she was also very stubborn, and she was very clear about what she liked and disliked. She would no longer meet with the Yun family that had raised her... at most, she would ask Li Xiao Xue to show some mercy. The Yun family had only given her memories that she did not want to think about, so that was the limit to what she would do.

Chapter 779: Omen

Ling Chen was not worried about how Yun Meng Xin would face the Yun family because he was sure that Yun Meng Xin would do it well and not let herself down. Just as he was about to leave, a white light flashed as Fey appeared in front of him, giving him a smileless smile, saying, “The Moon God Clan actually stopped hunting you down. I’m very curious to know how you dealt with those 3 Moon Goddesses.”

“Of course it was with my peerless charm,” Ling Chen chuckled.

Fey rolled her eyes at him before glancing at the Lunar Scourge on his wrist. “You’ve obtained the Star God Orb as well?”

“Mm... Hmm? How did you know?” A look of shock appeared on Ling Chen’s face.

“Just a feeling... the only ones who could return you to the Novice Village to obtain the Star God Orb so quickly are the Moon Goddesses. Looks like you’ve completely ‘dealt’ with them... did you use the same means as when you dealt with the Forgotten God Representative?” Fey asked with a look of suspicion. This was because apart from that shameless skill, she simply could not think of how he could cause the 3 Moon Goddesses’ attitude towards him to change so much.

Fey’s instincts had always been quite terrifying, and this was not the first time that Ling Chen had experienced them. He did not deny it and he slyly smiled. “You guessed it. No matter who it is, anyone who’s affected by that skill will see me as the most important person in the world to them... Heheh, Fey, maybe even you’ve fallen for that skill.”

“Cheh.” Fey glared at Ling Chen before saying with a strange expression, “Surely you didn’t actually turn the 3 Moon Goddesses into what the Forgotten God Representative is like right?”

Just as Ling Chen was about to start proudly bragging about how he had conquered the Mystic Moon world's powerful Moon Goddesses, Fey harrumphed and said, "I had thought that you used your charisma to conquer them; so you actually used such a despicable and underhanded means... as expected from you, Adam... hmm? Each of those 3 Moon Goddesses is an extraordinary beauty. Since a perverted demon like you used such despicable means, don't tell me you did things to them that only a perverted demon would do..."

"Err... that..."

"In the Moon God Palace, from the Moon Ladies to the Moon God Representatives, all of them are exceptional beauties. Since you used such contemptible methods to conquer the 3 Moon Goddesses, you've essentially conquered the entire Moon God Palace. Aiyaya... there are thousands of beauties in the Moon God Palace, and now they've all become yours... do you become excited just from thinking about that?"

As the person who understood Ling Chen most in the world, none of Ling Chen's thoughts could escape Fey's eyes. Back in 'hell', Ling Chen had laid his hands on all of the pretty girls, and all of the women in the Moon God Palace were like celestial goddesses. Fey would rather believe in ghosts than believe that Ling Chen would not lay his hands on them. Facing Fey's piercing gaze, Ling Chen felt cold sweat erupt on his back. "Ah... Ahem... the weather's quite good today... haha... such good weather..."

"Hm? Are you sure the weather's good today?" Fey looked at Ling Chen condescendingly before raising her head to look up at the sky as she frowned. "Do you know why I came to find you? Don't you think the weather's quite strange today?"

"Strange?" Ling Chen also looked up in surprise.

The sky was quite blue, and there were white clouds moving around. However, below the white clouds, there was a patch of

dark clouds. It wasn't very big, and it only silently floated there, blocking out some of the light from reaching the ground.

“Dark clouds? Is it going to rain?” Ling Chen said. Even though rain was rare in the Forgotten Continent, it was not something that was incredible. However, Ling Chen soon realised what Fey meant. “By strange, you meant... those dark clouds?”

Fey said with a serious expression, “The white clouds are moving, and indeed, we can feel the wind, but the dark clouds have not moved at all, which is quite strange. What's more, the dark clouds are normally stratocumulus, cumulonimbus, or undulatus clouds, and because of how thick they are, the sunlight cannot pass through them, making them seem quite dark. Normally, dark clouds are darkest at the centre and lighter at the sides. However, the dark clouds in the sky are not in the shape that dark clouds should be in, and their colour is quite even; they're definitely not normal dark clouds.”

Ling Chen looked at them for a while and could not deny what Fey had said. However, he did not take it to heart, and he said casually, “The elements in the Mystic Moon world are different to earth, so it's not too strange that the clouds are different to those on earth; there's no need to take them so seriously. At worst, there'll just be a big storm, and it won't really affect us.”

“.....” Fey fell silent for a few moments before nodding. “I hope I'm just thinking too much. What are you planning to do now? Go to the Moon God Palace to enjoy~~ yourself~~? Do you want me to come with you to do some training with you?”

“”Ahh... err... no thanks,” Ling Chen hurriedly shook his head. “I have some things I need to do, so I'll be logging off... let me know if you need anything.” After speaking, Ling Chen met Fey's gaze, which contained a faint hint of killing intent, and he logged off as if he was desperately escaping. Even for Fey, it was impossible for her not to be jealous when facing the thousands of peerless beauties in the Moon God Palace,

Fey did not immediately leave after Ling Chen logged off. She once again looked up into the sky, staring at the unmoving dark clouds. After from a powerful mental defence and detection abilities, Ling Chen's mental energy was skewed towards attacking. In extreme circumstances, he could unleash his 'Eyes of Extermination', which could tear through anything. On the other hand, while Fey's mental energy also gave her mental defences and detection abilities, they gave her no attacking capabilities. Instead, it gave her a terrifying 'instinct'. That was why Fey's instincts had never just been a 'woman's instincts' to Ling Chen.

When she saw the dark clouds in the sky, Fey's instincts had told her that these dark clouds were definitely abnormal! As she stared at them, she began to feel more and more uneasy.

.....

After Ling Chen logged off, he went straight to Qi Yue's room and asked, "Qi Yue! The Moon Goddesses said that the Sun God Orb was destroyed by their ancestors long ago, and Su Su's divination told her that the Sun God Orb isn't in the Mystic Moon world. As the person who understands the Lunar Scourge the best, you should have known this since long ago, right? Does the Sun God Orb still exist?"

Qi Yue gracefully turned around, not seeming hurriedly at all. Instead, she gave Ling Chen an enchanting smile. "Not at all, it's impossible for the Sun God Orb to be destroyed."

"Impossible? What do you mean?" Ling Chen's mind trembled.

"Because the Lunar Scourge's power is condensed in the 15 orbs, the source of the 15 orbs is the Lunar Scourge's main body. If the Lunar Scourge's main body is not destroyed, it's impossible for the 15 orbs to be destroyed. All in all, if someone wants to destroy one of the Lunar Scourge's Orbs, they'll need to destroy the Lunar Scourge's main body while destroying that orb. However, the reality is that the Lunar Scourge's main body is being worn on

little master's wrist. As such, it's impossible that the Sun God Orb was destroyed. Rather, it still exists and is perfectly fine. That was probably a laughable lie fabricated by the Moon Goddesses' ancestors," Qi Yue said calmly and slowly.

"Then why couldn't Su Su detect the Sun God Orb with her Heaven's Secrets power? I was only able to find the other orbs because of Su Su's power, and she told me each time where they were incredibly accurately," Ling Chen said seriously.

Qi Yue shook her head and replied, "Out of the 15 orbs, the 3 Saint Orbs are the sovereigns, and out of the 3 Saint Orbs, the Sun God Orb is the most powerful. Its power completely surpasses the Moon God Orb and Star God Orb and is at a level that the Mystic Moon world's rules can't understand. As such, even the mysterious and all-seeing Heaven's Secrets power is unable to find the Sun God Orb. No matter how powerful one's detection is, it is impossible to find any traces of the Sun God Orb. The result that little Su'Er received is quite normal."

"Is it really like that?" Seeing how calm Qi Yue seemed, Ling Chen more or less believed her words, and he inwardly let out a sigh of relief... as long as the Sun God Orb was fine, even though Su'Er had not been able to find it with her Heaven's Secrets power and finding it would be incredibly difficult, at least there was hope that Shui Ruo would not be missing any memories or sense when he revived her.

"Of course, the Lunar Scourge is related to my fate, so how could I joke around with little master?" Qi Yue replied with a slight smile. She stretched, seemingly unintentionally displaying her proud curves to Ling Chen before smiling. "Even though I've lived quite comfortably in little master's home, I haven't been able to go adventuring with little master for quite a while. I've felt quite guilty and sorry about making little master suffer by himself, so from tomorrow on, I'll obediently go with little master into the Mystic Moon world again and look for the Sun God Orb with little

master. Not only has the Sun God Orb not disappeared, but it's also definitely somewhere in the Mystic Moon world. I'll work hard with little master so that we can find the Sun God Orb as soon as possible. When the time comes, I'll be able to have a complete body, and little master will be able to awaken lil sis Shui Ruo."

Qi Yue's words caused Ling Chen's heart to quiver... indeed, he was only missing the final Sun God Orb. He was only a single step away from the goal that he yearned for even in his dreams.

Chapter 780: 'Crazy' Decision

Ling Chen came out from Qi Yue's room and went into the living room.

“Oh? Smith?” Qi Yue, who had followed Ling Chen out, looked at the TV screen, a look of interest on her face.

“The Cosmos Corporation's Director is a genius and madman in the realm of virtual gaming. At the same time, he's the creator of Mystic Moon.” Speaking to there, Ling Chen raised his eyebrows. He had long since stopped thinking of the Mystic Moon world as purely a virtual game, so how had the 'father of Mystic Moon' created a game that wasn't a game? What was hiding behind all of this?

On the screen, Smith was quite well-dressed, and he looked quite calm. However, looking closely, one would see a weariness in the depths of his eyes. He smiled and slowly said, “Mystic Moon has been released for more than 1 year, and it has been praised by countless sources and created numerous records. Mystic Moon's success is my pride and joy, and is the result of all of your passion. I would like to first thank all of you sincerely...

“In 1 month, it will be the Cosmos Corporation's 99th anniversary, and it will also be my birthday. On that special day, I would like to thank all players... in 1 month, from 12am, all EXP gained, including EXP from battling and Trade Professions, will be 10 times the normal amount. At the same time, the drop rates will be increased by 10 times! That's right, you heard correctly, a whole 10 times... indeed, this is a crazy decision – that day will be a day of mad rejoicing because only in that day will you receive 10 times the rewards... let us all wait for that day expectantly... I hope that we'll be able to create a record that will never be broken on that 10x day...”

“Wow!! My god, 10x EXP and drop rates... 10x!!” Xiao Qi cried out

as her eyes widened. She was so excited about Smith's announcement that she stood up. "If it wasn't for Mr Smith saying it himself, I wouldn't dare to believe it... I can't even start to imagine how many people will be logged on in 1 month... will the whole earth fall into silence?!"

"It's indeed quite crazy." Ling Chen tapped his chin, feeling quite confused. He remembered that the Cosmos Corporation had done double EXP and double drop rate events in the past on their 50th and 80th anniversaries. However, the 10x EXP and 10x drop rate was a bit too crazy. This was a massively pleasant surprise to players, but it was also a great shock.

"Aiya, he's already so old, and yet he's making such crazy decisions. What a madman." Qi Yue narrowed her eyes and smiled, but in the depths of her eyes, there was a surprised light.

Ling Chen slightly frowned and said with confusion, "Smith became renowned around the world when he was less than 30 years old, and he has always had revolutionary ideas. However, he is an extremely careful and steady person, so it's quite surprising that he would make such a crazy decision... is he really trying to use Mystic Moon's popularity to create a record that can't ever be broken?"

"That should be it." Xiao Qi nodded, then excitedly ran around as she said, "I'm going to tell big sister Meng Xin and the others; in 1 month, I'll definitely spend the entire day online. Usually, missing 1 day means I'll fall 1 day behind, but on that day, I'll be falling 10 days behind! I can already imagine how crazy it's going to be that day!"

After saying this, Xiao Qi impatiently ran towards Yun Meng Xin's room... in actuality, there was no need to tell Yun Meng Xin – in less than 2 days, the announcement would travel across the entire world. However, only Ling Chen was not very excited about it: 10x EXP and 10x drop rate meant nothing to him. At most, he felt some surprise towards Smith's decision.

“Alright, let’s go,” Ling Chen said to Qi Yue as he extended his hand.

“... Are you that impatient to bring me back into the game? After going back, unless little master brings me out, I won’t be able to serve little master on that bed, bathroom, and balcony. I thought little master wouldn’t be willing to send me off so quickly.” Qi Yue slowly put her snow-white hand into Ling Chen’s hand as she said with mock-displeasure.

“At least this house will be much quieter,” Ling Chen said with frustration. Ever since Fey had brought Yola here, just as he had expected, Fey had felt quite hostile towards Qi Yue... and this hostility was not small at all. To make a terrifying woman like Fey feel hostility, the consequences were not small at all.

This hostility partially came from the sense of danger Fey felt from Qi Yue, but it also came partially from the envy she felt from Qi Yue’s beauty surpassing hers... Qi Yue, this extremely beautiful but seductive demoness was right by her man’s side, causing even Fey, someone who had always felt incredibly confident in herself, to feel unsettled. Moreover, as she ‘clashed’ with Qi Yue on various areas, she experienced Qi Yue’s fearsomeness more and more, causing her hostility to grow. Whenever they bumped into each other, one would have a bright smile while the other would have an elegant smile, but anyone who came close could feel a body-numbing pressure.

Ling Chen grasped Qi Yue’s hand, laid down on the sofa, closed his eyes, and entered into the Mystic Moon world.

However, Qi Yue remained where she was, and she did not disappear the instant that Ling Chen entered the game. When Ling Chen’s mind entered the Mystic Moon world, Qi Yue pulled her hand out from within Ling Chen’s and then held Ling Chen’s hand, gently placing it on Ling Chen’s chest. She then rose up, the smile on her face gone as she looked at the TV screen.

“1 month... why would the Mad Scientist bring the time forwards by so much? What happened on their side?” Qi Yue frowned as she muttered to herself, “If that’s the case, I need to make a move as well... I need to obtain the Shura’s tear as soon as possible!” After muttering to herself, Qi Yue closed her eyes as a strange black light surfaced on her body, following which she disappeared like fog.

The instant Qi Yue disappeared, one of the doors on the second floor opened, revealing a small, white figure. She looked towards where Qi Yue disappeared, and an expression that did not match her young looks appeared on her face. Following this, she glanced at the TV screen and looked down as she said in a low voice, “This time, I definitely won’t let you all succeed...”

.....

“Ding... welcome to the Mystic Moon, we hope you enjoy your stay.”

After returning to the Mystic Moon world, Ling Chen did not see Qi Yue by his side, and after feeling quite confused for a moment, he called out, “Qi Yue, come out.”

After calling her, he did not receive a response. Only when he called out a third time did Qi Yue’s figure slowly appear before him. She stretched as she said charmingly, “I’m finally back... hmm, this illusory body doesn’t feel nice at all; it’s much better in little master’s home. However, if it’s to help little master, I’m willing to endure it here.”

“... Just tell me if you have any ways of finding the Sun God Orb,” Ling Chen directly asked. Even though Qi Yue was quite sure that the Sun God Orb had not been destroyed and that it was still in the Mystic Moon world, with how vast this world was, finding an orb would be even more difficult than finding a needle in a sea.

“This... of course there’s not. However,” Qi Yue gave a slight smile as she looked at Ling Chen with a clear gaze, “even though I was in the real world, I’m still the Lunar Scourge’s item soul.

Whenever there are any changes in the Lunar Scourge, I'll detect them immediately. It only took little master 1 year to retrieve 14 of the Lunar Scourge's orbs, which was thousands of times faster than I expected. This miracle means that little master is filled with good luck, and no matter what he does, he'll be blessed by the heavens. Even after becoming a Shura, you're not followed by divine tribulations, so I believe that little master won't have to search hard for it. Rather, the Sun God Orb will be like the other orbs and will appear right in front of little master."

Ling Chen did not say anything; Qi Yue's answer was pretty much not an answer at all. However, thinking back to the process of collecting the Lunar Scourge's Orbs, Ling Chen couldn't help but admit that what Qi Yue had said was somewhat true: apart from the first orb, the Gemini Orb, all of the other orbs had taken a certain degree of luck to obtain. For some, the luck and coincidence involved was simply incomprehensible to him. Of course, this luck most likely came from Xiao Hui. With Xiao Hui by his side, perhaps the Sun God Orb really would appear in front of him.

"Right now, the Lunar Scourge is only missing the final Sun God Orb, and you've already obtained the Moon God Orb and Star God Orb. Right now, out of the 4 key ingredients, the thing you're missing is the Shura's tear – something that should have been incredibly difficult to obtain, but is now incredibly simple. Well, how about we take the Shura's tear now," Qi Yue said softly as she gazed at Ling Chen.

"Right now?" Ling Chen glanced over at Qi Yue.

"That's right, because it's the best time right now," Qi Yue said as she smiled. "Out of the 4 key ingredients, because the Demon Emperor's soul is an evil soul, its existence is quite unstable. Even the Lunar Scourge cannot fully seal it. As time passes, it will grow weaker and weaker, and the chances of it dissipating will grow. If that happens, the resurrection will be affected. In actuality, the

Demon Emperor's soul should only be obtained after the other 3 ingredients are obtained. It was just that I wasn't with little master during that time, and I never thought that little master would have collected the 10 Demon Jade Hooks so quickly. Otherwise, I would have stopped little master. However, since little master has already obtained the Demon Emperor's soul, the best thing to do is to fuse it with the Moon Goddesses' blood, Shura's tear, and Lunar Scourge's power as soon as possible. If we want to do that, all we're missing is a Shura's tear from little master."

Chapter 781: Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb

Qi Yue sounded quite logical. After all, the Demon Emperor's soul was not something that was inanimate or dead, and it could become quite unstable. However, Ling Chen could not accept Qi Yue's words. He shook his head and decisively said, "No! Before, you said that the resurrected person would not be revived with their full memories and senses if the Lunar Scourge was not complete. The Lunar Scourge is still missing the Sun God Orb, so if we do it right now..."

"No, no! Little master has misunderstood," Qi Yue smiled as she cut Ling Chen off. "According to the recorded method of resurrection, as long as the Moon Goddesses' blood, Demon Emperor's soul, and Shura's tear are fused, they can create a special item that possesses utmost holiness, utmost evil, and utmost hatred. The natural laws make it so that although holiness, evil, and hatred can coexist under certain circumstances, they can never coexist in an item or creature. However, this special item is an item that contains utmost holiness, evil, and hatred, and its existence is something that breaks the natural laws and has heaven-defying effects.

"If it is consumed by a deceased being, it can reverse the natural order and cause the deceased being to come back to life. The Lunar Scourge's power determines the strength of this special item. The stronger the power of the Lunar Scourge, the more powerful the effects of the resurrection. With the complete Lunar scourge, creating this special item will give them the best results. I know how much little master wants lil sis Shui Ruo to be perfectly revived. However, the Lunar Scourge is not the most important thing for the creation of this item – even though the item will not be perfect, if you can find the Sun God Orb afterwards and touch it to the item, it will be as if it was created with a completed Lunar Scourge.

“At the same time, by fusing what you currently have, you can test whether the legend is true or not. If the Lunar Scourge really can combine those ingredients to create a heaven-defying item that contains utmost holiness, evil, and hatred, it should be sufficient to prove that the legend is real and that lil sis Shui Ruo really can be awakened.”

The final thing that Qi Yue said deeply tugged at Ling Chen’s heartstrings. He fell silent for a while before lightly nodding. “Alright.”

Fairy Realm.

Ling Chen floated above the Fairy Fountain and looked down at the pure and beautiful girl sleeping in the water. Her eyes were shut, looking as if she was sleeping peacefully, and she did not know that she was continuously in a man’s heart and dreams...

Ruo Ruo, I haven’t seen you in a month, and I’m sure you’re definitely missing me desperately like how I desperately miss you. It’s not that I don’t want to come to see you, but that I don’t dare to... because every time I see you sleeping like this, my heart aches to the point that I can’t breathe. Every time, I want to stay here forever and be with you, and I keep you in my vision so that you won’t be alone... each time I take my eyes away from you, it takes all of my willpower, and it makes me feel even more pain than 10,000 blades stabbing into my body...

Now, just looking at you, I feel an indescribable happiness. I can’t even begin to imagine how happy I’ll feel when you wake up again. I’m sure that day will come soon, so wait for me...

Dad... Mum... Even though you’re not my biological parents, the fatherly and motherly love that you showed me was complete, and you gave me a complete family. To become your son was one of the greatest blessings in my life. It was just that fate cruelly took both of you away... I don’t dare to forget a single sentence that you said before you passed away, and your gazes often appear in my mind...

it's a pity that I let you down and wasn't able to take care of Ruo Ruo properly... I know that in these years, you've been watching over us from heaven. In that case, watch as I awaken Ruo Ruo; after all, I can't be without Ruo Ruo and Ruo Ruo can't be without me...

Many memories from before appeared in Ling Chen's mind. His happiness and bliss were shattered by the Isrock Disease, and no matter how powerful he was, he could only howl in despair in front of that nightmare. He had lost his father, mother, and Ruo Ruo... afterwards, Shui Ruo had become the most important thing in his life, and his only desire was for her to get well. However, in the end...

Those painful memories also appeared in his mind, causing Ling Chen's body to slightly tremble as his breathing became erratic. Slowly, Ling Chen's eyes, which were looking at Shui Ruo, became hazy, and a tear condensed at the corners of his eyes and soundlessly fell... followed by a second, third... until the tears became unstoppable...

At his side, Qi Yue quickly moved and used a mysterious power to guide the teardrops into the Lunar Scourge. After collecting 5 teardrops, Qi Yue stopped and excitedly called out, "Well done, little master, that's enough."

Ling Chen didn't seem to hear Qi Yue's voice, and he continued to stand there. After a while, he finally slowly turned around, and dispiritedly said, "Do you know how to combine them?"

"Of course I know; the method is recorded in depth in the records. As the item soul of the Lunar Scourge, of course I know this. Well then, let's begin," Qi Yue said as she smiled.

The atmosphere suddenly became heavy.

Ling Chen had no idea what the result of the fusion would be. However, the results were simply too important to him. If that reviving item could really be created, it would mean that the

legend of resurrection was true. If he could then find the Sun God Orb, he could perfectly awaken Shui Ruo.

However, if there was no result from the fusing or if it was impossible to fuse such a thing, that meant that the legend was a lie. Everything that he had been working so hard for would be for naught, and the hope of awakening Shui Ruo would turn into an impossible dream.

As Qi Yue placed her hand on the Lunar Scourge and started to activate the Lunar Scourge's power to combine the Moon Goddesses' blood, Demon Emperor's soul, and Shura's tears, one could only imagine how intense Ling Chen's emotions were. This was because the result of this meant the difference between heaven and hell to him. Looking at Qi Yue, there was also a nervous expression on her face, her 5 snow-white fingers lightly trembling, afraid that she would make a mistake in the process.

Neither person said anything, and they held their breaths, silently waiting for a reaction from the Lunar Scourge.

As Qi Yue's fingers lightly moved, the Lunar Scourge flashed with a faint silver light. As the light grew, the Moon Goddesses' blood, Shura's tears, and Demon Emperor's soul silently started to combine in the space within the Lunar Scourge. Slowly, the silver light started to flash, and Ling Chen continued to stare at it, not daring to blink. Every time the light flashed, his heart leaped, and Qi Yue was not much better off either. In just 10 or so seconds, both of their foreheads were beaded with cold sweat.

She seems to be just as nervous as me. Perhaps she really hopes that I'll be able to successfully awaken Shui Ruo... Ling Chen thought, detecting Qi Yue's emotions.

"Look, little master!" Qi Yue's incredibly excited voice sounded out, causing Ling Chen to come back to his senses. He immediately looked at the Lunar Scourge and saw a tiny, transparent, crystal-like orb where the Sun God Orb should have been. It was as big as a

rice grain, and it slowly grew.

“What... What is that?” Ling Chen said somewhat hoarsely.

“In the records, the 4 ingredients fused together can create something that can resurrect dead beings, and it is called the ‘Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb’.” Qi Yue stared at the transparent object, a look of excitement on her face that Ling Chen had never seen before. “In the legends, it’s said that the Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb is a transparent orb that is much smaller than the Lunar Scourge’s Orbs... this must mean that the Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb of the legends is being created! If this really is a Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb, that means the legend of resurrection is true! And it’s happening right before our eyes.”

“Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb... Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb...” Ling Chen did not dare to move his right wrist at all, afraid that he might disturb the transparent object. Seeing it grow, waves of shock crashed within his heart... after such a long time, as he searched for the Lunar Scourge’s Orbs, he desperately avoided thinking about the possibility... that the legend of resurrection that Qi Yue spoke of was just a story. This was because Qi Yue said that this legend came from ancient times and that there was no way of testing if it was true. At the very least, within all recorded history, no creature had ever been revived before.

However, hearing Qi Yue talk about the Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb and seeing the transparent orb growing on the Lunar Scourge, Ling Chen felt so excited that he wanted to scream... because after desperately struggling for 1 year, he had seen true evidence of hope today.

Within the light, the crystalline orb continued to slowly grow. After a few minutes, the orb grew from being the size of a rice grain to being as big as a nail until it became a perfect sphere. Following this, its growth started to slow down. Qi Yue put her hands over it and softly said, “I can feel it – utmost holiness, utmost evil, and utmost hatred are about to gather in this orb, and

they are about to perfectly fuse within it. This completely goes against the laws of nature, and it is a heaven-defying event that shouldn't happen!

“This is it! This is it! This is exactly as the legends say! The legends from the ancient times are actually true; this is definitely the ‘Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb’ that can bring about resurrection!”

Chapter 782: Descent Of The Demon Beasts

As Ling Chen and Qi Yue watched on, the ‘Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb’ gradually took shape.

“Is... this really the ‘Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb?’” Ling Chen said as he picked up the fully-formed orb from the Lunar Scourge. The orb was only as big as a fingernail, and it was completely transparent, making it look like a crystal. There was also a faint, fog-like light around it, making it seem incredibly mysterious. Even though Ling Chen was clearly looking at it, he felt as if he couldn’t believe that it really existed.

“That’s definitely it!” Qi Yue raised her head and looked at the orb excitedly. “If I only believed in the legends about resurrection 30% before, I now believe in them 80%! The ingredients for creating this ‘Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb’, the process, and its looks are exactly as the legends say. In that case, it should also be able to bring creatures back... the Lunar Scourge is already an extremely heaven-defying item that should not exist, and the item that it created by fusing 3 incompatible items is even more heaven-defying. Even defying death is not impossible for it!”

“So if I give it to Shui Ruo to consume, I’ll... be able to wake her up?” Ling Chen said incredibly softly to the point that even he wasn’t able to hear his own voice.

“That’s right!” Qi Yue nodded confidently and smiled. “In that case, does little master want to give it to lil sis Shui Ruo right now? If lil sis Shui Ruo consumes it, she’ll be able to come to life right in front of you... hehe, I know that this is little master’s greatest wish, so it’s naturally my greatest wish as well... but if you give it to her now, according to the legend, lil sis Shui Ruo might be missing some of her memories and senses after she wakes up since you’re missing a Saint Orb. As such, if little master wants to wake up a complete lil sis Shui Ruo, it’s best to do it after obtaining the Sun God Orb. If little master simply can’t wait, you can do it now

as well. No matter what little master wants to do, I'll fully support your decision.”

Ling Chen's hand holding the Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb carefully closed, and Ling Chen's body started to tremble. He desperately wanted Shui Ruo to open her eyes so that this girl, who was more important to him than his own life, would be with him again. However, regardless of this desire, Ling Chen raised his head and slowly and resolutely shook his head, muttering, “No... I can't do it now... I can't let Ruo Ruo lose her memories and senses... not now... Qi Yue, tell me... what can I do to find the Sun God Orb as soon as possible?”

After ridding himself of the mental restrictions, becoming a Shura, and obtaining the Feng Chen Sect's ultimate legacy, even Ling Chen did not know that his current mental energy was coming close to the ancient gods. In this world, only Shui Ruo could make him feel so emotional despite his new mental state. Even if she was still asleep... seeing how Ling Chen looked, Qi Yue once again saw just how deeply he felt towards Shui Ruo, and a complicated struggle appeared in the depths of her eyes before she charmingly smiled. “I've said it before: little master is incredibly lucky, and adding on the attraction between the orbs, we don't need to go out of our way to look for it. I'm sure that the Sun God Orb will appear before little master not too long in the future.”

Ling Chen fell silent for a while before nodding.

At this moment, Qi Yue raised her head, looking up at the sky with confusion. “Little master, have you felt that the weather today is quite strange?”

Looking up, Ling Chen saw that there were dark clouds in the bright sky. Before, Fey had said something similar to him, and back then, there were only a few dark clouds. Now, after 2 hours later, nearly one third of the sky was covered by dark clouds.

What's more, the dark clouds were incredibly low as if one could

touch them if they raised their hand. Just like the dark clouds that had made Fey feel confused earlier, these dark clouds did not move with the wind, and looking closely, one could see them slowly growing.

“Is it going to rain?” Ling Chen dismissively muttered, as all of his focus was on the Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb.

“No! It’s not rain!” Looking up at the dark clouds, Qi Yue’s expression became grim. “Those clouds are giving me an extremely uncomfortable feeling...” Qi Yue’s gaze suddenly jumped as she thought of something, and her expression fell. “Could it be...”

BOOM!!!!

Before Qi Yue could finish speaking, a shocking peal of thunder sounded out...

This peal of thunder sounded as if it could shatter rocks and cause the space around them to collapse. The entire Forgotten Continent seemed to violently tremble, and countless players were knocked to the ground, their ears losing hearing. Following this, cries of shock and panic filled the entire Forgotten Continent...

In the air, Ling Chen’s body trembled as he frowned and yelled, “What’s going on?!”

“Little master, look up!”

As Qi Yue cried out, Ling Chen quickly raised his head, and his pupils contracted... the dark clouds, which had covered one third of the sky, had grown... no, exploded... the thunder from just then was the result of countless dark clouds exploding, with each dark cloud becoming tens, then hundreds, then thousands of black dots which slowly fell... as Ling Chen watched on, they fell lower and lower and grew bigger and bigger... in just an instant, the air was filled with masses of dark shapes, and they quickly fell, becoming denser and denser. They spread as far as Ling Chen’s eyes could see, seeming to extend on forever...

“What... What is this?!” This inconceivable scene greatly shocked Ling Chen. He immediately summoned Xiao Hui and hurriedly said, “Xiao Hui, hurry and see what that is!!”

Xiao Hui activated his [Eye of the Holy Spirit] and looked up into the air, causing a mass of information to flood into Ling Chen’s mind.

[Four-Winged Demon Beast]: Type: Demon Beast, Grade: 3 Star Elite, Level: LV80, HP: 300,000. A high-grade demon beast of the Demon Beast Clan. Its nature is bloodthirsty and violent, and it has a powerful body and berserk, destructive power. It also has Darkness power that can devour life. It should have gone extinct long ago, and it has reappeared in the Forgotten Continent because of unknown reasons.

Passive Abilities: Nullifies 90% of Darkness attacks, immune to [Darkness] and [Curse] abnormal statuses.

Attack Skills: [Darkness Fangs], [Brutal Strike], [Darkness Devour]

Weaknesses: Fire Resistance-100%, Light Resistance-150%.

[Demon Skeleton Dragon]: Type: Demon Beast, Grade: Celestial, Level: LV90, HP: 80,000,000. A powerful demon beast that came to be from a dragon’s skeleton absorbing demonic aura. Its mighty strength is able to tear through all creatures’ bodies, and it can create massive demon abysses. It should have gone extinct long ago, and it has reappeared in the Forgotten Continent because of unknown reasons.

Passive Abilities: Nullifies 90% of Darkness attacks, immune to all abnormal statuses, and has powerful Defence and Physical Attack Power.

Attack Skills: [Demon Dragon Soul Slash], [Darkness Strike], [Extreme Darkness], [Demon Dragon’s Roar]

Weaknesses: Fire Resistance-100%, Light Resistance-150%.

[War Demon Beast]: Type: Demon Beast, Grade: Mysterious God, Level: LV90, HP: 16,000,000,000. One of the 10 ancient demon beasts of the Demon Beast Clan. It loves war and has incredible power. It was killed in the past and has reappeared in the Forgotten Continent because of unknown reasons.

Passive Abilities:; Attack Skills:; Weaknesses:

“What?!?!”

The information from Xiao Hui told Ling Chen that these countless black dots were all demon beasts from the Demon Beast Clan that had been vanquished 10,000 years ago!

There were many different types of demon beasts, and there were too many to be counted. The most common, and with the lowest grade, were 1 Star Elites. There were also 2 Star Elites, 3 Star Elites, Celestial grade, Heaven’s End grade... and even Mysterious God grade demon beasts!

With Ling Chen’s current strength, he did not even place Mysterious God grade monsters, which could cause mass destruction in any continent, in his eyes anymore. However, just as he saw the Mysterious God grade demon beast in the air, its name greatly shocked him.

War Demon Beast!!

One of the Demon Beast Clan’s 10 ancient demon beasts!!

Ling Chen had seen the War Demon Beast before – it was the first of the 10 ancient demon beasts that he had encountered. However, back in the Lonely Spirit Ridge, it had evidently been reduced to dust by Xi Ling’s [Heavenly Wrath of the Nine Suns], so how could it be here?!

The Demon Beast Clan had evidently been exterminated, so why were these demon beasts descending? Their numbers and the way they had appeared... were simply too shocking! Ling Chen simply couldn’t believe what was going on.

“Ding... Region Announcement! The Forgotten Continent has been attacked by the Demon Beast Clan. The dark figures descending from the sky are all powerful demon beasts, and there are a countless number of them! This is a terrifying disaster, so players should all make preparations to fight and help the Forgotten Continent’s residents beat back these demon beasts!”

A system announcement sounded across the entirety of the Forgotten Continent, and it sounded even more deafening than any system announcement before. This system announcement also told Ling Chen that these black dots covered the entire Forgotten Continent!!

Ling Chen looked up into the air, feeling incredibly shocked: just what was going on? The Demon Beast Clan had evidently been vanquished, so how could so many demon beasts appear? If they had existed this entire time in such monstrous numbers, it would have been impossible for them not to have been detected. And yet, these extinct demon beasts, as well as the War Demon Beast that Xi Ling had killed, had reappeared – just what was going on?!

The demon beasts in the air drew closer and closer to the ground on the Forgotten Continent, and a dark and suppressive air covered the entire Forgotten Continent. Ling Chen had long since destroyed the barrier around the Fairy Realm, and many demon beasts started to land towards the Fairy Fountain where Shui Ruo was sleeping.

“Go die!!” How could Ling Chen allow these demon beasts to taint the water that Shui Ruo was sleeping in? He instantly killed 3 demon beasts above the Fairy Fountain. After they died, these demon beasts did not leave behind any corpses; rather, they strangely turned into a puff of dark smoke and vanished.

“Qi Yue, what’s going on?” Ling Chen equipped the Shura Emperor Sword and Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, frowning as he looked at the descending demon beasts.

Qi Yue's expression was just as serious as Ling Chen's, and hearing Ling Chen's words, she shook her head after a slight pause. "I don't know, this is completely incomprehensible. Even if the Lunar Sky Hell, which contains countless evil beasts and spirits collapsed, there shouldn't be such a thing! This... This is like an invasion from another world."

"Invasion from another world"? Ling Chen frowned. At this moment, a powerful and familiar-looking shadow appeared in his vision.

It had a gigantic body and had a body and limbs like a human. However, its skin was unlike a human's at all. Its body was covered with a thick and heavy layer of dark armour, and even its entire face was covered by the dark armour, revealing only 2 eyes that glowed with a red-black light... the bestial and terrifying eyes gave off a dark and cold light that could make any being tremble. In its hand, it also held a spear that was covered with a dark light.

War Demon Beast!!

Chapter 783: Chaos In Ling Tian City

No matter if it was the appearance, aura, or name of the demon beast in front of Ling Chen, it was exactly the same as the War Demon Beast that he had encountered before.

“Don’t waste any words with it, little master, get rid of it immediately. It doesn’t even have consciousness!” Qi Yue, who was also staring at the War Demon Beast, suddenly said. As her words sounded out, the War Demon Beast’s body suddenly flashed with lightning as it unpleasantly roared and rushed towards Ling Chen, its spear gathering a dark lightning as it pierced towards where Ling Chen was.

Ling Chen coldly harrumphed and simultaneously activated [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames]. Before he even moved, he swept the Shura Emperor Sword and Lunar Scourge Divine Spear around him:

“Shattered Moon!”

“Eight Directions Annihilation!”

Boom! Boom!!

Before the War Demon Beast could even come near Ling Chen, it was sent flying like a bale of hay by the Shura’s terrifying power. It exploded in mid-air, turning into a puff of black fog, slowly disappearing. Within the energy light, all demon beasts within 5,000 metres were instantly killed, turning into black fog and disappearing.

Back when Ling Chen had first encountered the War Demon Beast, he had fallen into a hopeless situation that he couldn’t even run from. Now, it could not receive even a single blow from him. Ling Chen turned around, looked at Qi Yue, and said, “Qi Yue, did you discover something?”

Qi Yue slowly shook her head. “I don’t know where those demon

beasts came from. However, what I can confirm is that none of these demon beasts have a consciousness of their own. Within their minds, all they have is ‘destruction’! Most of these demon beasts went extinct 10,000 years ago, but they have now reappeared in large numbers, including the War Demon Beast that we saw Xi Ling kill... it’s as if they’re perfect clones of the demon beasts’ bodies and power!”

“Clones?” Ling Chen’s heart trembled.

“Because consciousnesses cannot be cloned, these clones don’t have their own consciousness. Rather, they’re filled with destructive intent... of course, that is just my guess. However, seeing these demon beasts that shouldn’t exist anymore, that’s the only possibility that I can think of!” Qi Yue said seriously.

“Clones... if they’re really clones like you say, then who cloned them? Putting aside the cloning of their bodies, even their powers were cloned... that War Demon Beast was no weaker than the one destroyed by Xi Ling! And the numbers... that’s imply impossible! What sort of person could have such abilities?!” Ling Chen said as he gnashed his teeth.

Qi Yue remained silent.

Ling Chen quickly took out a Moon God Hairpin and said worriedly, “White Snow, Purple Dress, Blue Heart! Wasn’t the Demon Beast Clan destroyed 10,000 years ago? Why is the Forgotten Continent suddenly being attacked by so many demon beasts? They’re all coming from the sky, and even demon beasts that I’ve destroyed before are showing up...”

“We know already!” The panic in White Snow’s voice was evident. “The Demon Beast Clan was indeed annihilated 10,000 years ago, and Purple Dress, Blue Heart, and I don’t know where these demon beasts came from or how they came here! However, they definitely haven’t been hiding for 10,000 years – otherwise, we definitely would have sensed them... the only explanation that

we can think of is that this is an invasion from another world!!”

“Invasion from another world?!” This answer was exactly the same as Qi Yue’s!

They had descended from the skies and had appeared in such large numbers. Moreover, these demon beasts could never have been in the Forgotten Continent this entire time... the only explanation was that they were invading from another world!

“Ling Tian! Ling Tian, where are you?!”

Li Xiao Xue’s frantic voice came from Ling Chen’s communication device, and Ling Chen quickly replied, “Xiao Xue, what’s the situation like over at Ling Tian City?”

“You heard the system announcement just then, right? Right now, countless demon beasts have descended in the Forgotten Continent, and there are at least 70,000 to 80,000 within Ling Tian City right now... their numbers and overall strength are simply terrifying! Outside the city, there are countless demon beasts gathering towards us, and within 1 hour, Ling Tian City will be attacked by no less than 500,000 demon beasts!! This is an incredibly sudden nightmare! Ling Tian City has fallen into complete chaos; hurry up and come back!!”

Ling Chen’s expression darkened, and he quickly picked up a Fairy gem, yelling, “Greenwood! Immediately send some high-level Fairies to protect the Fairy Realm... especially the Fairy Fountain! Don’t let any demon beasts touch the Fairy Fountain water!” After speaking, Ling Chen shattered a Spatial Orb and returned to Ling Tian City.

The space around him changed, and Ling Chen immediately heard the chaotic sounds of killing, shouting and roaring. Ling Tian City, which had been bustling with activity just 10 minutes earlier, had descended into complete chaos. The Business District, Entertainment District, Residential District, Leisure District, Battle District... and even the Central Administrative District were filled

with dark figures. They continuously gave ear-splitting roars, using their terrifying Darkness power to destroy multitudes of players and buildings. The lowest level among these demon beasts was LV80, and the lowest grade was 1 Star Elites.

Players found it exceedingly difficult to even deal with the weakest of these demon beasts, and there were also Lord grade, Celestial grade, and even Heaven's End grade monsters that were simply unkillable to normal players. Normally, it would be difficult to see even a single Celestial or Heaven's End grade monster in half a year or a year, and yet, they made up a significant percentage of the army of demon beasts. Every time they attacked was a horrifying nightmare for Ling Tian City, and a few minutes after they descended, Ling Tian City was already littered with players' corpses, and the streets and buildings were covered with destruction.

In the Administrative District, Fey, Xiao Qi, Dia Wu, and some high-level Fairies defended the structures there. That was where the least damage had been caused – this was especially because of Xiao Qi's Vermillion Bird's Flames, which countered the demon beasts. A massive ring of fire formed a defensive line that forced the demon beasts outside of the Administrative District.

“Just where did these demon beasts come from?!” Xiao Qi continuously released the Vermillion Bird's Flames, continuously sustaining the growing ring of fire, making it so that the demon beasts could not entire the Administrative District. The Administrative District was the core of Ling Tian City, and if this place was destroyed, all of Ling Tian City would fall. However, that meant that they were unable to protect the other Districts of Ling Tian City and could only desperately beat back the attacking demon beasts from where they were.

Bang! Bang! Bang!!

As dimensional fractures appeared accompanied by the sound akin to shattering glass, hundreds of low-grade demon beasts that

had been herded together were instantly crushed into nothing. Fey drew back her hand and said seriously, “I have no idea... I think even the Moon Goddesses would not be able to explain such a thing!”

At this moment, a savage, ear-piercing laughter sounded out as the surrounding temperature suddenly plummeted. Snowflakes started to descend from the sky, and they landed on Xiao Qi’s Vermillion Bird’s Flames, causing them to violently quiver then begin to die down.

A figure descended from the sky, landing in front of Xiao Qi and Fey. This was a tall woman who looked around 30 years old. She had a crown of ice and wore a set of blue crystal armour that gave off a faint blue light. Even her skin was a faint blue colour, and her looks were enough to attract most men. However, there was a haze between her brows that made one quiver when they looked at her, and the might that she gave off caused Xiao Qi and Fey to both feel quite shocked.

Ling Chen, who had just arrived, felt even more dumbfounded...

He had met this woman before... more accurately speaking, it was not a human but one of the 10 ancient demon beasts – the Ice Demon Beast who he had tricked into killing itself with the [Utter Despair Curse]!

Back when Xi Ling had destroyed the War Demon Beast, Ling Chen had been sent far away, so he did not personally see the War Demon Beast be incinerated into ashes... but Ling Chen had personally seen this Ice Demon Beast kill itself! And now, it had reappeared alive before him with the exact same aura and power!

Just what the hell was going on?!

“This Ice Demon Beast is the same as the War Demon Beast just then; it doesn’t have its own consciousness either! It’s merely a clone of the Ice Demon Beast that committed suicide,” Qi Yue said.

The Ice Demon Beast's descent caused Ling Tian City's Administrative District to fall into an icy haze. With how powerful the Ice Demon Beast was, a powerful skill from it was enough to freeze the entire Administrative District or even shatter it. By the time it had landed, Xiao Qi's Vermillion Bird's Flames were completely extinguished by the bone-piercing coldness. Xiao Qi was greatly shocked, and Fey frowned, instantly moving in front of Xiao Qi. "Leave here immediately as far as you can. I'll deal with it... this demon beast is at least Mysterious God grade!!"

Just as she spoke, a blinding silver light shot down from the air like a meteor, piercing through the Ice Demon Beast's body...

-10,401,728,400, -10,401,728,400.

"Arghhhhhhhh!!!!!!"

Just because the Ice Demon Beast did not have consciousness did not mean it did not have any nerves or a sense of pain. Under the 8 times pain, it gave a piercing scream, causing the air to tremble. As it screamed, the newly-arrived Ice Demon Beast's body cracked into pieces before exploding in a black fog. The demon beasts in the surrounding 1,000 metres were also hit by shockwaves and were instantly annihilated.

The 2 purple damage figures above the black fog caused Fey to stare for a whole 3 seconds before staring at Ling Chen and muttering, "Has this guy become a Bug..."

"Big brother Ling Tian!" Seeing Ling Chen, Xiao Qi happily cried out, her tense heart relaxing. Whenever she saw Ling Chen, even if the heavens were falling and the earth was splitting, she would not have to fear anything.

Ling Chen remained in the air, looking around him... now, Ling Tian City was simply massive, and it was not any smaller than the Forgotten Continent. However, with his monstrous eyesight, he was able to see the entire condition of Ling Tian City and even how many demon beasts there were within Ling Tian City. Following

this, Ling Chen closed his eyes and slowly spread out his arms as a berserk lightning flickered across his body.

“The tribulation lightning I absorbed earlier should be enough to destroy all of these demon beasts...”

Chapter 784: Shura's Might

Thunderclouds suddenly gathered above Ling Tian City, becoming a deep purple colour. Following this, as countless terrified cries sounded out, innumerable purple bolts of lightning fused into a massive curtain of lightning, descending towards Ling Tian City...

CRACK!!!!

The sound of countless lightning bolts piercing through the air caused the air in the surrounding 10 kilometres to violently tremble, and Ling Tian City was instantly bathed in a purple light.

Terrified screams filled every corner of Ling Tian City, and everyone closed their eyes in fear as they saw the lightning descend. At the same time, they all thought... that Ling Tian City was finished! The descending demon beasts were already a horrifying catastrophe, and this lightning, which covered the entirety of Ling Tian City, was thousands of times more terrifying. Under this sort of lightning, everyone would be completely annihilated, and Ling Tian City would also turn into dust.

However, 1 second passed... 2 seconds passed... the ground trembled and the crackling of lightning could be heard, but no players felt any discomfort, nor did they hear the system announcement telling them that they had died. They opened their eyes in surprise and discovered that the space around them had become a pure purple colour. However, the demon beasts that they had been desperately fighting against were struck by the lightning, turning into black fog. Players and NPCs were completely fine, and even the structures were not damaged at all.

Apart from some attacks, which did not differentiate from friend and foe, AOE attacks could lock onto certain targets and avoid certain targets. That way, one could hit all enemies within an area while not hitting their allies. However, the larger the area of a

skill, the more difficult it would be to control. If one did not precisely lock on to their targets, it was likely that they might injure allies or structures unintentionally.

Controlling an attack that covered an entire city to only fall on demon beasts and not harm anyone else or the structures was like an impossible story to anyone who heard about this. However, Ling Chen, with his monstrous mental energy, had done it. This lightning, which had covered the entirety of Ling Tian City, had only precisely struck demon beasts, and it had not mistakenly hit a single player, NPC, or structure. Moreover, this was not normal lightning. It was tribulation lighting that even the powerful Shura from 10,000 years ago could not resist; the highest-grade lightning in the entire Mystic Moon world. When Ling Chen had first become a Shura, he had received a baptism of tribulation lightning and had absorbed all of it into his Thunder God's Bulwark. This time, he unreservedly let it all out... even though it covered the entire city, it was still tribulation lightning – even if it was spread 10 times more, it would still have incomparably destructive power.

From the low-grade 1 Star Elites to the high-grade Celestial grade demon beasts, 70,000 or so demon beasts were completely obliterated by the tribulation lightning.

After the lightning disappeared, the fighting within Ling Tian City also ended, and the entire city fell into a few seconds of silence. Almost everyone stared around them, unable to believe what they had just seen... very soon, they subconsciously looked up into the air... after the lightning disappeared, there was only an orb of lightning that had not yet disappeared, and a figure proudly stood within it.

“Ling Tian... it's City Lord Ling Tian! He's back!!!” The Dwarf Clan's Chief Dilo hoarsely cheered.

“Just then, that calamity that destroyed the demon beasts... no, that lightning, which was even worse than a calamity, was released by him? How could a human have such terrifying power... even

the 3 Moon Goddesses wouldn't be able to do such a thing!" Chief Greenwood looked up in the air. As he cried out in shock, the Fairies beside him also looked up, their hearts trembling.

As for the players, they were so shocked that they could not manage a single word... the demon beasts, which had forced them into a bitter battle and were almost unkillable, had disappeared in the blink of an eye – was this really done by Ling Tian? As players who belonged to Ling Tian City, none of them were unfamiliar with the name 'Ling Tian', and none of them doubted his strength. However, they simply could not believe that a player's strength could reach such shocking levels... just then, that was an attack that had covered the entire city!! Even in sci-fi movies, they had rarely seen such a thing; how could such an attack come from a player?

Not all demon beasts within the city had been killed by the lightning. After Ling Chen briefly rested his mental energy, he felt that there were still 23 auras belonging to demon beasts within the city, and all of them were at least Heaven's End grade. The tribulation lightning from just then had not been able to kill them instantly. Even though the other demon beasts had all perished, Ling Tian City was still unable to deal with these 23 powerful Heaven's End grade demon beasts, and every second that they existed for could cause massive damage to Ling Tian City.

"Fey, I need to borrow your spatial power!" Ling Chen quickly said as he quickly rushed over to Fey.

Fey understood what Ling Chen wanted from his expression alone and gave a slight nod. She held onto Ling Chen's arm as the Lachesis flashed with the light of spatial power.

Whoosh!

As the light flashed, Fey and Ling Chen simultaneously appeared at the eastern part of Ling Tian City. In front of them was a Heaven's End grade 7-Winged Demon Beast. Ling Chen instantly

rushed up and did not even bother using the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear. He swung the Shura Emperor Sword and smashed it against the Heaven's End demon beast's face...

BOOM!!!

Insta-killed in just a split-second!

The 2 Fairy Clan's elders, who had been desperately defending against this powerful Heaven's End grade beast, had almost been unable to hold on. They saw a light flash as a massive explosion sounded out, following which the Heaven's End grade demon beast roared and turned into a black fog. When they saw Ling Chen standing there, holding the Shura Emperor Sword, their eyes bulged and lips trembled. They were so shocked that they could not speak.

With another 'whoosh', Fey brought Ling Chen elsewhere, and only after a long time did the 2 elders look towards each other and gulp.

"That damage just then... d-d-d-did you see it?"

"I... I saw it... even the Chief... even 10 Chiefs... wouldn't be able to deal that kind of damage... and that looked like a casual attack from City Lord Ling Tian... he didn't even use his other weapon..."

"Oh heavens, City Lord Ling Tian has become so... so powerful! To the point that it's incomprehensible! Could it be that the Moon God Clan was unable to do anything to him after hunting him down for so long, so they could only give up? That lightning from just then must have come from him as well... he's not just our Fairy Clan's benefactor, but our Clan following him... is simply our blessing..."

Boom!!

Boom!!!

Boom!!!!

Boom.....

The explosions sounded out rhythmically around Ling Tian City, and Fey would accurately bring Ling Chen in front of a Heaven's End grade demon beast each time. In the next second, the powerful Heaven's End grade demon beast would be insta-killed by Ling Chen. Even the 10 ancient demon beasts could not receive a single attack from Ling Chen, much less these Heaven's End grade scraps. At first, Fey was greatly shocked, but after insta-killing 10 in a row, she became numb to it and only focused on quickly bringing Ling Chen to more Heaven's End grade demon beasts.

After teleporting 23 times, the final Heaven's End grade demon beast fell at the Shura Emperor Sword. The whole process took less than 2 minutes.

This nightmarish crisis for Ling Tian City was resolved in just 3 minutes after Ling Chen had arrived.

This was the first time he had displayed a portion of the Shura's power after he had obtained it at the Moon God Island. Up until the final demon beast was killed, everyone was still unable to come back to their senses. After all, even though this disaster had come quite quickly, it had disappeared even faster to the point that it all felt like a dream.

“Is that really... Ling Tian?!”

Li Xiao Xue, Yun Meng Xin, and Su'Er were standing on the top floor of the main building in the Administrative District, and they had clearly seen Ling Chen release the lightning. When the purple lightning flashed and started destroying the demon beasts, they felt like it was simply a dream.

“Even the most powerful Boss in the Mystic Moon world shouldn't be so outrageously powerful,” Li Xiao Xue muttered, a look of disbelief on her face.

“That's why he's a man who no one can match,” Yun Meng Xin

laughed, her laugh filled with warmth and pride.

Li Xiao Xue gave her a deep look and also laughed before looking into the distance. “I was filled with anxiousness just then, but now, there’s not even a trace of worry left. Every time he comes back, he gives us a massive surprise, and this time was no exception – he nearly scared me to death. With such a monstrous existence, I suddenly feel sorry for those demon beasts gathering outside.”

Yun Meng Xin lightly smiled and nodded before picking up her communication device and saying softly, “Big brother, Alliance Master Xiao, and the 3 Heavenly Kings, the crisis within the city has been resolved; immediately transfer all of our defensive forces to the city gates. There are more and more demon beasts, and the Mountain Giant should not be able to hold out for much longer.”

When Yun Feng, Xiao Qiu Feng, Skyfall, and the others hurried to the city gates, the scene they saw left them completely dumbfounded.

A bird’s cry continuously sounded out, and the region in front of the city gates had become a sea of flames. There was a brilliant gold within the flames, and they extended as far as the eye could see, seeming simply boundless. Within the sea of flames, countless demon beasts struggled and howled before they turned into black fog.

The Mountain Giant stood by the side, dumbfoundedly staring at Xi Ling, who was continuously beating her wings. The Mountain Giant’s body was massive, and any casual attack could cause the earth to shake and mountains to tremble. However, Xi Ling, who was less than 0.001% of its size, could casually release blinding golden flames that extended so far that the Mountain Giant could not see the end of them. What’s more, flames were the counter to these demon beasts, and the demon beasts all perished wherever the golden flames extended. The Mountain Giant, who had almost been overwhelmed, did not even have an opportunity to attack anymore.

Ling Chen floated above the city gates, silently looking ahead. Xi Ling could easily kill anything below the Mysterious God grade, and she was 10 times more efficient than him at attacking like this. However, if there were any Mysterious God grade demon beasts, he would have to personally act... the War Demon Beast and Ice Demon Beast had already appeared, so it was possible that there were even more powerful demon beasts.

Looking at Ling Chen and Xi Ling, Yun Feng, Xiao Qiu Feng, and Skyfall stopped running, their expressions becoming stiff.

“He’s too overpowered... too overpowered...” Thinking of the lightning that had covered the entirety of Ling Tian City, Yun Feng couldn’t help but tremble.

“I suddenly... feel non-existent.” The ‘Cold Magistrate’ Xiao Qiu Feng, one of the members of the Heaven Rankings, felt completely speechless.

“Goddamnit... how are we meant to play this game in the future?!” Skyfall sharply breathed in.

Chapter 785: Crisis In The Forgotten Continent

The crisis within Ling Tian City had been resolved, and the demon beasts outside were unable to break through Xi Ling's defensive line.

However, Ling Chen continued to deeply frown. With him and Xi Ling present, the demon beasts were unable to threaten Ling Tian City at all. However, these demon beasts had not only descended in Ling Tian City but also throughout the entire Forgotten Continent. If there were so many demon beasts gathered around Ling Tian City in such a short amount of time, the number of demon beasts throughout the entire Forgotten Continent would be a terrifying number. Ling Tian City was currently fine, but other places... were definitely experiencing devastating catastrophes! A single Heaven's End grade demon beast was enough to cause a disaster, and among these demon beasts, there were many Heaven's End grade beasts, and Ling Chen had even seen 2 Mysterious God grade beasts. The players were completely defenceless in front of them, and even NPCs would not be able to stop them so easily...

It was possible that the Forgotten Continent was currently being torn apart by these disasters!

What made Ling Chen the most furious was that... after these demon beasts turned into black fog, not only did they not drop any spoils of war, but they also didn't even give any EXP, Fame, or SP!

While Ling Tian City's crisis had been resolved, the Forgotten City was in complete chaos.

When the demon beasts had descended, the Forgotten City's defensive mechanisms had instantly activated. However, the average strength of the demon beasts had far exceeded anything that they had expected, and not too long after they started fighting, the City Guards had been completely suppressed.

However, the Forgotten City was the human Royal City, and the City Guards were quite powerful and had the advantage of being in their own territory. There were also many human experts within the city, and the demon beasts were gradually destroyed. A firm defensive line was set up outside the city, stopping any demon beasts from entering from outside.

White Eagle and Black Demon, the Forgotten City's 2 Mysterious God grade experts, defended stoutly in front of the city gates, becoming the core strength of the forces stopping the demon beasts from entering. However, there were simply too many demon beasts, and there were even many Celestial grade and Heaven's End grade demon beasts. Even though White Eagle and Black Demon had Mysterious God grade power, defending still took a great toll on them.

“What’s going on... haven’t these demon beasts already gone extinct... do the heavens want to destroy our Forgotten City?!” The Forgotten Emperor stood on the city walls, continuously crying out. From the heights at which he was standing, he could clearly see the demon beasts rushing here from afar – their numbers were simply innumerable. If this continued, the Forgotten City’s defensive line would fall sooner or later. What’s more, if this was so for the Forgotten City, which had such powerful defences, what would happen to the Azure Dragon City, Vermillion Bird City, Black Tortoise City, and White Tiger City? Even if their guardian beasts appeared, it would be impossible for them to stop so many demon beasts.

At this moment, a black fog suddenly appeared above the demon beast army. The black fog twisted and turned, turning into a terrifying black figure... if Ling Chen was there, he would have instantly recognised it...

Shadow Demon Beast!!

This was the Shadow Demon Beast that had been killed by the Shura’s remnant spirit at the Moon God Ruins!

The instant that the Shadow Demon Beast appeared, a dark, gloomy aura covered more than half of the Forgotten City. White Eagle and Black Demon, who had been desperately killing demon beasts, felt a heavy suppression on their chests. When they raised their heads to look at the black figure, their hearts chilled... this aura told them that this demon beast's strength vastly surpassed theirs... it was at least an advanced Mysterious God grade being!!

Savage, ear-piercing laughter sounded out as the black figure suddenly exploded, covering the entire sky and sun, causing the Forgotten City's city gates to fall into darkness. The Darkness power immediately went berserk, mercilessly devouring hundreds of City Guards who screamed in despair. White Eagle and Black Demon fell to the ground with moderate injuries, and they felt even more shocked... they were both Mysterious God grade existences, but even if they worked together, they were not a match for this demon beast! This demon beast was able to destroy the Forgotten City alone.

“Moon God Light Phoenix Slash!!”

A cold and tender yell sounded out from the air as a brilliant silver light descended from the sky, piercing through the curtain of Darkness power, shooting towards the Shadow Demon Beast and hundreds of other demon beasts. The surroundings instantly became bright again, and the Shadow Demon Beast was knocked back by 100 metres, giving a furious roar. The lower-grade demon beasts roared in pain before turning into black fog and vanishing.

In front of the Forgotten City, an extremely beautiful woman wearing a Moon God Light Dress and holding a Moon God Staff appeared there. Seeing her, the Forgotten Emperor cried out with joy, “Lady Forgotten God Representative... it's Lady Moon God Representative! Lady Moon God Representative, please save our Forgotten City!”

The Forgotten God Representative looked at the demon beast army and frowned with worry. She advanced, once again attacking

the Shadow Demon Beast that was at a loss as to what to do. Because her power countered it, she could naturally suppress the Shadow Demon Beast, but it would take some time. Right now, she had to suppress it, or its power would cause a calamity for the Forgotten City.

However, before she came close to the Shadow Demon Beast, its body flashed with a large and a small orb of deep, black light. The black light quickly formed 2 figures: one that was exactly the same as the Shadow Demon Beast, and one that was much taller than the Shadow Demon Beast and was covered with dark, scale-like armour and had 8 jet-black wings. There was also an even darker and eviler aura coming from it.

The Forgotten God Representative suddenly stopped, staring ahead in shock, “S-Sky Demon Beast! And... 2 Shadow Demon Beasts... just what is going on?!”

The Forgotten God Representative could barely win against the Shadow Demon Beast, but the Sky Demon Beast was the most powerful demon beast out of the 10 ancient demon beasts. Even the Forgotten God Representative would find it difficult to win against it. Now, there were 2 Shadow Demon Beasts and a Sky Demon Beast – this sort of impossible combination caused the Forgotten God Representative to feel incredibly shocked.

An aura of despair covered the Forgotten God Representative and the entire Forgotten City. Facing a Sky Demon Beast and 2 Shadow Demon Beasts, let alone defeat them, she didn’t even have the power to stop them. However, the Forgotten God Representative was a Moon God Representative, so she could not retreat no matter what. She frowned as her body shone with a brilliant Moon God light, raising her strength to the extreme... at this moment, a voice that was as soft and gentle as snowflakes came from above, “Cai Ling, go to the Vermillion Bird City; they need you there. Leave this place to me.”

This voice caused the Forgotten God Representative’s body to

tremble, hardly daring to believe her ears. She looked up at White Snow, who no one had noticed, and excitedly called out, “L-Lady Moon Goddess!!”

Hearing the Forgotten God Representative call out the words ‘Moon Goddess’, the Forgotten Emperor’s body swayed, and he became so excited that he lost the strength in his legs and fell on his bottom as his eyes widened. Below, the injured White Eagle and Black Demon’s bodies froze as they gaped.

What sort of existence was a Moon Goddess? It was a synonym for the highest authority and greatest power in the world. Even for the human Emperor, seeing a Moon God Representative was an incredible honour, but seeing a Moon Goddess... he simply couldn’t believe it! Moon Gods and Goddesses were legendary existences, and no human had seen one in thousands of years.

“L-L-Lady Moon Goddess... p-please save the Forgotten City...” The Forgotten Emperor was so emotional that his entire body trembled, and he could barely speak coherently; even tears started to flow out of his eyes. He lowered his head, not daring to look at the Moon Goddess in the air for fear that he would commit blasphemy against her. At the same time, the fear within his heart disappeared... now that a Moon Goddess had personally descended, there was hope for the Forgotten City! In this world, there was nothing that a Moon Goddess could not do!

“Purple Dress is at the Azure Dragon City and Blue Heart is at the Black Tortoise City. We’ll leave the Vermillion Bird City and White Tiger City to you Moon God Representatives. This disaster is even worse than the disaster from 10,000 years ago. The other clans can protect themselves, but the humans are the weakest, so we need to focus our strength on protecting the main cities. Go now,” Moon Goddess White Snow said to the Forgotten God Representative as she nodded.

“Yes!” The Forgotten God Representative respectfully replied and vanished in a white light.

White Snow looked towards the demon beast army and gave a long sigh. She raised her hand, and instantly, the sky became many times brighter, raining down brilliant white light in the nearby 10 kilometres. Following this, pillars of light that were several metres thick descended, smashing down into the ground in the 10 kilometres around White Snow...

“Be cleansed, evil beings – Heaven’s Judgment!!” As Moon Goddess White Snow chanted, the pillars of light simultaneously exploded, turning the 10 kilometres around the Forgotten City into a world of light. The intense light of holiness rushed to the sky, drowning out all beings’ vision.

Apart from Xi Ling and the Shura’s power, the cleansing power from Moon Goddess White Snow was the most powerful energy in the entire Mystic Moon world. Within the world of light, the Sky Demon Beast and Shadow Demon Beasts painfully screamed, and the demon beasts below Mysterious God grade felt their bodies slowly crumbling and separating until they disappeared, looking as if the light was devouring the darkness.

The Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon, as well as all of the City Guards, squeezed their eyes shut, unable to open their eyes because of the brilliant light.

After a while, the suppression that made it difficult for them to breathe finally disappeared without a trace. In the air, the Sky Demon Beast and the 2 Shadow Demon Beasts were still floating there, but they were in a pitiful state. Even though they hadn’t been cleansed, there was still white light around them that had not yet disappeared, continuously devouring their lifeforce and power, causing them to scream in pain.

300,000 demon beasts... from 1 Star Elites to Heaven’s End grade, had been cleansed by the holy light in less than half a minute, and they had completely disappeared.

“As expected from L-Lady Moon Goddess...” The Forgotten

Emperor's voice and body simultaneously trembled. Below, White Eagle and Black Demon's expressions froze... they were peak experts among humans, but after seeing one of the most powerful beings in the Mystic Moon world attack, they were so shocked that their souls nearly left their bodies.

“Roar!!!!”

The 3 furious demon beasts gave a berserk roar, rushing towards the Forgotten City with the white light still around them. At the same time, the 3 demon beasts created a curtain of dark light that flew towards the Forgotten City. White Snow's eyebrows slightly lifted and waved her snow-white hands, causing the Darkness power to disappear. She flicked three fingers on her left hand as her Moon God power condensed into energy spears that flew towards the 3 demon beasts.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

The sound of space being torn sounded out as 3 energy spears pierced through the 3 demon beasts, who were unable to react in time. However, they did not pierce through them, nor did they disappear – they remained in the 3 demon beasts' bodies. As White Snow moved her fingers, the 3 demon beasts were once again covered with a cleansing light.

Light energy was the greatest counter to Darkness element monsters, and the pain that the demon beasts felt from being covered with a Moon Goddesses' cleansing light was thousands of times worse than being cut and pierced by tens of thousands of knives. At the same time, their Darkness power was sealed, and they fell from the air, smashing into the ground. They rolled around in pain while wailing, and let alone attack, they couldn't even stand up.

Chapter 786: Demon Emperors Everywhere

Even though the Sky Demon Beast and Shadow Demon Beast were incredibly powerful and could destroy the entire Forgotten City together, against a Moon Goddess, who was a grade above them, they were unable to retaliate at all. Moon Goddess White Snow flicked her hand, sending the 3 demon beasts sprawling kilometres away.

The ground in front of the Forgotten City had been greatly ravaged. Wave after wave of demon beasts flooded over from the distance, but before they could come close, they were completely obliterated by Moon Goddess White Snow's power. If they were real demon beasts, they would have long since been scared witless and escaped pitifully. However, these demon beasts did not have any consciousness, and they only wanted to destroy more creatures. As such, even though they were continuously destroyed by Moon Goddess White Snow, they continued to rush up and attack.

If the Sky Demon Beast and Shadow Demon Beasts had turned and ran, in order to protect the Forgotten City, Moon Goddess White Snow would not have been able to do anything to them. After all, even though she was a Moon Goddess, she would not be able to kill them quickly, but their refusal to run away was a death sentence for them. Their HP quickly fell from Moon Goddess White Snow's holy attacks. In less than 15 minutes, they, and a large group of normal demon beasts, were finally vanished amidst a white cleansing light.

“As expected... As expected from Lady Moon Goddess... she's even more powerful than the legends say...” The Forgotten Emperor looked up into the air with a trembling gaze, looking at this legendary figure as he muttered in excitement. Today, he had seen how powerful a ‘god’ was.

After the Sky Demon Beast and the 2 Shadow Demon Beasts were

vanquished, no matter how many of the remaining demon beasts there were, they were unable to threaten the Moon Goddess White Snow at all. She looked into the distance, but even with her extraordinary eyesight, she could not see where the demon beast army ended. She sighed and was about to advance when suddenly, a dark light flashed where the Sky Demon Beast and 2 Shadow Demon Beasts had disappeared, causing her to pause and frown.

Within the flashing dark light, multiple figures started to take form. When the dark light disappeared, 7 figures appeared before White Snow...

“Earth Demon Beast, Flame Demon Beast, Ice Demon Beast, Rage Demon Beast, War Demon Beast, Wind Demon Beast, and Tyrant Demon Beast!”

After the 2 Shadow Demon Beasts and Sky Demon Beast disappeared, another 7 of the 10 ancient demon beasts simultaneously appeared. This caused even White Snow, who had 18,000 years of experience, to feel deeply shocked. However, this shock did not mean that she felt any fear. With her strength, even if the 10 ancient demon beasts all appeared, they would not be a match for her.

However, the 7 ancient demon beasts appearing was not the end of things. Just as White Snow was about to release her cleansing light, the darkened sky suddenly became completely dark, and the chaotic airstream seemed to freeze... in the distance, even the clamouring demon beast army suddenly fell silent...

The atmosphere became incredibly suppressive, and the silence was like the moment before a massive storm came.

“What... What’s going on?” White Eagle and Black Demon pressed up against the city wall, their bodies violently trembling. As peak existences in the human world, there were very few things in the world that could cause them to feel fear. However, at this moment, their whole existences trembled from their bodies to

their souls even though they didn't know what they were so fearful of. This was an instinctive fear that came before a terrifying catastrophe.

Dark clouds swirled in the sky, forming the face of a savagely laughing demon. Following this, 3 orbs of dark light that were darker than the darkest night appeared, revealing 3 tall figures, and it was as if they were the most fearsome demon emperors from hell. A powerful dark and evil aura covered the land... and seemed to cover the entire Forgotten Continent...

The figures in the dark light were humanoid, but they were taller than a normal human. The 3 faces were exactly the same, and they looked like a normal human's face. However, they gave off a chilling and savage air, and their skin was a terrifying black colour. The sinister aura coming from them was powerful enough to cause the space around them to tremble.

Seeing these 3 descended figures, Moon Goddess White Snow's expression stiffened, and her pupils contracted until they were as small as a needle's point. A shocked cry escaped from her lips.

“Demon... Emperor?!”

The Demon Emperor, the Emperor of the Demon Beast Clan. It had incredible power, and its strength was at the same level as the 3 Moon Goddesses. 10,000 years ago, it had died due to the Golden Crow's flames, which had devoured its lifeforce, as well as the 3 Moon Goddesses' combined attacks. Its death also represented the demise of the Demon Beast Clan. Over the past 10,000 years, only 3 beings that could stand on the same level as the 3 Moon Goddesses had appeared: the Underworld King, the Sea Emperor, and the Demon Beast Clan's Demon Emperor. Back then, White Snow had personally fought with the Demon Emperor and had seen it die, so even though 10,000 years had passed, her memories of the Demon Emperor were still incredibly clear.

This figure in front of her, no matter if it was its appearance,

strength, or aura... was exactly the same as the Demon Emperor's from back then!!

If it was just the Demon Emperor appearing, White Snow would have felt shocked but not to the point that she was completely dumbfounded. However, right now, there were 3 Demon Emperors in front of her... and all 3 of them were exactly the same as the Demon Emperor in her memories and were just as powerful. Currently, she felt suppressed by the 3 Demon Emperor's combined power. Against a single Demon Emperor, she would not have felt any pressure, but despite being a Moon Goddess, it was impossible for her to deal with 3 Demon Emperors. Feeling the suppression from their auras, White Snow's face started to pale.

Just what was going on? How could the Demon Emperor appear here... and 3 of them at once... could it be that all of this was a horrible nightmare?

As waves of shock crashed within White Snow's heart, Purple Dress's deeply shocked voice sounded out within her mind, "White Snow, 13 ancient demon beasts have appeared over here, as well as 3 Demon Emperors... I swear I'm telling the truth; hurry and come support us over here!"

As Purple Dress' voice sounded out, Blue Heart's panicked voice also rang in White Snow's mind, "White Snow, Purple Dress... the Demon Emperor! There are 2 Demon Emperors on my side, as well as many, many ancient demon beasts... ahh what's going on... hurry and help me; it's impossible for me to defeat 2 Demon Emperors..."

"... Lady Moon Goddesses! 2 terrifying demons have appeared at the White Tiger City, and they're exactly like the records of the Demon Emperor... Lady Moon Goddesses, please come and save us..."

"... Lady Moon Goddesses! 3 terrifying demons have appeared at the Vermillion Bird City, and... they're exactly the same as the

records of the Demon Emperor... it's impossible for us to stop them..."

White Snow: "!!!!"

The large numbers of ancient demon beasts had already left her greatly shocked, and even Demon Emperors, which were far stronger than the ancient demon beasts, started appearing in large numbers... the Demon Emperor's strength was also at the peak in this world, and perhaps only 1 such creature would appear in 10,000 years. What's more, it had already been destroyed by the 3 Moon Goddesses, and even if it had survived and the Demon Beast Clan had been in hiding for 10,000 years, it was impossible for so many more Demon Emperors to appear. If such peak level power could appear so easily, how could it be called peak level power? It was because of their peak level power that the 3 Moon Goddesses and the Moon God Clan were able to reign above everything else in the Mystic Moon world.

However, the reality was that this sort of peak level demon had appeared in large numbers.

White Snow's heart trembled. There were more than 10 Demon Emperors that they knew of... 10 Demon Emperors with peak level strength were enough to suppress the entire Moon God Clan and destroy the entire Mystic Moon world. This sort of power should not, and could not, exist. The Demon Emperor, who had definitely died, simply couldn't disobey the laws of order and reappear... and these Demon Emperors were completely the same, as were the ancient demon beasts... it was as if they were clones!

These 10 or so Demon Emperors were only the ones that had been reported; there were definitely more throughout the Forgotten Continent... White Snow's heart sank – if this wasn't a nightmare, it might not just be the Forgotten Continent that could be destroyed but the entire Mystic Moon world.

"Purple Dress, Blue Heart, do your best; we have no other

choice...” After giving a long sigh, White Snow sent a message to Purple Dress and Blue Heart. A holy light shone from her body as Moon God Spears appeared in her left and right hands before she rushed at the 3 black figures that were about to land on the ground.

In front of the Forgotten City, the battle between the Moon Goddess of Fate and the 3 Demon Emperors erupted...

.....

The news that the Forgotten Continent had suffered an invasion of demon beasts quickly spread across the whole world. Amidst all of the shock and dismay, most players from other countries felt a sense of schadenfreude. This was especially so for the players from countries who had felt threatened by the Chinese players’ growth – they felt incredibly joyful and refreshed. When they heard that this disaster might result in the disaster of the entire Forgotten Continent, they became delirious with joy. They were almost unable to do anything except stare at media reports, enjoying the scenes of the Forgotten Continent being ravaged by demon beasts.

Half an hour after the demon beasts descended, the Chinese government sent a complaint to the Cosmos Corporation but was completely ignored. The other countries started to mock them, calling it a ‘random disaster event’ from the game, that it was a ‘test’ for the Chinese players, and that there was no reason for the Chinese government to blame the Cosmos Corporation.

In front of Ling Tian City.

Under Xi Ling’s flames, the number of demon beasts who had been incinerated were too many to count. However, the demon beasts’ numbers were simply innumerable, and they continuously flooded towards Ling Tian City. However, not a single one of them had been able to break past Xi Ling’s defensive line. Millions of players defended in front of the city gates, but they did not need to attack at all, and they almost fell asleep.

Until...

10 or so glows of dark light suddenly appeared within the demon beast army. Following this, 11 ancient demon beasts appeared, savagely roaring. Behind them, 2 Demon Emperors silently appeared.

“Eh? Demon Emperor?”

The instant the Demon Emperors appeared, Qi Yue cried out in surprise.

The pressure that these 2 Demon Emperors gave off were no weaker than the Underworld King’s aura or the 3 Moon Goddesses’ auras, causing Ling Chen to frown, and he shot forwards like a bolt of lightning.

“Xi Ling, come back!!”

Chapter 787: Demon Emperor x 2

“What are those? Even more powerful demons?” Seeing Ling Chen personally rush up, Xiao Qi asked hesitantly.

“The Demon Beast Clan’s most powerful ancient demon beasts are only Mysterious God grade at most! This time, 11 of them appeared!” Fey said seriously. After gazing at the 2 Demon Emperors behind the ancient demon beasts, her frown became even deeper.

“11... Mysterious... Mysterious God grade monsters?!” Yun Feng gulped as he started to stutter. Even Heaven’s End grade monsters were invincible existences to them, while Mysterious God grade monsters... were simply things of the legends.

“If it was just those 11 Mysterious God grade monsters, then things wouldn’t be so bad, but those 2 behind them... their auras are above the Saint Destroyer grade, and they aren’t weaker than the Moon Goddesses! Within the Demon Beast Clan, only the Demon Emperor is this powerful!” Fey continued to say.

“W-What?!” This time, everyone’s faces were covered with shock.

“But according to the Forgotten Continent’s Chronicles, weren’t the Demon Beast Clan and Demon Emperor destroyed 10,000 years ago? How could they suddenly appear, and how could there be 2 Demon Emperors?” Yun Meng Xin asked in shock. She was the person who was most familiar with the Forgotten Continent’s Chronicles.

Fey shook her head, a complex look in her eyes. “I want to know the answer to this more than anyone.”

“W-What should we do then? That’s 11 Mysterious God grade ancient demon beasts, as well as 2 monsters that are as powerful as the Moon Goddesses... so scary, I don’t think anyone can defeat

them. Will big brother Ling Tian be in great danger?” Xiao Qi said worriedly.

“That’s right, this sort of line-up is simply too heaven-defying,” Li Xiao Xue said as she slightly nodded. “If this is the condition at Ling Tian City, then there must be many more of these ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors throughout the entire Forgotten Continent. Even if the Moon God Clan descends, it will be difficult to take care of all of them.” She paused before looking at Ling Chen, who was rushing towards the 11 ancient demon beasts and the 2 Demon Emperors. “We can only hope that the current Ling Tian has surpassed the Moon Goddesses and can now suppress these ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors.”

Surpass the Moon Goddesses... everyone felt completely sceptical... was it really possible to surpass the most powerful beings in this world?

None of them really dared to think of such a thing. Even Fey, who understood Ling Chen the most, did not fully believe that Ling Chen could really surpass the Moon Goddesses. After all, the level of the Moon Goddesses was simply too high to the point that they were at the absolute peak, and there was nothing that could surpass them.

However, the following scene caused everyone to feel as if they had been petrified.

“Burning Heart Blood Massacre!”

“Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames!”

The dark clouds in the sky rumbled and gathered above Ling Chen – this was the scene before tribulation lightning would strike. However, after gathering, no lightning descended. By this time, Ling Chen had reached the 11 ancient demon beasts and 2 Demon Emperors. He did not waste any words, and he held the Shura Emperor Sword in his left hand and the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear in his right as 2 powerful lights of power covered the ancient

demon beasts and Demon Emperors...

“Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest!!”

“Shattered Moon!”

“Ding... the Libra Orb’s effects have been activated, [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] and [Shattered Moon]’s cooldown times have been reset.”

“Ding... the Aries Orb’s effects have been activated, [Peerless] and [Shattered Moon]’s negative effects have been nullified.”

The War God, Shura and Lunar Scourge’s power simultaneously exploded out, causing the heavens to tremble and earth to quake, as the 5,000 metres around Ling Chen became a destructive hell...

-5,314,264,000, -5,668,548,000, -5,668,548,000.

-5,314,264,000, -5,668,548,000, -5,668,548,000.

.....

[Shattered Moon]’s effects could cover the 5,000 metres around Ling Chen, and adding on [Peerless], which activated it twice, the low-grade demon beasts to the 11 powerful ancient demon beasts were all instantly crushed into nothing. Within the berserk energy, they were repeatedly crushed into smaller and smaller pieces until they became as small as dust... in the end, there was not even a trace of those demon beasts left.

The area in front of Ling Tian City became deathly silent. Seeing this scene, all players felt as if they had lost their souls, and they gaped with their mouths open.

“T-T-T-T-This...”

“I-Insta-killed... those Mysterious God grade demons... were all... insta-killed?!”

“Am I... hallucinating?”

“Did you see that damage? That was more than 5 billion damage... i-it was in the billions!!”

“Are your eyes broken? Those were 3 damage figures... that were all in the billions... and with such a large range... my goodness, have I gone mad?!”

“Can the Moon Goddesses... insta-kill those ancient demon beasts?” Li Xiao Xue muttered in a low voice beside Fey.

After remaining silent for a while, Fey slowly shook her head. “Of course they can’t; in this world, there’s nothing that can insta-kill an ancient demon beast... this sort of power is hundreds of times more powerful than the Moon Goddesses! Let alone the ancient demon beasts, even the Demon Emperor or Moon Goddesses can’t take a few of those hits!! What’s more, that was an AOE skill. If it was a skill with a smaller AOE or even a single-target attack, perhaps his power is even more terrifying!!

“This is... the Shura’s power? No... it’s much more terrifying than the Shura recorded in the legends... if the Shura from 10,000 years ago was this powerful, the Moon God Clan and the Void Dragon God would not have been able to kill him.” The shock on Fey’s face did not disappear. After being completely fine despite being hunted by the Moon God Clan for a month, Fey had suspicions that Ling Chen had become as powerful as the Moon Goddesses after obtaining the Shura’s power, if not slightly more powerful. She had never thought that he would have reached such a heaven-defying level.

Indeed, even though he was a Shura, Ling Chen’s current overall strength had far surpassed the Shura from 10,000 years ago. This was because Ling Chen had 2 more Saint Orbs than the Shura from back then, which meant that he had the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear and the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour. Putting aside the stats that these 2 Saint Orbs gave, just those 2 pieces of equipment were so heaven-defying that the system could not tell their grade, and they were sufficient to allow Ling Chen to cover the sky with

one hand in the Mystic Moon world.

After Ling Chen's first round of attacks, the mighty demon beast army vanished into nothing, with only the 2 newly-arrived Demon Emperors left. Facing these 2 Demon Emperors, who had peak level strength, Ling Chen calmly smiled and did not look nervous or fearful at all.

[Demon Emperor]: Type: Emperor of Demon Beasts, Grade: Super Saint Destroyer, Level: LV100, HP: 96,000,000,000. A being of utmost evil created from evil Darkness power. It madly absorbed evil Darkness power for 30,000 years, growing into a extreme demon-type creature that contains Darkness power that can destroy the heavens and ruin the earth. After it appeared in the Forgotten Continent, it attracted many demon-type followers, and it created the massive Demon Beast Clan, causing a disaster in the Forgotten Continent 10,000 years ago. However, it was heavily injured by the Moon God Clan and burned and tortured to death by the Golden Crow's flames of the Nine Suns. It has reappeared with destructive intent through unknown means.

Passive Abilities: Immune to all debuffs and abnormal statuses, absorbs 100% of Darkness attacks, and possesses 80% Resistance to Water, Wind, Lightning and Earth. All Darkness attacks contain a powerful Corrosion and Destruction element. When in dark environments, Physical Attack Damage and Magic Attack Damage are increased by 10%. Recovers 1,000,000 HP per second and 100,000 MP per second.

Attack Skills: [Swallow the Heavens and Devour the Earth], [Darkness Abyss], [Pale Hell], [Ghost Prison], [Heavens Weep], [Cursed Claws], [Death Spiral], [Demon's Wings], [Divine Demon Possession], [Demon Absolute Command], [Demon Blade]

Ultimate Skills: [Darkness Funeral Song], [Eternal Calamity Reincarnation Formation]

Weaknesses: Fears Fire and Light attacks

The Demon Emperor was undeniably powerful, and putting aside its powerful and destructive attacks, just its HP, which was nearly 100 billion, was enough to make most creatures' faces pale. After looking at its stats, Ling Chen gave a condescending, cold laugh, "So it's really the Demon Emperor. Screw off back to where you came from!!"

"Moon Shadow!!"

Just as the 2 Demon Emperors were about to attack Ling Chen, they were frozen by Moon Shadow. However, this was not because Ling Chen feared their attacks – with the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour, even if 10 Demon Emperors attacked him together, he would not even frown. It was just that the Demon Emperor's attacks were simply too monstrous, and a wave of Darkness power would be able to deal massive damage to Ling Tian City, which was behind him. Moreover, they were simply too close to Ling Tian City, so Ling Chen did not even want to give them an opportunity to attack. The instant Moon Shadow took effect, he rushed up and slashed out 2 [Shura's Merciless Slashes] at the 2 Demon Emperors.

-1,417,000,000, -1,417,000,000, -1,417,000,000.

-1,417,000,000, -1,417,000,000, -1,417,000,000.

With [Burning Heart Blood Massacre], Ling Chen's Attack Speed was 300, meaning that he could unleash 3 rounds of attacks every second. Adding on the fact that he could dual-wield and had [Peerless], it was not an exaggeration to describe his attacks as a tempest. The rapidly rising damage figures caused all of the players in front of Ling Tian City to feel completely dumbfounded.

"Eight Directions Annihilation... Shura's Instant Hellish Annihilation... Shura's Exterminating Slash..."

Ling Chen weaved some ultimate skills amidst the Shura's normal attacks, and he landed 5 rounds of attacks in 5 seconds. Adding on the massive damage he had dealt from the 2 ultimate skills previously, he had reduced the 2 Demon Emperors' HP from

over 96 billion to less than 60%. When Moon Shadow's light was about to disappear, Ling Chen once again coldly laughed as a bloody light exploded from his body, and his weapons lightly slashed out...

“Sacrificial Slaughter!”

“Soul Demise!!”

BOOM!!!!!!

-34,560,000,000, -24,000,000,000!!

-34,560,000,000, -24,000,000,000!!

One attack reduced their HP by 36%, while the other wiped out 25% of their HP. The 2 Demon Emperors, which had more than half of their HP remaining, were instantly killed. After finally escaping from Moon Shadow, they did not even have the chance to move their bodies or cry out before they turned into 2 balls of black fog and vanished.

From the moment that the 11 ancient demon beasts and the 2 Demon Emperors had appeared, only 10 or so seconds had passed. The Shura and the Lunar Scourge's might had been fully revealed during those short 10 seconds.

Seeing those 2 disappearing balls of black fog, Ling Tian City's players stared with incredulity, unable to believe that the 2 Demon Emperors, who were each as strong as a Moon Goddess... had been annihilated by Ling Chen so effortlessly.

“Ling Tian... has really surpassed the heavens, as his name claims. This disaster, which should have been impossible to resolve, has been perfectly dealt with by him,” Fey muttered to herself while smiling as she looked at Ling Chen. “10,000 years ago, the Shura caused a catastrophe, while today... a Shura is going to save the world.”

Chapter 788: Divine Might, Underworld God Cannon

Back then, in order to kill the Demon Emperor and destroy the Demon Beast Clan, the Fairy Clan, as well as holy beast Golden Crow, had expended a great amount of thought and effort, and it had taken many years.

To all who were watching, those 10 seconds made them feel as if the heavens and earth were splitting and the rivers were flowing backwards. This was especially so for the Fairies who knew just how powerful the Demon Emperor was – their jaws nearly hit the ground.

When Ling Chen flew back and landed before them, no one said anything for a long time, and their gazes towards Ling Chen became completely different... the Moon Goddesses were referred to as ‘gods’, and no one had ever doubted their reputation as ‘gods’, while the Demon Emperor was an existence on the same level as them. Today, Ling Chen had completely suppressed those Demon Emperors, so what did that make him? A god among gods?

“Ling Tian, y-y-y-you should change your name to Ni Tian!” Yun Feng shrieked. [TLN: Ni Tian/逆天 means heaven-defying/against the heavens/against the sky]

“Err, but that’s my name,” Skyfall Dynasty’s Against The Sky said weakly.

“Who cares!” Skyfall and Judging Sky simultaneously slapped Against The Sky. In terms of strength, Against the Sky was definitely one of the top players, and he was among the top 20 in China. However, compared to Ling Chen... he was more worthless than a fart.

“Big brother Ling Tian! You’re so, so, so, so, so powerful!! You can even insta-kill Mysterious God grade demon beasts, and even

the terrifying Demon Emperors were easily defeated by you... Wow!! You're simply invincible!" Xiao Qi cheered with a slightly pink face, her eyes full of little stars of worship and adoration.

"Mhmm, mhmm!" Su'Er rapidly nodded, her hands clasped in front of her chest with just as many stars in her eyes as Xiao Qi.

Chief Greenwood sighed in amazement, "When you broke through the Fairy Realm's barrier, I knew that you were destined to be extraordinary. However, in less than 1 year, you've grown to a height that we can no longer comprehend. The power you've displayed is something that no one has ever obtained in the past, nor will anyone obtain in the future. I'm very curious just what you experienced to reach a height that we can't even look up to."

"So amazing..." Xuanyuan Dia Wu gave a light smile that was filled with delight and pride.

Yun Meng Xin quickly walked up and said somewhat worriedly, "Ling Tian, I just received news that it's not just our Ling Tian City that has been attacked: the Forgotten City, Azure Dragon City, Vermillion Bird City, Black Tortoise City, and White Tiger City have all been attacked by many ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors, and there are even more of them than the ones that appeared at Ling Tian City. Even though the Moon God Clan has moved out, including the 3 Moon Goddesses, the Demon Emperors are simply too powerful, and the Moon Goddesses are unable to stop them. Right now, the Royal City and the 4 main cities are facing a crisis... Ling Tian, only you can save them."

Hearing Yun Meng Xin's words, Ling Chen did not feel surprised at all. Since ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors had even appeared at Ling Tian City, it was extremely likely that they would appear at the other main cities and that there would be even more of them. Even if White Snow, Blue Heart, and Purple Dress personally fought, it would be impossible for them to defeat them. It was just that... Ling Chen looked at the rapidly-nearing demon beast army, and he didn't nod. He did not know many more of

these demon beasts there would be, nor could he guarantee that ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors would not reappear. If Demon Emperors came again while he wasn't here, Ling Tian City would face a terrible disaster. To him, even if he combined the other main cities, they could not compare to the city behind him.

Fey saw his hesitation and said, "Go. There probably won't be anymore ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors, and we've already resolved the crisis within the city. We'll be enough to deal with these remaining demon beasts, and if any ancient demon beasts or Demon Emperors appear again, I'll immediately notify you. Even though the Forgotten City has done despicable things to Ling Tian City, it's still the Royal City of the Forgotten Continent, and the other 4 main cities are important too, so..."

Fey slowly breathed out and spoke in a voice that only Ling Chen could hear, "You should have known since long ago that the Mystic Moon world was not just a game. Every resident here is a real being, and they are all innocent. Back then, we killed many of their people, and even though we can disregard it, we still owe them. If you save them, not only will you pay back that debt, but you'll also be doing something virtuous for yourself and the people around you."

This caused some changes within Ling Chen.

"Mm! You should go, big brother Ling Tian, we are still here." Xiao Qi raised her Vermillion Bird Magic Staff. "These demon beasts all fear fire, so I'll burn as many that come."

"Hahaha, there's us too!! Ahahaha..."

A peal of wild and coarse laughter sounded out from behind them. Suddenly, the tightly-closed city gates opened as an elderly but vigorous-looking Dwarf swaggered out. Seeing him, Chief Dilo yelled out excitedly, "Elder Dita, why have you come out... ah! Could it be... that the Underworld God Cannon..."

"Hahahaha!" Elder Dita laughed, looking so excited that he

couldn't even close his mouth. He pointed upwards as he loudly laughed, "That's right! With the blueprints left behind by our ancestors, with the actual thing to use as reference, and with the best materials... as well as the most important thing, our Dwarves' talent and wisdom, we've finally created the Underworld God Cannon that our ancestors created in a few years, in just a few months! Hahahahaha!"

Everyone looked up and found that without them even knowing, a jet-black cannon had appeared on the city walls. The cannon was about 4 or 5 metres long, and it was twice as big as the Underworld King's Underworld God Cannon. There were also mysterious inscriptions around the cannon, which gave off a faint light.

"T-T-T-That's... our... Underworld God Cannon?" Chief Dilo stared at the cannon, his voice trembling as his beard quivered and his body shook.

"That's right! What's more, it's an upgraded version of the Underworld God Cannon, and it is even more powerful than the one created by our ancestors! We can proudly say that we've surpassed our ancestors and have created the greatest creation in Dwarf history!" Elder Dita excitedly waved his hands about, spittle flying everywhere. His voice and expression were filled with immense joy and pride.

"These demon beasts have come at the right time; it's time to try out our Dwarf Clan's greatest creation!" According to the proud Elder Dita, these terrifying demon beasts had become experimental subjects for them. He pointed at the demon beast army in the distance and yelled, "Disi, Dilu, make preparations! Fire! Show these demon beasts that want to destroy our home our Underworld God Cannon's power!!"

"Fire!!"

BOOM!!!!

An explosion sounded out as a dark orb of light flew out from the

Underworld God Cannon, streaking through the air like a meteor and landing in the army of demon beasts kilometres away.

BOOM!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

There was a massive explosion that could make the heavens fall and earth shatter. Within the explosion, the entirety of Ling Tian City trembled, and nearly half of the defending players fell onto the ground. The entire area to the north was so bright that no one could open their eyes, and a wild gale was kicked up...

Everyone was once again completely dumbfounded, and even the Dwarves who had created the Underworld God Cannon stared in silence. Even they did not think that the Underworld God Cannon would have such monstrous effects.

“No less than expected from the ultimate weapon that was given the title of a ‘God-Killing’ weapon. We’ve even heard of the Underworld God Cannon in the west,” Fey said with amazement.

“Holy crap! Even atom bombs might not be so powerful!” Skyfall exclaimed.

After the light disappeared, all of the demon beasts within their vision had disappeared, replaced by an incredibly vast and deep crater – the crater extended as far as the eye could see, and the depth could not be fathomed either... the number of demon beasts destroyed by that single attack was simply too numerous to be counted.

If this sort of attack landed within Ling Tian City, half of Ling Tian City would instantly disappear.

“Hahahaha! Did you see that? Did you see that?! This is the might of the Underworld God Cannon! The Lady of the City gave us many energy cores of high-grade beings, which I used to create 16 Underworld God Cannonballs. We can fire this sort of attack another 15 times! Ahahahaha, I don’t believe that we won’t be able to destroy all of those demon beasts with 16 cannonballs,

hahahaha!”

Seeing the massive crater that spanned many kilometres, Ling Chen also stared for a full 3 seconds. With that sort of might, even if the demon beasts gathered en masse, it would still annihilate them instantly. Ling Chen finally felt at ease, and he nodded and said, “Alright! I’ll leave Ling Tian City to you then, and I’ll go to the Forgotten City. Let me know immediately if any Demon Emperors appear!”

“Go, go! I promise that not a single demon beast will be able to get near Ling Tian City!” Elder Dita said confidently as he patted his chest.

Ling Chen did not dally and took out a Spatial Orb, disappearing from in front of Ling Tian City.

.....

A massive explosion sounded out as 3 balls of Darkness energy and a ball of holy energy collided in the air. Most of the Darkness energy was dissipated, but Moon Goddess White Snow was blasted back like a broken kite, flying quite a distance before falling to the ground.

The level of the battle between a Moon Goddess and 3 Demon Emperors was extremely fearsome. Even though the Moon Goddess White Snow was doing her best to protect the Forgotten City, just the shockwaves alone had destroyed nearly 10% of the Forgotten City. She did not hold back at all against the 3 Demon Emperors, but that meant her strength was quickly being sapped. Despite this, she could not contend against the 3 Demon Emperors at all... and this was especially so with 7 ancient demon beasts around.

Just what was abnormally making these ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors appear? What was controlling all of this...

White Snow wanted to know the answer. Seeing the 3 Demon

Emperors draw near again, she wanted to condense her power, but she found that she had used up more power than she had expected. Now, even standing was not so easy for her.

At this moment, a dark light shot towards her, containing the combined might of the 3 Demon Emperors. Let alone her current state, she would not be able to escape without severe injuries even at full strength. Right now, she did not have any strength to block or evade it, and she could only close her eyes...

“The Forgotten Continent... and the Mystic Moon world... are they going to be destroyed?” She sorrowfully thought to herself.

As the dark light was about to hit Moon Goddess White Snow’s body, a figure shot down and blocked in front of her. The person raised his weapons and roared as he slammed them towards the dark light...

“Hah!!!”

Bang!!!!

As a muffled explosion sounded out, the attack from the 3 Demon Emperors that even a Moon Goddess could not resist was destroyed like a soap bubble. Dust filled the air, but neither Ling Chen nor Moon Goddess White Snow were injured in the slightest.

Chapter 789: Mastermind (1)

In this world, the only thing that could destroy a combined attack from 3 Demon Emperors was a Shura.

Moon Goddess White Snow, who had completely despaired, heard an explosion, but she did not feel any Darkness power hitting her. She opened her eyes, and after seeing the figure standing in front of her, she cried out with joy and surprise, “Ling Tian!”

Behind her, the Forgotten City had been greatly damaged, but due to White Eagle and Black Demon’s protection, the Forgotten Emperor was safe. Seeing Moon Goddess White Snow easily defeat the 3 ancient demon beasts, he had thought that the crisis was over. However, when the 3 Demon Emperors appeared and Moon Goddess White Snow had been badly injured, he had completely despaired and fell to the ground... even a Moon Goddess, who represented the peak of the Mystic Moon world, had been defeated – anyone who saw this would feel all of their hopes crumble.. indeed, even a Moon Goddess had been defeated. What could stop this nightmarish catastrophe?

The Forgotten Emperor crumpled to the ground, his eyes dim, preparing for destruction. Even though Ling Tian had appeared, the Forgotten Emperor did not feel any hope at all. Ling Tian was powerful to the point that the Forgotten City had trembled in front of him, but no matter how powerful he was, he could not be more powerful than a Moon Goddess... if even a Moon Goddess had been defeated, what could he do?

“Go to somewhere safe and leave the Demon Emperors to me.” Ling Chen stretched out his hand and helped White Snow up, his aura locking on to the 3 Demon Emperors and 11 ancient demon beasts.

As a high and mighty Moon Goddess, who had always controlled

everything and looked down on all beings, when had she ever needed to be saved or protected? What's more, even if she did, no one would be able to do so. In that instant, White Snow experienced for the first time a womanly sense of weakness and dependence, as well as a sense of warmth and satisfaction. Her gaze trembled and she lightly nodded. "These 3 Demon Emperors aren't any weaker than the Demon Emperor from 10,000 years ago... you need to be careful."

The 3 Moon Goddesses had fought with Ling Chen before, so they knew his strength. Moon Goddess White Snow knew that perhaps the only person who could resolve this crisis was him. As such, even though she was worried, she did not stop him. She gently gazed at Ling Chen before floating up and retreating.

The 3 Demon Emperors came within 100 metres of Ling Chen, and their bodies suddenly flashed with a dark light, causing the surrounding air to seem to freeze from their power. The 11 ancient demon beasts also rushed up as they unpleasantly howled... Ling Chen's eyes narrowed and he flicked his right wrist as a light shone from the Lunar Scourge.

"Moon Grief!"

As the dark silver light flooded out, the dark light around the 3 Demon Emperor's bodies disappeared, and the ancient demon beasts, who were just about to attack, all paused with confused looks on their faces.

Regardless of whether they were ancient demon beasts or Demon Emperors, in front of Moon Grief, they became absolute noobs, and they could not use any of their skills. Ling Chen cast aside any hesitation and appeared before the 3 dumbfounded Demon Emperors, sending out a [Shattered Moon] and [Extinguishing the Heavens and Destroying The Earth Tempest] towards them.

A massive explosion sounded out in front of the Forgotten City, just like the one that had erupted in front of Ling Tian City. In the

5,000 metres in front of Ling Chen, apart from the Demon Emperors, all demon beasts, including the 11 ancient demon beasts, were obliterated without even their corpses remaining. The 3 Demon Emperors suffered heavy damage, and their HP greatly fell.

Seeing the demon beast army and ancient demon beasts disappear without a trace, the Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon stared with bulging eyes. They then simultaneously performed the same action: they brought their hands up and vigorously rubbed their eyes...

Full-strength Demon Emperors were nothing in front of Ling Chen, and this was even more so for Demon Emperors who had forgotten their skills. Ling Chen rushed up, and he dealt more than 20 rounds of [Shura's Exterminating Slashes] in less than 10 seconds, blasting the 3 Demon Emperors from above the Forgotten City to many kilometres away. During this entire process, let alone retaliate, the Demon Emperors had not even been able to stand properly. Following this, Ling Chen simultaneously activated [Sacrificial Slaughter] and [Soul Demise], clearing out the 3 Demon Emperor's HP bars.

The 3 Demon Emperors had appeared at the same time and had also died at the same time. Under Ling Chen's [Sacrificial Slaughter], they were reduced into countless fragments and turned into balls of black fog as they disappeared.

Seeing the 3 Demon Emperors die so easily, Moon Goddess White Snow stared for a while. She had personally experienced the Shura's might before, but even the Shura from 10,000 years ago, which had given them a tough battle, definitely could not do such a thing. Back then, the 3 Moon Goddesses had thought that the Shura from back then was the most powerful creature, but even though the Shura in front of her did not give off the same bloodlust and berserkness, he was much, much stronger than the Shura from before.

The Forgotten Emperor, White Eagle, and Black Demon were

peak existences among humans, and they felt absolutely petrified; their eyes felt like they were going to fall out. After a while, the Forgotten Emperor reacted as if he had woken up from a dream, and he shrieked, “Ling... Ling Tian! P-P-P-Please save our Forgotten City... our Forgotten City... will forever submit to Ling Tian City... please save the Forgotten City...”

Even the monstrous enemies that a Moon Goddess could not resist had been easily defeated by Ling Chen. The Forgotten Emperor, who had fallen into complete despair, now saw Ling Chen as the Forgotten City’s last hope, and he even knelt down to him. Ling Chen completely ignored him and rose into the air, looking towards the Forgotten City. In just a few seconds, he had seen the entire situation in the Forgotten City.

After he had arrived, the crisis outside the Forgotten City had been resolved, but there was still a crisis within the city. Many demon beasts still ran rampant within the city, causing disasters. Looking at the Forgotten City and locking on to all of the demon beasts, Ling Chen spread out his hands as the flames from the Fire God’s Bulwark started to gather around his body...

“Phoenix God Heavenly Flames!!”

A berserk wind blew, and it started to become hotter. The flames around Ling Chen grew, dyeing the sky above the Forgotten City red. As the searing wind blew around Ling Chen, countless fireballs rained down from the sky towards the Forgotten City... then accurately landed on demon beasts, not affecting the Forgotten City’s structures or residents in the slightest.

Ling Chen had exhausted all of the energy from the Thunder God’s Bulwark in Ling Tian City, but he still had the Fire God’s Bulwark. What’s more, the fire within the Fire God’s Bulwark was not normal fire but the terrifying Phoenix God Heavenly Flames. In just an instant, the Forgotten City became lit up with fiery light, and it was filled with howls from countless demon beasts.

Fire was a natural counter to demon beasts, and this was even more so due to the fact that it was one of the most powerful types of fire. As the flames touched the demon beasts, they were incinerated in an instant, and even high-grade, high-level demon beasts were insta-killed. However, after the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames touched them, they did not immediately extinguish – they continuously burned the demon beasts’ bodies and souls, causing their lives to flow away in pain and despair. Compared to the tribulation lightning, the Phoenix God Heavenly Flames were much crueller.

When the flames covered the entire city, the Forgotten Emperor had initially been terrified. However, he soon heard the howls of countless demon beasts, and he did not receive any news about residents or structures being destroyed, allowing him to let out a sigh of relief as he sat there, feeling paralysed. He looked up at Ling Chen in the air, feeling incredibly complicated... he realised more and more just how stupid of him it had been to attack Ling Tian City.

“Ling Tian, ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors have also appeared near the 4 main cities. Purple Dress, Blue Heart, and the Moon God Representatives are unable to stop them at all, so please go to help them. Since there are no Demon Emperors here anymore, I’ll be able to deal with the situation,” White Snow said hurriedly as she came to Ling Chen’s side.

Looking at the flames and the Forgotten City, which was no longer in danger, Ling Chen nodded and took out a Spatial Orb, arriving at the Azure Dragon City.

Compared to the Forgotten City, the Azure Dragon City’s defences were weaker by nearly 10 times, and the situation within it was much worse than the one that had been in the Forgotten City. When Ling Chen arrived, Moon Goddess Purple Dress was currently facing off against 3 Demon Emperors. Within the 3 Moon Goddesses, White Snow was overall the most powerful, but in

terms of attack power, Purple Dress held the advantage. However, no matter how strong she was, she could not defeat 3 Demon Emperors. She used time and spatial power to desperately fight, not allowing the 3 Demon Emperors to come close to the Azure Dragon City. However, she was covered with countless injuries, and she had used up much of her strength. Behind her, due to the shockwaves from their battle, nearly 20% of the Azure Dragon City had been destroyed.

The crisis was naturally resolved after Ling Chen arrived. The 3 Demon Emperors, who had been coming closer and closer to the Azure Dragon City, were beaten like dogs by Ling Chen. Afterwards, he froze them with a Moon Shadow before smashing them into dust, and all the demon beasts and ancient demon beasts within Ling Chen's field of vision were annihilated immediately after. The Azure Dragon's Mayor, as well as the City Guards who had despaired, felt as if they had turned to stone, unable to accept what had just happened.

After asking Cai'Er to use her Nature's Songs to heal Purple Dress, Ling Chen immediately went to the Black Tortoise City and saved Blue Heart, who was fighting against 2 Demon Emperors, and then went to the Vermillion Bird City and the White Tiger City...

The Demon Emperors were undoubtedly the greatest threats, and without the Demon Emperors, no matter how many demon beasts or ancient demon beasts there were, the Moon God Clan was powerful enough to suppress them and resolve the crisis.

Ling Chen quickly cleared the Demon Emperors in and around the Royal City and 4 main cities, but apart from these places, the massive Forgotten Continent still contained many demonic beasts. Ling Chen returned to Ling Tian City and used Ling Tian City to request players and residents of the Forgotten Continent to report sightings of Demon Emperors and ancient demon beasts. Wherever one was found, Ling Chen went there with the help of Fey's spatial

power and quickly kill them. As Demon Emperors and ancient demon beasts were continuously killed, Ling Chen and Fey felt more and more shocked.

From when the demon beasts had descended until now, only 3 hours had passed, and the numbers of the demon beasts gradually decreased. As Demon Emperors and ancient demon beasts were discovered, Ling Chen quickly moved to destroy them... and within the 3 hours, Ling Chen had killed 57 Demon Emperors and 732 ancient demon beasts!!

It took thousands of years for a Saint Destroyer grade existence to be born, and for existences like Moon Goddesses that surpassed the Saint Destroyer grade, it took over 10,000 years. In light of this, the number of the Demon Emperors and ancient demon beasts was simply terrifying to the point of being indescribable. In the end, Ling Chen's heart even started to lightly tremble... if it was just as Qi Yue had said, that these Demon Emperors, ancient demon beasts, and demon beasts had been 'cloned', with how powerful the Demon Emperors were, cloning even a single one was an extremely heaven-defying act. After all, Demon Emperors were like terrifying weapons of mass destruction.

However, there were 57 Demon Emperors, and there might even be even more!!

Just what sort of person had the ability to do such a thing? And why would they do this to the Forgotten Continent... if it wasn't for Ling Chen, the entire Forgotten Continent, if not the entire Mystic Moon world, could have been destroyed!

Chapter 790: Mastermind (2)

Compared to the disaster caused by the Demon Beast Clan 10,000 years ago, this one was much bigger, and it simply exceeded what anyone could even imagine. The last disaster took many years to fully settle, but this time, it took only half a day for the situation to be resolved.

This was because the demon beasts would hide back then and only move out at night, making it difficult to destroy them. However, these demon beasts had no consciousness, and they only knew to destroy. Even though they were fierce fighters, they were destroyed incredibly quickly. Of course, this was not the main reason: the main reason was because back then, the Forgotten Continent did not have ‘players’.

Even though there were many demon beasts, they did not spawn endlessly, and the numbers could not exceed the players’, as there were hundreds of millions of players in the Forgotten Continent. Even though normal players were not a match for even the low-grade demons, there were many of them, and they all specialised in different classes. What was even more important was that players could continuously revive! As such, even though more players died than demon beasts, their numbers continuously decreased while players’ numbers did not decrease at all.

The job of killing the more powerful demon beasts naturally fell to the more powerful players, but most low-grade demon beasts were suppressed and destroyed by groups of players.

Even though the disaster was not over, it was now controllable. After this disaster, the Forgotten Continent’s residents started to recognise the strength of the so-called weakest group of people. This was because anyone could understand that the Forgotten Continent might have been completely destroyed by the demon beasts without ‘players’... this was especially so for the player who had saved the Royal City and the 4 main cities and had surpassed

even the Moon Goddesses: Ling Tian!

That's right, if it wasn't for Ling tian, the Forgotten Continent would have been greatly ravaged by this massive disaster. Countless residents and other creatures had died, and the towns and villages that had been destroyed were too many to count. The number of player deaths was also an astronomical figure – there were many players who had died even 3 to 5 times, greatly reducing the Chinese players' overall strength.

After this disaster, a haze passed over the Forgotten Continent. One of their greatest consolations was that the Royal City and the 4 main cities had not been destroyed.

Ling Tian City was the place that Ling Chen protected the most and adding on the Underworld's protection and the Underworld God Cannon, apart from the damage that had been initially caused, not even a brick had been damaged afterwards.

8pm in the real world, within the bright but deathly silent Cosmos Corporation.

The tightly-closed door at the top floor slowly opened, revealing a short, skinny, and hunchbacked figure. He walked unhurriedly with his hands behind his back, and as he entered, the top floor was filled with a terrifying aura.

There were only 2 people on the top floor. They were staring at the massive screen on the wall, their hands mechanically typing on the keyboards in front of them, ignoring the door that had opened and the figure that had walked in. Their eyes sunken and were a dark colour, and it was as if they were a deathly grey, making them look as if they were corpses.

“This is such a wonderful day for that place called the Forgotten Continent. Release all of the ‘diseases’! This is simply too crazy; only a madman like me would do such a thing, heheheh!!”

The hunchbacked old man gave an extremely ear-piercing laugh,

sounding like the laughter of a demon. He slowly walked over to a large screen and pushed up his white-framed glasses as he stared with his snake-like eyes, “Heheh, these diseases are enough to destroy the entire Mystic Moon world in a month. Even though I’ve put them all in the Forgotten Continent, they should be able to destroy more than half of the living creatures there within 12 hours... there’ll be mountains of corpses, and ruins will fill the lands; what a beautiful scene, heheheh... since you dared to destroy the perfect balance that I created, this is your reward, heheheh!!

“However, now it’s time to put these cute diseases away, because if the Chinese players are scared too much, they won’t dare to enter the beautiful Mystic Moon anymore. If that happens, there’ll be fewer howling spirits in the main act, heheheh...”

Pa!

A withered hand slapped onto a red button as the picture on the screen quickly changed, revealing a crescent moon in the middle of a patch of blue... this was a map of the Mystic Moon world. The map zoomed in and locked onto the Forgotten Continent, filling the entire screen.

The Forgotten Continent was a faint yellow colour with some strange dark spots. Some dark spots were darker, while others were lighter. Some were larger and some were smaller, but they were very dense. The big and darker spots were the rarest, and the 2 biggest dark spots were in the North and West.

The hunchbacked old man’s ear-piercing laughter suddenly stopped, and he held his breath as his expression twisted. His gaze also became incredibly vicious. “What’s going on? Just what happened? Why are there only this many of my cute diseases left... and there are only 2 of the biggest ones left... just what’s going on?!

“These diseases were enough to destroy the Mystic Moon world and all of the highest-grade beings! They can’t be destroyed by a

mere Forgotten Continent... what happened? Impossible! Impossible!!”

“Could it be that there were things outside of my control? Impossible... from the energy reactions, the creatures called Moon Goddesses are the most powerful beings, and there are only 5 beings on that level... while I’ve developed 60 diseases on that level! How could they be defeated... arghhhh!!!”

He was a true genius, and in his life, nothing that he wanted could escape from his control. Even the vast Mystic Moon world was completely within his grasp, and he had even modified this world... without any of the Mystic Moon world’s creatures noticing.

He pursued absolute perfection, and he did not allow there to be anything that could escape from his control. The Forgotten Continent’s players’ average strength greatly exceeded the players from other regions, breaking the ‘balance’ that he wanted, causing him to madly rain down the terrifying diseases to restore ‘balance’. However, what he saw was something that completely exceeded anything that he had expected. This was the first time that something had exceeded his expectations and control, making him go completely mad.

As he screamed with his ear-piercing voice, the largest black dot in the north slowly disappeared.

“Arghh!!” The hunchbacked old man’s eyes widened as he stared at where the black dot had disappeared. Following this, he slowly raised a withered hand and stared at the final large black dot in the West as he said in a low and sinister voice, “They’re being destroyed... someone’s destroying the diseases I’ve spent so much time and effort on developing... heh, heheh... they’re actually making a madman like me so furious that I’m about to go mad... heh... you should receive a brilliant prize!! My brilliant, mad self will personally give this reward to you!!!!”

Pa!

The hunchbacked old man snapped his fingers as a black cabin door suddenly opened. The hunchbacked old man walked over into the cabin, after which the black cabin door closed. Right before it closed, a hellish voice sounded out, “I will personally shatter and destroy your body, soul... and the entire Forgotten Continent! Heheheh...”

.....

Boom!!!!

Within a bloody light, a Demon Emperor was obliterated before it even had a chance to scream, and then it turned into a black fog and disappeared. The demon beasts around it were also destroyed by the shockwaves, not leaving a single one behind.

“Whew!” Ling Chen, who had not spent much effort, cancelled [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames] and said, “This should be the 59th, right?”

“That’s right.” Fey nodded and looked up as she said leisurely, “This figure doesn’t sound like much, but who would think that it was the number of Demon Emperors? Killing 59 powerful beings that are as powerful as my adoptive father, the Sea Emperor, in less than a day? My dear Adam, I’m sure that anyone in the Forgotten Continent who heard this would go mad. A Shura that does not fear tribulation lightning is simply heaven-defying to the extreme. Luckily, you didn’t lose your consciousness, or I believe that the Forgotten Continent would have long since stopped existing.”

Ling Chen smirked, not confirming nor denying this. He knew best that he was only able to kill the Demon Emperor like he was killing chickens because of the Lunar Scourge’s crowd control and the Shura’s ridiculously powerful attacks. This was what allowed Ling Chen to kill the Demon Emperors before they even had an opportunity to attack. Even though he had killed 59 Demon

Emperors, he had not even seen the Demon Emperor's true strength.

If Ling Chen did not have the Lunar Scourge, the Aries Orb, the Libra Orb, the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear, the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour, and the various crowd control skills, and he had to fight the Demon Emperor with only the Shura's power... he wouldn't have had any confidence at all.

“Ding...”

Fey's communication device sounded out, and she immediately picked it up. After listening for a few moments, she gave a simple answer before hanging up and saying, “Unfortunately, another Demon Emperor has been found in the western area of the Forgotten Continent about 120 kilometres southwest from the White Tiger City. We've neared the end, and this might be the last one.”

“Alright, take me there!” Ling Chen immediately said. Honestly speaking, he had become somewhat addicted to killing Demon Emperors... obliterating beings that were on the level of Moon Goddesses before they could even respond felt quite satisfying.

“Let's go! I'll say it again, it's best that you close your eyes.” Fey grabbed Ling Chen's right hand, and as Lachesis flashed with light, its spatial power activated.

Whoosh!

As the wind howled, the smell of the air greatly changed, and by the time Ling Chen opened his eyes, what he saw was overgrown wilderness and ravaged ground... of course, as well as a Demon Emperor and an army of demon beasts that it had attracted.

The southwest was the most desolate region in the Forgotten Continent, and it consisted mostly of deserts and overgrown wildernesses. There were no human settlements around, and even animals were quite rare. The Demon Emperor that had descended

here could not find any creatures to destroy, and it had madly destroyed anything it could find. With the Demon Emperor's terrifying power, the surrounding 100 kilometres had been completely ravaged, and there was not even a single bit of untouched ground.

Chapter 791: Mastermind (3)

Ling Chen and Fey's arrival caused the Demon Emperor to finally smell the scent of a living creature, and its massive power instantly locked onto Ling Chen and Fey. Though it didn't move, a wave of Darkness energy seemed to cover the sun and sky, and it rushed towards Ling Chen and Fey. "End it quickly; we need to spend some time on finding out the origins of these demon beasts and the mastermind," Fey said calmly, not even blinking as she faced the Demon Emperor's attack. "....." Ling Chen simultaneously activated [Burning Heart Blood Massacre] and [Heavenly Judgment Demonic Flames] again, and without needing to attack, just the Shura's aura alone was enough to dispel the Demon Emperor's Darkness attack. "Purgatory Blades!!" Blood-red blades condensed from the Shura's power rained down from the sky, mercilessly butchering and destroying all demon beasts within range, turning the area that they covered into a purgatory of destruction. Ling Chen rushed towards the Demon Emperor like a ray of light, a [Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation] cutting off the attack that the Demon Emperor was about to release, causing it to howl in pain. Following this, Ling Chen activated [Moon Shadow], freezing the struggling Demon Emperor in the air as he mercilessly rained down attacks on it, causing its HP to quickly fall. Bang!!!!

As the bloody light around Ling Chen exploded, just like the previous 59 Demon Emperors, the Demon Emperor in front of him was also obliterated into tiny pieces and turned into black fog. The demon beast army was also shredded by the Purgatory Blades so that nothing remained. "Done!" Ling Chen's body flashed and returned to Fey's side, putting away his weapons as he said with a displeased look, "It's a pity that even the Demon Emperors don't drop a single thing and don't even give EXP. Otherwise, after killing so many Saint Destroyer grade beings, I would have levelled up to LV100 by now." "Evidently, those demon beasts aren't normal demon beasts that belong to this continent, so naturally,

they won't give any EXP or spoils," Fey said. She frowned as she caressed her long and sleek fingers against the Lachesis rings. "But I'm sure that we'll be able to find the source of these demon beasts and the mastermind behind all of this soon." Noticing Fey's actions, Ling Chen raised his eyebrows and said in surprise, "You mean... the Lachesis can do such a thing?" "The Lachesis has 3 rings: one controls space, one controls time, and the other one..." Fey suddenly paused, her expression becoming stiff. At the same time, Ling Chen's expression also changed... and soon, both of their expressions became horrified. "Fey, do... do you feel that? This sensation is..." Ling Chen grabbed Fey's shoulder. Even with his strong mental state the Shura's power, his voice still lightly trembled. His trembling gaze evidently contained a hint of... terror! Fey also grabbed onto Ling Chen because that was the only way to feel safe. "I won't forget this feeling... even if I die!" Both of them deeply frowned, their bodies tense as their gazes became incredibly dark.... This was the state that they revealed when feeling extreme danger. "Since you detected it too, that means it wasn't a misperception... no one can imitate the aura that can cause our entire bodies to tremble!" Fey could feel Ling Chen's body trembling, as did her own. Indeed, they were afraid - well and truly afraid! Whether it was in the real world or in the virtual world, both of them were incredibly powerful and invincible existences. And yet, they were both feeling immense fear!! In this world, was there anyone who could make Ling Chen and Fey feel fearful just from detecting their aura? Indeed, there was... but this person was not the powerful Instructor Hell but another person. This person did not have Hell's incredible power; rather, he did not have the strength to truss up a chicken, but his absurd mental prowess controlled their fates, changed their lives, and gave them powerful bodies and strength, as well as pain that was worse than hell by a factor of 100. He did not know any martial arts, but he controlled, calculated, and grasped everything. In Ling Chen and Fey's subconscious, they believed that he was an all-powerful

monster. There was nothing that he could not achieve, and no one that he could not control. In fact, he most likely had the power to destroy the entire earth. The trauma that he left on them was deeply embedded in the deepest part of their souls. They felt an icy chill pass through their hearts just thinking about this person. Even though so many years had passed, this person's existence was like a poisonous needle stabbing into their hearts. Perhaps only if this person disappeared from the world could they completely be at ease... however, with his terrifying intellect and methods, who in the world could cause him to disappear? At this moment, in this virtual world, they had clearly detected that person's aura... and he was incredibly close... as if he was right behind them! "Adam... Eve... it's you! Heh... heheh... heheheh... it's actually you!!" A piercing and extremely unpleasant voice sounded out from behind Ling Chen and Fey. When this voice travelled into their ears, their pupils simultaneously contracted. Fey's hand held onto Ling Chen even tighter, her sharp nails piercing into Ling Chen's arm. They had not seen the owner of this voice for 10 years, but even if they died, they would never forget this nightmarish voice. Ling Chen held onto Fey's shoulder and slowly turned around. Without them realising it, a short and skinny hunchbacked old man wearing a white Chinese-styled garment and white-framed glasses had appeared behind them. His hair was white and his body was hunched over, and he was only about half as tall as Ling Chen. He looked at least 90 years old, and his face was even uglier and more withered than bark of a tree that had been dead for more than 10 years. However, the eyes behind the white-framed glasses were not turbid at all, and they instead gave off a sinister and venomous light. "Mad... Scientist!!" Ling Chen and Fey cried out the old, hunchbacked man's name, their hearts uncontrollably trembling. He stood there, looking as if a strong gale could blow him over, but Ling Chen and Fey froze, not daring to move. They knew that he was even more terrifying than 100 Demon Emperors... no! He was even more terrifying than even 100 Instructor Hells! "Heheheh..."

The Mad Scientist walked with his hands behind his back, giving a sinister and eerie laugh. To Ling Chen, his laugh was even more unpleasant than a demon's laugh by 100 times. "This is an incredibly wonderful chance encounter; it must be something arranged by the heavens. From when I sent you from 'heaven' to 'hell', it has already been 10 years. 10 years, what a wonderful period of time. Both of you are my proudest creations, and not only are you still alive, but you've also grown into adults and have appeared before me together." Ling Chen took a step forwards, standing in front of Fey as he coldly said, "After 10 years, you're still alive." "Aheheheh!" The Mad Scientist wildly laughed and said condescendingly, "Even if everyone on earth died, I would not die! Heh..." The Mad Scientist suddenly gave a frightening smile as he adjusted his glasses, his eyes narrowing into slits. "Adam, 9 months ago, Instructor Hell went to China to find you after he was perfected by me. Afterwards, I detected that he had been destroyed... so it was like this. No wonder you were able to destroy Hell, who was modified by me – you broke free from my mental restrictions... as expected from my proudest creation, heheheh!" Ling Chen: "....." Back then, when Hell had found him, he had not broken free from the Mad Scientist's mental restrictions. Rather, he had been injured by Hell to the point that he had been on his last breath, and even now, he did not know how Hell had died. He only faintly felt that he had used some sort of special method to kill him as his consciousness was disappearing. "If Hell's dead, then he's dead. He was only an experimental subject; I can modify as many creatures as I want. You two are my successful experiments, and I've spent many years to completely modify your bodies and minds. Honestly speaking, I'm quite reluctant to destroy you. That's why I didn't search for you over the past 10 years. I decided to find you two after I completed the great Mystic Moon Plan, allowing you to be two great killing machines that would destroy all life on earth... but because of fate's plans, I had to bring this time forwards because... you destroyed my cute

diseases that I spent so much time and effort developing!!” The Mad Scientist’s face twisted. He was furious not because his ‘diseases’ had been destroyed, but because with his methods, he would be able to recreate them with enough time. What made him furious was that this was completely outside of his plans, resulting in failure and humiliation! No one had ever caused his plans to fail in such a way – this was something that he could not tolerate. “Even if you two are my most successful creations, I need to give you a punishment that you’ll never forget... wait, no! A reward! No matter what it is, my rewards should fill you with incredible honour and glory! Heheheheh!!” “Diseases?” Ling Chen stared in confusion before suddenly realising something and saying, “Could the demon beasts that invaded the Forgotten Continent... have come from you?!” After saying these words, Ling Chen did not feel shocked at all... because with how terrifying the Mad Scientist was, no matter how impossible something sounded, it would be something incredibly casual and normal if it was him. “That’s right,” The Mad Scientist savagely laughed. “After the Mystic Moon Plan is finished, the earth and Mystic Moon will both be destroyed. The two of you are the tools I’ve prepared to destroy the world, while those cute diseases are what I was planning on using to destroy the Mystic Moon world. I brought them here ahead of plan because this continent’s lowly creatures have broken the perfect balance that I designed; this is an unforgiveable crime. I never thought that the ones who were killing these cute diseases were you... Adam and Eve!!” Ling Chen and Fey looked at each other, filled with shock. Mystic Moon Plan? The earth? Mystic Moon... Destroy the earth and Mystic Moon... Those few words deeply stirred up their nerves. If anyone else had said the crazy words ‘destroy the earth’, they would be taken as a joke or be seen as crazy. However, hearing this from the Mad Scientist, Ling Chen and Fey did not find those words to be amusing at all, and they instead felt a deep fear. “Mad Scientist! What are you saying?! Destroy the earth? Mystic Moon Plan? What perfect balance? And

how did you bring those demon beasts here?!” Ling Chen roared in a low voice. He had to receive an answer for these questions; otherwise, even if he escaped from this terrifying madman today, he would not be able to be at ease. However, in his heart, he already knew that the answer would be terrifying.

Chapter 792: Mastermind (4)

“Do you want to know how and why? Hm? Heheheh...” The Mad Scientist raised his hands as he laughed wildly, “Because I modified this world, so I can be said to be this world’s owner. I can do whatever I want in this world; so what if I spread some cute diseases? Heheheheh...”

“What... did you say?” Ling Chen’s eyes widened, and Fey’s expression also changed. Taking into account their experiences in the Mystic Moon world, they could both guess what he meant.

“I might as well tell you my greatest and maddest plan because you’re about to become my killing machines. After all, I should let my successful experiments know how great their master is!” The Mad Scientist’s laughter became wilder and more arrogant as he spoke in his extremely unpleasant voice. “There used to be a planet called ‘Mystic Moon’ here, and I discovered this place before I went to earth...”

This caused Ling Chen and Fey’s hearts to tremble... before he went to earth? The Mad Scientist’s words implied that he was not human.

However, Ling Chen and Fey did not feel surprised about this. This was because in their 3 years in ‘heaven’, the Mad Scientist did not only display terrifying intellect and methods, but he also had technology that surpassed earth’s technology by countless years. Moreover, whenever he referred to ‘earthlings’, he was always quite dismissive, calling them ‘lowly earthlings’. From the beginning, Fey and Ling Chen suspected that the Mad Scientist was an alien because such a monster simply couldn’t have come from earth.

His words were evidence that Mystic Moon was a real world. This was because the mad Scientist was incomparably intelligent and arrogant. He never allowed failure, nor did he ever lie. Even

though he was incomparably terrifying, no matter what sort of crazy things he said, though Ling Chen and Fey felt shocked, they would never doubt what he said.

“This is a truly amazing world. It has a clean and pure nature, as well as dense elemental essence. However, what I can’t stand is that the technology here is so behind. Afterwards, I found a wonderful thing in this wonderful world. I was originally planning on going to earth to carry out the ‘Mystic Moon Plan’, but this thing gave me a glorious and crazy thought... only a madman like me would have such a glorious idea... heheheheh...

“As such, I spent many years gathering that thing’s power, and after adding my incomparable intellect and methods, I completely changed this world’s rules... what the new rules were based off of was earth’s low-grade ‘virtual games’, making the rules of this world become like a virtual game: levels and grades, records and descriptions of people and items, EXP and other rewards for killing creatures, modification of monsters and respawning of monsters, and data modification of many things... it was simply too perfect! What was even more perfect was that none of the creatures in this world noticed at all, and even after modifying their thoughts so that they would welcome ‘players’ and give out ‘quests’, they obediently complied. It’s simply incomprehensibly perfect... heheheh! No less than expected from a legendary, godly item and my genius intellect, heheheheh...”

Ling Chen and Fey fell silent. More accurately speaking, they were completely dumbfounded. Every sentence that the Mad Scientist said sounded like a fantasy, tearing at their cognition, making it difficult for them to believe what he was saying.

“... What is the godly item that you used to change the rules of this world?!” Fey suddenly said, her voice somewhat hoarse.

“The name... it should be called the Lachesis, and it is a godly item that even the glorious ‘King’ knows about!”

Ling Chen and Fey both felt greatly shocked.

“Godly items can only be used by people who they acknowledge as their master. However, in my hands, I can still use a godly item’s power, heheheh... after using it, I tossed it into this world’s ocean, making it so that it can never resurface. In this world, there’s another godly item called the Lunar Scourge, which I also found. However, its power was much more domineering than the Lachesis, and even my genius, mad self wasn’t able to control it... heh, if even I can’t control it, there’s no one in the world who can control it. At most, they’ll become a puppet.”

When the Mad Scientist said the Lachesis and the Lunar Scourge’s names, the psychological impact on Ling Chen and Fey were quite great. When the Mad Scientist appeared, Fey had tightly clenched her fists behind her back, making it so that the Mad Scientist could not see the Lachesis’ 3 rings. Right now, the right half of her body was behind Ling Chen, making it impossible for the Mad Scientist to see the Lachesis. The Lunar Scourge on Ling Chen’s right wrist was hidden by the Lunar Scourge Divine Armour, so the Mad Scientist could not see it either. Otherwise, he would have been able to recognise the 2 items instantly.

“The Lachesis’ yellow ring controls time, the blue ring controls space, and the red ring controls and changes rules and order!” Fey said in a voice that only Ling Chen could hear. “Back when I found the Lachesis at the bottom of the ocean, its spatial energy and time energy had been greatly depleted, but it could still be used. However, the red ring’s energy to change rules and order had been completely depleted, and even now, it has recovered less than 0.1%... as such, I’ve only been using the yellow and blue rings, and I never used the red ring. I was wondering why the red ring’s energy had been completely depleted when I found it... so that’s why! He was actually able to use the Lachesis’ power even though it did not recognising him as its master... this is... too terrifying!

“With the Lachesis’ red ring’s power that can change rules and

order, if there is enough energy, he can indeed change the Mystic Moon world as he wishes! Moreover, in the records in the West, the entire Mystic Moon world was created by the Lachesis' power countless years ago!”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“After perfectly modifying this world, I naturally became this modified world's owner. If I want it, all rules and powers here will be ineffective against me. Moreover, I can control all powers I want to control in this world, eheheheh...”

The Mad Scientist's hands suddenly grabbed into the air, and the space where he had grabbed started to twist, while Ling Chen and Fey's bodies trembled, their eyes widening... because they suddenly felt that there was a thousand-kilogram iron board weighing down on them, making it impossible for them to budge an inch...

“You!!”

“Spatial... lock!!” Fey gritted her teeth as she said in a low voice.

“That's right, heheheh!” The Mad Scientist demonically laughed as he walked towards them. “In this modified world, I'm an invincible god! The power that other people take a lifetime to develop and control can be controlled by me with just a slight thought! Moreover, this spatial lock is the most powerful spatial lock in this world. Even if you're powerful enough to destroy my cute diseases, it's impossible for you to escape from this spatial lock, aheheheheheh...”

Ling Chen's eyes widened, and he struggled against the space locking him down... with his domineering power and while in his strongest state, he was able to easily break free from a spatial lock created from the 3 Moon Goddesses' power. However, at this moment, even if he used all of his strength, the space around him would not budge, and it did not even ripple.

“Just... Just why did you modify this world?” Fey was also struggling against the spatial lock.

A wild look appeared on the Mad Scientist’s ugly face. “Heheheh... of course it was to welcome all of earth’s players! I used 10 years to research a way to bring out earthlings’ minds and create equipment that could send their minds to this world. That’s right, it’s the gaming equipment that you’re using right now. After coming here, according to this world’s rules, earthlings’ minds are attached to a puppet, and they can enjoy this beautiful journey created by the glorious me... oh! All earthlings should thank me because I’ve given you the most exciting and perfect game... a 100% realistic ‘virtual game’. If this was left to them, those stupid earthlings would never have been able to experience such a perfect game, heheheh...”

The shock within Ling Chen and Fey’s hearts grew. They couldn’t help but admit that ‘Mystic Moon’ was simply too perfect to the point that it was the most acclaimed game in history, and no faults could be found in it. It was perfect to the point that apart from them, no one could detect that this was not a virtual world. If it wasn’t for Ling Chen and Fey obtaining the Lunar Scourge and Lachesis, respectively, and experiencing things that other players did not experience, perhaps they would not have discovered this either.

Even though they had long since gradually started to realise that the Mystic Moon world was not a simple virtual world, they could not get to the bottom of it. In their extreme shock, they finally realised the truth behind this world... the answer, as well as the truth, was incredibly terrifying and unbelievable.

The Mad Scientist was the only person who they truly feared, and they were certain that there could not be an even more abnormal and terrifying existence. Only today did they realise that the Mad Scientist was thousands, if not tens of thousands, of times more terrifying than they had thought.

“You... You’re also holding the Cosmos Corporation under duress?” Ling Chen’s eyes widened as he breathed raggedly. As he desperately fought to break free, his face became bright red.

“Holding them under duress? Oh no, no, no!” The Mad Scientist shook his head. “I’m helping them fulfil their goals, making their minds completely loyal to me forever. I’m helping them complete this glorious game. Being loyal to me is the greatest glory of their lives, heheheh!”

Ling Chen and Fey both knew that the ‘loyalty’ that the Mad scientist spoke of was turning everyone in the Cosmos Corporation into his puppets, following his every command. This would be incredibly simple for the Mad Scientist. Ling Chen gritted his teeth and asked the question that he wanted to know the answer to the most, because the answer could determine the fate of the earth, “Just why... did you modify Mystic Moon and turn it into a game?!”

Of course, Ling Chen would not naively believe that the Mad Scientist had done this purely to create the perfect ‘virtual game’ experience for humans. He had spent more than 10 years to create all of this, so he definitely had a horrifying goal.

Chapter 793: Mastermind (5)

“Why I did it? Heheheh...” The Mad Scientist narrowed his eyes, an ugly look of intoxication appearing on his face. “Of course it was to give you lowly earthlings a glorious home! Over the past year, more and more earthlings have enjoyed themselves in the world I created to the point that they have forgotten their own homes. When the time comes, their spirits will be imprisoned here so that they cannot return to their real bodies. The puppets that these spirits are attached to will also disappear, and when that time comes, they will become spirits without a host. They’ll be taken into a cage that I’ve prepared for them, turning into glorious sacrifices, aheheheh... for lowly earthlings to become such glorious sacrifices, they should be incredibly grateful to me, aheheheh...”

Ling Chen and Fey’s hearts rapidly thumped as a chill chaotically spread throughout their bodies. They now understood: the Mad Scientist had spent much effort to modify this world and attract players into this world... through the Mad Scientist’s special equipment, players’ minds, or rather spirits, entered this world like they were going into a normal virtual game. The Mad Scientist’s goal was actually to cruelly cut the connection between their bodies and spirits, turning them into spirits with nowhere to go!

Putting aside why the Mad Scientist would do something so devoid of conscience and so deranged, since this was part of his plan, he definitely had the ability to do this. What’s more, once he achieved this, with the Mystic Moon’s terrifying numbers, the billions of players online would become human vegetables with living bodies but no spirits!!

This was an incredibly terrifying, soundless massacre!!

Ling Chen suddenly thought of the news he had seen not too long ago, and he said hatefully, “Was the Cosmos Corporation’s media

announcement given by Smith part of your plan as well? Could it be that next month...”

“BINGO! As expected from the Adam that I developed, you’re completely correct,” The Mad Scientist insidiously smiled. “Before, the beautiful Mystic Moon Plan was meant to be completed after a year because I wanted to use the earth’s environment to complete many experiments that I wanted to complete. Once this plan has been carried out, I’ll have to destroy the earth, and I won’t be able to conduct those wonderful experiments anymore. However, the glorious King has spoken: because of some unexpected events, we are to complete all of the plans within 3 months, heheh... even though I don’t want to give up on my wonderful experiments, King’s orders are not to be disobeyed, so I had to bring the time forward to next month... heheh, old man Smith has given a perfect announcement: 10x EXP and drop rates. With earthlings’ ridiculous greed, they’ll definitely create a new record for the number of logins, and at least 80% of the earth’s population will come into the world I’ve created for them. That way, I’ll be able to collect billions of spirits at once, aheheheheh!”

“Wanting to take a person’s complete spirit is incredibly difficult, and it is thousands of times more difficult than simply controlling a person’s spirit. This is because they can’t violently struggle during the process; otherwise, even if I succeed, their spirit will be damaged. Also, the person can’t die, or their spirit will quickly wither. The idiots carrying out the same sort of plans as me have been knocking out their people before taking their spirits, while others use techniques to control their minds... all of this takes incredible amounts of time and effort, and it might waste more than half of their spirits! My method is something those fools will never even imagine. Only me, the genius madman, could think of such a perfect and genius plan, aheheheh!!”

The Mad Scientist’s wild laughter cut like knives into Ling Chen

and Fey's ears and hearts. What they were listening to sounded even more fantastical than a fantasy, and it was even more terrifying than hell. They had known and feared the Mad Scientist for more than 10 years and had thought that he was only a mad researcher. They never thought that the incredibly monstrous and shocking experiments that he carried out were only his side projects; his main plan was actually such a shocking plot! In a month, what the earth will face was certain doom!!

“You... You madman! What do you want to do with so many spirits? And who is this ‘King’ you’ve been referring to? Is it... Is it that you aliens want to devour earth?!” Ling Chen furiously roared. Right now, the only thing that Ling Chen could think of was that the Mad Scientist was from a planet that was far more advanced and powerful than earth, while ‘King’ was the leader of that planet. The Mad Scientist was carrying out a plan to control and devour the earth... this sort of plot appeared quite often in sci-fi movies, but no alien had ever used such sick and mad methods.

If he really succeeded, the Mad Scientist would have single-handedly destroyed earth!

“Heh, didn’t I already say that it’s to make you earthlings into glorious sacrifices? Devour your earth... heheheheh! So ridiculous, so ridiculous!” The Mad Scientist madly laughed. “If I wanted to do so, the first year I came to earth, all humans would have died. The tiny Isrock Disease was equivalent to a death sentence to you humans, while I’m able to make things that are thousands of times worse than the Isrock Disease. If I spread those diseases, earth would have turned into a dead planet in a matter of months.

“However, earth’s fate is still to be destroyed. After the Mystic Moon Plan is concluded, the earth and Mystic Moon will be destroyed. I will create new diseases to destroy this beautiful Mystic Moon world, while earth, heheheh... you two will be my weapons of destruction! When the time comes, you can kill those spiritless vegetables and hunt down those who aren’t in the Mystic

Moon, causing terror, howling, and death to fill the Mystic Moon and earth, heheheheh...”

The Mad Scientist stood in front of Ling Chen and Fey, less than 3 steps away from them, his skeleton-like head filling their vision. “Heheheheh, since you know your destiny, it’s time to turn you two into true killing machines!”

Ling Chen and Fey both understood that with the Mad Scientist’s extremely cautious personality and incredible intelligence, if he wasn’t planning on turning them into puppets immediately, he wouldn’t have told them so many shocking secrets. They could both guess what he was about to do... he was going to sever the connection between their spirits and bodies and take their spirits captive before creating an artificial consciousness to put into their bodies, turning them into his puppets!

The gaming equipment was created by the Mad Scientist, so doing this would be incredibly simple for him.

“Your minds were modified by me to the point that even I felt fearful. If this was earth, even I would not be able to control your minds. However, since I’ve found you in the Mystic Moon world, this must be a wonderful opportunity given to me by the heavens.” The Mad Scientist took a step forwards. To Ling Chen and Fey, this was like a deathgod taking a step closer to them. “Because in this world, I’m an omnipotent god! If I want to control or destroy your bodies or take your minds captive, it will only take a single thought, heheheheh, so now...”

As the Mad Scientist’s voice became crazier and crazier, his gaze becoming more and more dangerous. Ling Chen and Fey’s expressions gradually became more and more fearful... at this moment, a strange light flickered in the depths of their eyes.

Ling Chen’s face paled, and his eyes trembled as he said in an incredibly shocked voice, “You madman... just then, you said that there’s a thing called the Lunar Scourge, which is something that

you can't control... ha... hahaha... and you said that you were an omnipotent genius, so there are things in this world... that even you can't control, ha... hahahaha..."

Ling Chen dryly laughed; his stiff laughter and words were his last attack against the Mad Scientist in his fear and despair... an extremely weak counterattack. Hearing his words, the Mad Scientist coldly laughed, "Even though the Lunar Scourge and Lachesis are both godly items, the Lachesis belonged to a kind and loving goddess, so even though I forcefully used its power, it did not want to retaliate and injure me. However, the Lunar Scourge belonged to a tyrannical overlord... a tyrant who destroyed all gods! Its power was domineering to the extreme, and let alone control it, if it sensed that you even wanted to control it, it would madly attack and try to devour your mind. However, it's impossible for you, ignorant Adam, to know about these things... even though your body and mind have surpassed the limits of humans due to my modifications, you're still a low and ridiculous earthling, heheheh..."

The shock on Ling Chen's face increased by a bit as he said with a trembling voice, "That... That means that even though you control this world's rules, you're still unable to control the Lunar Scourge... if the Lachesis, which is on the same level as the Lunar Scourge, was not so merciful, you would not have been able to control it either. Heheh... haha... so there are things that even you can't control! You madman... you said that you were omnipotent, what a joke... ha... hahaha..."

"Heheh, laugh, laugh as much as you want, Adam. I'll mercifully give you a bit more time so you can ignorantly laugh until you're satisfied, because afterwards, you'll never be able to laugh again, heheheh..." Facing Ling Chen's mocking, the Mad Scientist was not enraged at all, and he said venomously, "In this world, no one can doubt my genius and omnipotence. I can't control the Lunar Scourge and Lachesis because they're the only 2 items left behind

by gods in this chaotic space. Within the limits of ‘humans’, there’s nothing that I can’t do. However, they’re within the scope of ‘gods’. This is a realm that even the great ‘King’ desires, but it is something that he has not been able to reach. I’m unable to control those godly items, and no one in the world can control them: they can only become their puppets!”

Ling Chen’s eyes widened, the shock and fear on his face remained. “H-Hearing you say this...” His trembling voice suddenly became condescending as his gaze instantly became cool and sharp, “Then I can rest at ease!”

“Lunar Scourge Divine Spear!!”

Chapter 794: Truly Dead?

As Ling Chen suddenly roared, a blinding light shot out from the Lunar Scourge, condensing into the Lunar Scourge in Ling Chen's hand.

The instant that the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear appeared, the spatial lock around Ling Chen and Fey that the Mad Scientist claimed was the most powerful spatial lock in the Mystic Moon world suddenly disappeared, allowing Ling Chen and Fey to regain their freedom... On Fey's right hand behind Ling Chen, the red, yellow, and blue rings of Lachesis simultaneously lit up.

“Fey!!”

As Ling Chen yelled out, the Lachesis' light shone to its extreme, and all of its power covered the Mad Scientist, who could not react in time.

“Ultimate Dimensional Domain!!”

Time seemed to flow incredibly slowly. The instant that the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear appeared, the Mad Scientist's wild laughter suddenly froze as his face twisted and his pupils dilated. His body slightly leaned back as if he was trying to do something, but before he could do anything, his body stopped in place, unable to move at all, as if he had been locked down just as Ling Chen and Fey had been before.

From when Ling Chen and Fey had escaped from the spatial lock to when the Mad Scientist had been locked down, everything happened in the blink of an eye. The Mad Scientist did not have any battle capabilities, so he naturally did not have any battle sense. At that sort of speed, he could not react at all, and the frozen Mad Scientist's eyes were opened wide, staring at Ling Chen and Fey. At this moment, he finally saw Ling Chen and Fey's Lunar Scourge and Lachesis, a look of deep shock appearing in his eyes as he choked out the words, “Lachesis... and Lunar Scourge!

Impossible! This is impossible!!”

“Mad Scientist!” Ling Chen gritted his teeth as he breathed raggedly. “I admit that you’re powerful to the point that I’m afraid! You’ve always been incredibly proud and confident, and indeed, you have the right to be arrogant... but today, you’ve fallen because of your confidence and arrogance! Just then, you said too much to us because you believed that there was nothing that could escape from your control and that it would be impossible for us to break free, and you even told us your only 2 weaknesses... the Lachesis and Lunar Scourge! At the same time, you were too arrogant to consider that the Lachesis and Lunar Scourge could be controlled by other people... at least, definitely not by earth’s players, who you look down on so much. However, we’re going to have to disappoint you! You control this world apart from 2 things... which are on Fey and myself!”

“Impossible! Impossible!!” The Mad Scientist’s eyes became bloodshot. This was the first time that Ling Chen and Fey had seen the Mad Scientist look so shocked, and they never thought that the terrifying Mad Scientist could have such a reaction. “The Lunar Scourge is an item of utmost evil, and anything that goes near it will be turned into a puppet or destroyed! How can it be on you... and the Lachesis’ energy was completely used up by me, and it could not even recover 0.1% of its energy over these years... how is this possible?! How is this possible?!”

“In this world, there’s no such thing as impossible,” Ling Chen coldly laughed as he raised the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear. “The Lunar Scourge is completely controlled by me, and it has almost been restored; the Lachesis’ energy was indeed emptied out, but it has quickly recovered after being controlled by Fey, and now, more than 10% of its energy has been restored. It’s enough to suppress your spatial power and your control over rules!!”

The spatial lock that the Mad Scientist had used was indeed the most powerful spatial lock in the Mystic Moon world, and only the

Lachesis' spatial power and the Lunar Scourge's power could destroy it. Even if the Mad Scientist was 100 times as intelligent and cautious, he would not have expected that the 2 items that only ancient True Gods could use were on Ling Chen and Fey and that they could be fully used by them. The spatial lock had been destroyed by them in an instant, and Lachesis' spatial power had exploded out, sealing the Mad Scientist and his power of rules... directly cancelling out the power that the Mad Scientist had over the rules of the Mystic Moon world, because this power originally came from the Lachesis.

“Adam, don't waste words with him! Kill him immediately!” Fey reminded Ling Chen in a loud voice. “Because the Lachesis' rule power was completely depleted and it takes a long time to restore, even if I empty all of it, it can only stop him for less than 5 minutes. Right now, he can't affect any of the rules of the world, and I've also changed the rules to lock his mind here... if you kill him here, his mind will be destroyed, and the Mad Scientist on earth will become a mindless vegetable! Hurry and do it! We both know just how terrifying he is, and every second we waste increases the possibility of something unexpected happening. If he escapes, the consequences will be unimaginable!!”

Fey's words caused a chill to pass through Ling Chen's body, and he equipped both of his weapons as he rushed towards the Mad Scientist. “You said that meeting us in this world was a wonderful chance... now, I'll return those words to you! This is a chance given to us by the heavens to get rid of you! You want billions of people to become human vegetables... this is your punishment!!”

The Mad Scientist's eyes once again widened. Seeing Ling Chen's savage and gleeful eyes, as well as the 2 weapons that were about to slam onto his body, and feeling the power to change rules disappear from him, he felt the aura of death for the first time. He screamed, “Stop!! You have the Lunar Scourge... so you're the Shura that King wanted to create... Ah! Yue... hurry and save me...

Yue!!!”

“Little master, stop!!”

Qi Yue’s voice hurriedly sounded out in Ling Chen’s mind, causing his actions to slightly pause. Qi Yue quickly said, “Don’t kill him yet! He hasn’t fully explained why he’s doing this, and he hasn’t said what the sacrifices are for, or who the ‘King’ is. You should make him spill his secrets before killing him, or...”

“No!” Ling Chen resolutely refused. “Fey’s right. Every second he lives for is a possibility for him to escape. He couldn’t predict that Fey and I would have the Lachesis and Lunar Scourge... but he might have something that can reverse the situation! If he escapes, neither Fey nor I, as well as the whole earth, can bear the terrifying consequences.”

“But...”

“Shattered Moon! Shura Instant Hellish Annihilation!”

“Yue... Yue!!!!!!”

“Arghhh!!!!!!”

BOOM!!!!

Qi Yue’s image appeared in front of Ling Chen as if she wanted to stop Ling Chen. However, Ling Chen’s Shura’s power was too domineering, and the Lunar Scourge Divine Spear and Shura Emperor Sword easily passed through Qi Yue, slamming into the Mad Scientist’s small and skinny body, resulting in a massive explosion.

After the Mad Scientist’s ability to control rules was taken away by the Lachesis temporarily, he was no longer a threat. His HP and other stats were about as high as a LVO normal player’s stats... and might be even lower. With that sort of strength, even if Ling Chen did not use any weapons, he would have been able to kill the Mad Scientist hundreds of times over with just a simple kick.

However, Ling Chen smashed out with both of his weapons and released 2 of his strongest skills... this showed Ling Chen's determination to kill the Mad Scientist, as well as the deep fear he felt towards him.

The Mad Scientist's cry of pain only lasted for an instant before he was reduced to dust by the Shura's berserk power. No matter if it was his clothes, body, or his white-framed glasses, he was utterly destroyed without a trace.

Although the Mad Scientist's gaming equipment to enter the Mystic Moon World was more advanced, the equipment was generally the same as theirs. He was also recognised as a player, and after dying, his mind would be sent to the nearest revival point where a new body would 'revive'. However, this rule was not absolute – such as when Moon Goddess White Snow had made it so that Ling Chen could not return to a city to be revived and could not even log off. This could be also done through... the Lachesis' power to change rules!

The 3 Moon Goddesses were unable to change the rule that players could not be truly killed, but the Lachesis could. This was because these rules had originally been changed by the Mad Scientist using the Lachesis, so it could naturally undo what he had done. Not only had the Mad Scientist's body been sealed in the dimensional domain, but also his mind had been sealed so that he could not teleport or log off based on the world's rules. The rules also allowed for him to be destroyed, so the Mad Scientist's body and mind were smashed into nothing by the Shura's power.

Seeing where the Shura's power had erupted, Qi Yue sighed and vanished.

When the dust finally settled, a crater that was many metres deep appeared in front of Ling Chen. The surroundings became incredibly quiet, and apart from him and Fey, there was nothing else around. The terrifying voice, clothes, and face had well and truly disappeared from before them.

Ling Chen put away the Shura Emperor Sword and Lunar Scourge Divine Spear and stared at where the Mad Scientist had been before saying uncertainly, “Is the Mad Scientist... truly dead? Has he become a vegetable?”

“I think... so...” Fey also sounded quite uncertain.

“Seeing how scared he looked in the end, he should be dead... with his personality, he wouldn’t be able to fake such an expression, nor would he allow himself to reveal such an expression. Only when he’s facing death would he involuntarily reveal such an expression... so the Mad Scientist should be dead this time,” Ling Chen tried to sound as certain as he could.

This sort of reaction from Ling Chen and Fey was quite normal. This was because the Mad Scientist had been their greatest fear and trauma and was the only person who terrified them. In their hearts, he was like a demon. They had wanted to destroy him, but they had never been able to. Subconsciously, they believed that killing this terrifying madman would be thousands of times more difficult than killing Instructor Hell and would be almost impossible.

However, today, the Mad Scientist had surprisingly appeared in front of them, and...

He had been killed with a single attack? If Fey was right about his mind being destroyed, the Mad Scientist in the real world had become a vegetable?

For them to defeat this enemy, who they had feared the most and thought that defeating him would be more difficult than scaling the heavens, in a single strike, they almost couldn’t accept that this was reality.

The two of them fell silent and stared at the crater, and they did not immediately leave.

“Ding...”

Ling Chen's communication device sounded out, and Ling Chen picked it up, hearing Xiao Qi's excited voice, "Big brother Ling Tian! Super, super, super good news! All of the demon beasts suddenly all vanished... not just the demon beasts in front of Ling Tian City; big sister Meng Xin and Xiao Xue heard that all of the demon beasts in front of the Forgotten City and the 4 main cities disappeared as well. It is as if they evaporated like steam! Not a single one is left!"

"... Alright, I got it. Fey and I will return soon."

After hanging up, Ling Chen raised his head and looked towards Fey, who was also looking at him. After a while, a beautiful smile suddenly appeared on Fey's face. "Looks like we've really killed the Mad Scientist! Those demon beasts were created by the Mad Scientist using a special method, and it looks like they were linked to the Mad scientist's spirit. Since the Mad Scientist's spirit was destroyed, they also disappeared. The disappearance of the demon beasts perfectly coincided with when you killed the Mad Scientist.

"That should be the case." Ling Chen nodded, a faint, relaxed smile appearing on his face as he let out a long sigh inwardly. The Mad Scientist's death was equivalent to getting rid of his and Fey's worst nightmare, making it so that there was no longer anyone who he and Fey feared in this world.

"How did he do all of this though? Putting aside how terrifying those demon beasts were, they were all demon beasts from over 10,000 years ago, and there was even the ancient demon beasts and Demon Emperors! Just how did he 'clone' them? This sort of thing should have exceeded the limits of 'rules', right?" Ling Chen said as he frowned.

Fey smiled, "Who knows? Apart from the Mad Scientist himself, I doubt anyone else knows. He's undoubtedly an abnormal genus, and since it's something incredibly abnormal, there's no need for us to know. Otherwise, wouldn't we also become abnormal madmen and madwomen?"

Chapter 795: The Stopped Mystic Moon Plan

Ling Chen and Fey had unexpectedly eliminated their greatest worry and threat, but they were unable to relax. This was because from what the Mad Scientist had said, they felt a formless, dark net covering their world. Thinking of the terrifying plan that the Mad Scientist had been carrying out and was about to complete, they could help but feel incredibly shocked. Now that the Mad Scientist was dead, it would be impossible for them to find answers.

“Just what was the goal of the Mad Scientist’s Mystic Moon Plan?”

“Where did the Mad Scientist come from? Who’s the ‘King’ he was talking about?”

“What did he mean by I was the Shura that ‘King’ wanted to create?”

“Why was he calling out ‘Yue’ before he died? Could he have an ally called ‘Yue’ who he was asking for help from?”

Ling Chen and Fey laid out their questions, but they could not think of any answers. However, these questions became hazes that settled in their hearts. Before today, they never thought that their peaceful earth would be in such horrifying danger. If it wasn’t for the Mad Scientist voluntarily appearing in this world, they never would have known the truth behind the Mystic Moon world, and the consequences for earth were too horrible to think about.

“If the Mad Scientist’s really dead, apart from his allies, no one will know the answers to these questions, so we should just let them go... of course, I hope that he didn’t have any allies and that this monstrous plan will fully stop,” Fey said calmly.

“I hope that’s the case. However, this isn’t over: there’s still the Cosmos Corporation,” Ling Chen said.

Fey raised her eyebrows, instantly realising how serious this was. “You mean...?”

“The Mystic Moon world is a real world, and it isn’t a virtual game created by the Cosmos Corporation. The Cosmos Corporation has been controlled by the Mad Scientist this entire time, so now that the Mad Scientist has effectively died, who knows what will happen to the Cosmos Corporation. Once those people regain their consciousness, what they might do is announce to the world the truth behind Mystic Moon... of course, this would be the real ‘truth’, but they will at least say that this was not a game developed and run by them and that they were hijacked by a group of people who wanted to use the game to destroy the earth. One of two things will happen... the whole world will go crazy, or the whole world will think that the Cosmos Corporation has gone crazy.

“As more and more players start to believe this, there will be great upheavals within the game, and the real world might even fall into chaos. The key thing is that the Mad Scientist used the ‘rules’ to make it possible to exchange gold in this world with the world’s currency, and this has been supported by banks across the world. Many players’ entire fortunes are in the Mystic Moon world, so if the Cosmos Corporation reveals the ‘truth’, the whole world might fall into an economic crisis.” As Ling Chen spoke, his frown became deeper and deeper, and he gradually saw more and more how big this problem was.

Ling Chen’s eyes immediately flashed as he thought of something and said in a low voice, “The situation might be even more urgent than we thought. Smith from the Cosmos Corporation wasn’t turned into a puppet, and he was only forced to work for the Mad Scientist!”

“How do you know?” Fey asked in shock.

“Because when I saw his announcement, even though Smith seemed quite weary and tired, from his eyes, I could tell that he

wasn't a puppet, or I would have been able to instantly tell. In order to prevent Smith, who appears frequently on TV, from being exposed as a puppet, he used his methods to coerce Smith, making him follow his orders. Right now, he might be imprisoned somewhere within the Cosmos Corporation's headquarters. Because he has been awake this entire time, he might have seen and understood the Mad Scientist's true goal and the truth behind the Mystic Moon world. Once he regains his freedom, he might announce this truth to the public!" Ling Chen stopped frowning – evidently, he had made some sort of decision.

Seeing the change in Ling Chen's expression, Fey, who understood him all too well, guessed what he was going to do and said with a slight smile, "You're going to go to the Cosmos Corporation? No, it's best that I go. After all, I've spent more time in America than you. I know where the Cosmos Corporation is, and a few years ago, I even snuck in. It's much better for me to go."

"Ah..." Hearing this, Ling Chen swallowed the words that he was about to say. He scratched his head, nodded, and said, "Alright, it's indeed better for you to go. However, no matter what, place your safety first. The Mad Scientist might have put in many defence mechanisms, so it's best that you bring a few people, and with regards to time..."

"I know how urgent this is, so I'll immediately log off and head there. I won't need to bring anyone, and as for safety, you don't need to worry about that," Fey said as she raised her large chest with pride.

"Alright." Ling Chen nodded. "I'll tell Xiao Xue to start preparing to buy the Cosmos Corporation tomorrow. If you can find Smith, make sure you talk to him about all of this. With how intelligent he is, even if he is reluctant, he should know that this is the best thing to do!"

Fey paused for a moment before her eyes lit up. "It's indeed a perfect way of resolving this. As long as we can control the Cosmos

Corporation, we can hide the ‘truth’, allowing the Mystic Moon world to continue existing as a ‘virtual game’. With the Li family’s current reputation, influence, and finances, they can buy the Cosmos Corporation without raising great complaints from the rest of the world. Smith should know what sort of decision he should make. As for why the Li family financial group would buy the Cosmos Corporation and why they sold, I’m sure Xiao Xue will be able to give a perfect reason!

“I’ll move out now, and I should reach America by early morning tomorrow at the latest. If Smith hasn’t been turned into a puppet by the Mad Scientist, there’s a 99% chance that he’s in the Cosmos Corporation’s headquarters!”

After saying this, Fey quickly logged off.

With Fey heading to the Cosmos Corporation, Ling Chen did not have to worry about her safety. Even if there were 100 machine guns aimed at her, they would not be able to harm a single hair on her head. He only hoped that everything would go as smoothly as they had discussed.

“Have you been shocked stiff by the truth?” Qi Yue’s voice sounded out in Ling Chen’s mind.

Ling Chen stayed silent before slowly saying, “Qi Yue, did you try to stop me just then because you felt that I was too hurried in killing that madman?”

“That’s right, you were too hurried,” Qi Yue replied after falling silent for a moment. “He had massive secrets and plots in his mind, but you killed him before asking him about them. If anything happens in future, we’ll be in a passive position.”

“I wanted to make him answer all of our questions; I wanted that a lot.” Ling Chen breathed heavily. “However, Fey and I understand just how terrifying he is. If he escaped while giving us those answers, Fey and I might never have such a chance again, and we would be plagued with countless problems. As such, it was

better for us to get nothing and kill him! This is even more so given that he would not reveal anything that he did not want to reveal even in the face of death.”

“Since this was little master’s decision, I naturally won’t think that it’s wrong.”

Ling Chen picked up his communication device and contacted Li Xiao Xue, “Xiao Xue, where are you now? There’s something important that I need to discuss with you.”

After asking Li Xiao Xue where she was, Ling Chen returned to Ling Tian City.

This deserted wilderness had been completely ravaged by the demon beasts, and after Ling Chen left, there were no longer any living creatures around, only the howling wind.

After a short while, a black, shadowy figure appeared where Ling Chen had been. She silently looked at where the Mad Scientist had been killed before muttering, “His spirit has been destroyed without even a trace remaining. Who would have thought that the madman, who feared neither the heavens nor the earth, would be killed like this by those lowly creatures.

“Even if he didn’t die, I would have killed him one day. However... the timing of his death is simply too disastrous...”

“I hope it won’t be detected by them, ai...”

After giving a long sigh, the black figure slowly faded and disappeared.

At an unknown place in an unknown planet.

“King! Just then, I completely lost my spirit connection with the Mad Scientist. He might be dead already...”

“That’s right, his spirit has died without any struggle, and there are no traces of it left. It was destroyed in an instant by powerful

energy! It was on that ‘Mystic Moon’ planet. Who would have thought that there were beings on that tiny planet that could kill the Mad Scientist. Go to the Mystic Moon planet and find out just who killed the Mad Scientist.”

“Yes, King. Then... what about the Mystic Moon Plan? The Mad Scientist never let anyone know about his progress on the plan, so we have no idea where he was up to.”

“Don’t worry about it! I’ll give you 3 days to find the person who killed the Mad Scientist. If you can’t find him, don’t keep looking and instead start looking for the Godchild! There’s nothing more important than this! If we can’t find the Godchild before it matures, everything will be too late!”

“Yes! I’ll head to the Mystic Moon planet immediately!”

Chapter 796: Saviour?

The demon beast disaster in the Forgotten Continent lasted for less than a day, and when the Mad Scientist died, all of the remaining demon beasts also disappeared. After the Forgotten Continent's residents rejoiced for a short while, they started the lengthy repairs.

Nearly 2 million of the Forgotten Continent's residents had died during this disaster, and countless villages and towns had been destroyed or ravaged. If it wasn't for the players, these numbers would have been much higher. The number of player deaths greatly surpassed the number of resident deaths. After this disaster, the Forgotten Continent's residents' views towards the players completely changed, and this was especially so to the godly otherworlder... Ling Tian.

“Lady Moon God Representative said that these demon beasts came from a different world and invaded our world. Their leaders were even more powerful than the Lady Moon Goddesses!”

“That's right, that's right!” I personally saw a Demon Emperor defeat a Lady Moon Goddess, but as soon as Ling Tian appeared, he destroyed that Demon Emperor in just a few blows!”

“I heard that there were more than 100 of those Demon Emperors and that they were all killed by Ling Tian. Otherwise, our Forgotten Continent would have been doomed!”

“More than 100? There were thousands! They were all destroyed by Ling Tian himself. I saw with my own eyes his spear in his right hand and his sword in his left hand. Whenever he casually swung his spear and sword, the entire earth trembled, the sound like heavenly thunder. He could instantly annihilate the Demon Emperors that even the Moon Goddesses could not defeat.”

“Ling Tian definitely isn't a human; he's definitely a god sent by the heavens to save our Forgotten Continent! Moon Goddesses are

already incredibly glorious gods, and he is a god even greater than the Moon Goddesses!”

“Wasn't the Moon God Clan hunting down Ling Tian some time ago... do you know why? It's because the 3 Moon Goddesses fell for Ling Tian and wanted Ling Tian to become the God King of their Moon God Clan! Think about it: with Ling Tian's strength, charisma, and looks, even the Moon Goddesses would be moved. However, Ling Tian did not want this, and he evaded the 3 Moon Goddesses, resulting in them making him a wanted fugitive. This was what I heard from secretly listening to the Moon God Representatives talking; don't tell anyone.”

“Oh! So it's like that! I was wondering why Ling Tian would be hunted down by the Moon God Clan. That makes perfect sense!”

“I heard that the Forgotten Emperor gave the order to assemble the world's best blacksmiths to create a statue of Ling Tian to put in the centre of the Forgotten City... at a position higher than the Moon Goddesses!”

“And he should! He most definitely should! Ling Tian is a hero who saved our entire Forgotten Continent! Eh? Ah! Ahhh... L-L-L-Look over there! That's Ling... Ling Tian!!!”

After the demon beast disaster, the Forgotten City was damaged and filled with ruins. The southern part of the city had been completely destroyed from White Snow's battle with the 3 Demon Emperors, and if the Forgotten City wanted to return to its former glory, it would take an incredibly long time.

Ling Chen hovered above the Forgotten City, slowly flying about to check on the Forgotten City's status. However, what he never expected was that heaven-shaking cheers would sound out from below after he appeared. Wherever he flew, those below him would scream and cheer, putting down whatever they were doing and looking up. No matter if they were male or female, their gazes towards him seemed as if there were fires burning within their

eyes, and countless people chased him wherever he went. Whenever he looked down, he would see a dense sea of people... it was as if the entire city's people were following him around.

Ling Chen had no idea that his status in these people's hearts had surpassed even the Moon Goddesses after the demon beast disaster, reaching a point that no one ever had before. It could be said that Ling Chen was a god in their eyes, and he was the first human in history who had surpassed the level of Moon Gods and Moon Goddesses.

The reactions from the residents due to Ling Chen's appearance in the Forgotten City greatly exceeded what he had expected, and as he was preparing to leave, he suddenly saw the Forgotten Emperor rushing out with a big group of people. Before he had even come close, he emotionally yelled, "Hero Ling Tian! Welcome to the Forgotten City! Please stay and be our guest so that our Forgotten City can thank you for saving us!"

Thinking back to how he had personally brought troops to attack Ling Tian City, the Forgotten Emperor regretted it to the point that he had wanted to slap himself hundreds of times. When he had been forced to sign that agreement with Ling Tian City, he had been utterly furious, but now, he felt that Ling Tian was simply too magnanimous and kind. With the power that Ling Tian had displayed in the demon beast disaster, destroying the entire Forgotten City would be like killing an ant. Let alone the Moon God Representative, even if the entire Moon God Clan moved out, they would not be able to stop him.

Even though that incident had happened long ago, when the Forgotten Emperor met Ling Chen again, he was utterly terrified due to what he had done to Ling Tian City in the past.

Seeing how fearful the Forgotten Emperor looked, Ling Chen guessed that the Forgotten Emperor would be scared to the point of kneeling if he even raised his voice. He looked at the massive crowd that was still growing and said, "No need, I just came to

have a look at the Forgotten City's condition, and I will be leaving now. You should quickly settle those whose homes were destroyed and carry out repairs.”

“Yes, yes!” The Forgotten Emperor hurriedly nodded. “I’ll definitely do as you said...”

“Very well, good bye.” Ling Chen waved his hand and disappeared. That scene was ‘passionate’ to the point that he couldn’t take it.

Returning to the air above Ling Tian City, Ling Chen breathed out as Qi Yue laughed in his mind, “Little master, how does it feel to become a hero and a saviour and be worshipped by countless people?”

Ling Chen rolled his eyes and replied, “I didn’t want to become a hero, much less a saviour.”

“But the reality is that little master has already become a hero and a saviour. Without little master, there would have been no one in the Forgotten Continent who could have taken down those Demon Emperors, and by now, the Forgotten Continent would not have existed anymore. Moreover, little master didn’t just save the Forgotten Continent. If little master hadn’t killed the Mad Scientist, it wouldn’t just have been Mystic Moon that would be destroyed but also earth, which is where little master lives. As such, it’s not exaggerated at all to call little master a saviour,” Qi Yue said as she laughed.

“Forget it.” A frustrated look appeared on Ling Chen’s face. “I didn’t want the Mystic Moon world to be destroyed by demon beasts because the Sun God Orb that I need is here. Moreover, I didn’t kill the Mad Scientist to save the Mystic Moon world or earth. I killed him because he’s someone who I had to kill. I never wanted to save the world, nor did I have any grand ambitions. The title ‘saviour’ is too heavy, and I simply can’t bear it.”

“Oh?” Qi Yue said calmly. After pausing for a few moments, her

tone changed and became quite mysterious as if she was talking to herself, “Maybe one day you really will become a true saviour...”

Ling Chen naturally thought that this was a joke. Just as he was about to return to the Administrative District, a red light flashed beside him as Fey appeared with red clothes on and smiled at him.

“When did you get back?” Seeing Fey suddenly appear, Ling Chen felt quite pleasantly surprised. This was because Fey had been in America dealing with the Cosmos Corporation the entire time and had not said when she would be back.

“Just then. Ah! Seeing how spaced out you look, is it because of how much you miss me after not seeing me for just 3 days?” Fey asked as she smiled.

“Cheh, you’re thinking too much. Back then, we had separated for so many years... Ahhhh!! Y-Y-You would pinch me... You’re Eve; how could you resort to such a thing?”

“Hmph, it’s your fault for being so unsweet.” Fey unhappily harrumphed before saying calmly, “My trip to the Cosmos Corporation went quite smoothly. The Mad Scientist indeed set many defence mechanisms, but because most of them were controlled by the Mad Scientist through his technology, most of the defence mechanisms were rendered ineffective since his mind was destroyed. After I entered, I saw that everyone had been turned into puppets, working on their own things. They ignored me even when I stood in front of them.”

“What about Smith?” Ling Chen rubbed the skin that had been twisted 180 degrees by Fey as he listened.

“Smith was indeed imprisoned within the Cosmos Corporation, and I found him on the top floor. I also found the Mad Scientist – he was lying in a special black life support system, and when I found him, he was still alive but without consciousness. Just to be safe, I destroyed his throat and heart, severed all of his veins and arteries, draining him of all of his blood, and then destroyed his

head. This way, even if there are gods, they'll be unable to revive him," Fey calmly said with her arms wrapped around her chest. If there were any normal people around them who heard this, their faces would have become as pale as a sheet.

"Just like you said, Smith hadn't been turned into a puppet. The Mad Scientist had been blackmailing him using his granddaughter this entire time. I saved him and his granddaughter and said everything that I should say. What made me feel quite surprised was that he immediately agreed after hearing what I had to say despite this matter being so important."

"That's not too surprising," Ling Chen said. "After suffering through that nightmare, you'd agree to anything from the one who saved you. Moreover, after going through that hellish experience, his goals in life would have greatly changed. Now, his greatest wish is most likely just to live out the rest of his years in safety and peace and watch his granddaughter grow up safely. He won't care about developments in a virtual game anymore. I'm sure he didn't know what he should do about all of this, so throwing this all to the Li family financial group was perfect for him."

Fey thought about it before nodding and saying, "I've already told Smith all he needs to do. He promised that he would do all he can to help and will contact the Li family himself. Also, I've knocked out a few of the Cosmos Corporation's puppet employees, but it's a pity that I wasn't able to undo the mental control that they are under. However, after the Mad Scientist died, they're like a bunch of zombies without his mind controlling them, so I left my mark on their minds, making them obey me. In the future, I'll turn over their control to the Li family... this doesn't seem to be too bad – at the very least, they'll be a group of loyal employees."

"You also know how to do mental control?" Ling Chen's eyes widened.

Fey rolled her eyes and smiled, "Didn't I just say that their minds were completely blank because the Mad Scientist died? Controlling

them is as simple as writing on a blank sheet of paper. I just knocked them out and told them that I was their master after they came to again... that's it.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

Chapter 797: Birthday (1)

Su Hang, Gu family's residence.

Li Xiao Xue was elegantly sitting in front of Gu Qing Han and got straight to the point, "Aunty Gu, so sorry to disturb you while you're so busy. There are some things that I want to hear your opinion on... mm, it's like this: I'm preparing to buy the Cosmos Corporation."

Li Xiao Xue looked at Gu Qing Han, waiting to see her reaction upon hearing the news that could shock the world. However, what shocked her was that even though Gu Qing Han was looking at her, her eyes had no focus, and she did not respond as if she had lost her soul.

"Aunty Gu?" Li Xiao Xue asked, feeling quite surprised. With Gu Qing Han's personality, she would never allow herself to space out, especially when receiving a guest.

"Ah?" Gu Qing Han came back to her senses and gave Li Xiao Xue an apologetic smile. "I'm sorry, I just spaced out; what were you asking about?"

Li Xiao Xue did not repeat what she had just asked, and she instead said with a worried expression, "Aunty Gu, after knowing you for so long, this is the first time that I've seen you so preoccupied. Is there anything on your mind? If you're willing, you can tell me about it; I might be able to give Aunty Gu some ideas."

In actuality, with Li Xiao Xue's intelligent mind and her understanding towards Gu Qing Han, how could she not know that Gu Qing Han was spacing out because of... Ling Chen!

"I..." A faint look of sorrow appeared in Gu Qing Han's eyes as she slowly got up and walked in front of the French window. Only after a while did she say softly, "Tomorrow... is his 24th birthday."

“Eh?” Li Xiao Xue felt a bit surprised and also stood up. Li Xiao Xue did not know when Ling Chen’s birthday was. She had casually asked Ling Chen once, but Ling Chen had only calmly replied that he did not remember which day it was. Even Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, and Su’Er did not know. Perhaps the only ones who knew were Xuanyuan Dia Wu and Ling Shui Ruo.

However, even if everyone in the world forgot about his birthday, Gu Qing Han wouldn’t. This was so even though she had believed that he had died 13 years ago.

“Can you help me give him my birthday blessings... and a present?” Gu Qing Han said softly as she looked out the window.

With Li Xiao Xue’s understanding towards Ling Chen, he would not care about birthdays. However, just because he did not care did not mean other people did not care, especially Gu Qing Han. Li Xiao Xue suddenly smiled. “Aunty Gu, I only just found out today about Ling Chen’s birthday. Thinking about it now, I think I should organise a birthday party for him. After all, it was because of him that our Li family has reached such heights... however, I can’t help Aunty Gu give him her present.”

Gu Qing Han’s gaze became dim and she bitterly shook her head. “... It’s fine. I know that I shouldn’t selfishly disturb him before the right time.”

“No, that’s not what I meant.” Li Xiao Xue shook her head as she came over to Gu Qing Han’s side and said with a smile, “Rather, I think right now is the perfect time. I can’t give it to Ling Chen for Aunty Gu because this gift... would be better for Aunty Gu to give him.”

Gu Qing Han paused in shock, an emotional look appearing in her eyes. “Me... give it to him? But... But...”

“Just because Ling Chen has been avoiding it doesn’t mean that he is resistant to it. He needed some time to accept it. After all, he had thought that his mother had passed away when he was a child,

and he never knew the concept of a mother, nor has he ever experienced motherly love. It's quite difficult for him to suddenly gain a mother, and this is especially so for Ling Chen, who has gone through many special experiences. However, even though he can be a tough and unyielding person, from his actions, I can tell that he repays kindness with kindness, so he's definitely not an emotionless person. Rather, he's someone who values relationships – otherwise, he wouldn't have so many loyal followers,” Li Xiao Xue smiled as she continued speaking in a touched manner, “nor would so many girls have fallen for him so deeply.”

“Now that so much time has passed, it should have been enough time for him to process this. Isn't tomorrow a great opportunity? Maybe he has already accepted you in his heart and has been thinking about you. Last time, him asking me to give you that medicine is the best evidence for this.” As she spoke, Li Xiao Xue turned to look at the small and exquisite glass bottle on Gu Qing Han's desk... every decoration here was worth astronomical amounts, but that insignificant bottle was placed in the most eye-catching place. If the person who was working at the table raised their head, they would be able to see it immediately.

“With how strong Ling Chen's personality is, even if he has accepted you and wants to see you, he won't take the first step. In that case, isn't Aunty Gu willing?”

Gu Qing Han's gaze continuously trembled, and after hearing Li Xiao Xue's words, she lightly closed her eyes and slowly raised her hands, placing them in front of her chest as if she was praying...

.....

Morning of September 18, 3101.

On this seemingly-ordinary day, the Li family financial group made a shocking announcement. They had announced... that they were about to buy the Cosmos Corporation, including all of its

subsidiaries and assets. Following this, Director Smith of the Cosmos Corporation announced that he would do his best to work with the Li family financial group, and he reassured everyone that the running of Mystic Moon would not be affected. Under the Li family financial group, the Cosmos Corporation would perform even better.

As for the reason, neither the Cosmos Corporation nor Li family financial group gave one. This was because Li Xiao Xue did not even need to give a reason – the world could guess whatever it wanted: the crazier the better. As for any opposition... especially opposition from the American government, Li Xiao Xue did not worry about that at all. This was because with the Li family financial group's current reputation, she was confident that she could quash all opposition.

Bamboo Sea Wonderland.

In the morning, Ling Chen did not enter the game. Right now, the Forgotten Continent was still a wreck, and he was not in the mood to find the Sun God Orb in such conditions. After eating breakfast, he went to the bamboo forest and madly ran 10 or so laps and trained his reaction speed by dodging through the bamboo. After returning to the central area, he was covered with sweat, and he leapt into the swimming pool, putting his arms on the sides of the pool as he silently closed his eyes.

QI Yue...

Ye Yue...

Yue...

The Shura that King wanted to create...

.....

“Whew...” Ling Chen heavily breathed out and muttered, “If you’re the Yue that the Mad Scientist was referring to... why have you never made me feel danger... if you’re not... then just who are

you... and what is your true goal..."

"Big brother!!" Tian Tian's clear voice rang out, and Ling Chen turned to see Tian Tian jogging over in slippers while holding her pink phone in her hands.

"So big brother's here." Tian Tian came to the pool and squatted down, looking at Ling Chen with a mysterious smile on her face. "Just then, big sister Xiao Xue said that she'll arrive with big sister Bing Yao and a mysterious guest in 10 minutes."

"A mysterious guest?" Ling Chen thought for a moment before nodding. "Alright, I got it. Looks like I'll need to get changed." After speaking, Ling Chen leapt out of the swimming pool, spraying Tian Tian with water.

Tian Tian cried out and hurriedly patted her damp clothing, puffing up her cheeks as she said angrily, "Big brother... you did that on purpose!"

"Heheh, of course I did that on purpose," Ling Chen laughed evilly, "Who told Tian Tian to drool all over my face last night. When I woke up halfway through the night, I thought our home had been flooded, hahahaha!"

Tian Tian's face became red and she stomped her foot, furiously chasing after Ling Chen. "Don't run... I'm going to tell the big sisters that you've been bullying me again." A big figure and a small figure rushed into the house, followed by much yelling. When Tian Tian came out, she was wearing a pretty and colourful dress, a pleased look on her face. As she walked out, she saw Shadissika, causing her to quickly walk over and ask, "Sha Sha, are you ready?"

"Hehe, I've been prepared since yesterday. Our cooperation will be perfect," Shadissika replied with a mysterious smile.

"Shh, don't let big brother hear." Tian Tian placed a finger on her lips and cautiously looked behind her before giggling, "Hurry

and tell the big sisters to get ready; big sister Xiao Xue just said that they're nearly here."

"Mm, got it!" The 2 girls looked at each other and happily laughed before running off.

.....

At an unknown place in an unknown planet.

"King, we've found the person who killed the Mad Scientist. It's a human called 'Ling Tian'."

"Ling Tian? Hmm, a mere human dares to have such an arrogant name?" [TLN: Ling Tian can be interpreted as 'rising above the heavens']

"This human called Ling Tian is not someone from the Mystic Moon planet, and he instead comes from earth. He seems to be able to freely go to the Mystic Moon planet due to the Mad Scientist's Mystic Moon Plan, but he's incredibly famous and is the strongest person there."

"Hmph, since he was able to kill the Mad Scientist, he shouldn't be too weak. Have you gotten rid of him yet?"

"Not yet, but it's not because I'm not his match; rather, I haven't acted yet. This is because I smelled the Godchild's aura on him..."

"What?!?!"

"That's right! The Godchild matter is more important than anything, so I definitely wouldn't be mistaken! In order not to inadvertently alert him, I haven't moved against him yet... I'm guessing that the Godchild is either on the Mystic Moon planet or on earth!"

"Rahu, go to earth, and if you find the Godchild there, let me know immediately."

"Then King, you...?"

"I'll personally go to the Mystic Moon planet!"

Chapter 798: Birthday (2)

10 minutes later, the roar of car engines drew near, and soon, 2 sports cars parked into the small parking lot. The first car's door opened as Li Xiao Xue elegantly walked out. She had on light makeup and was wearing a light blue dress that went to her knees. Following this, a cool aura swept out as Mu Bing Yao silently got out from the car.

“Xiao Xue, Bing Yao!” Yun Meng Xin and Xiao Qi, who had been waiting for them, quickly walked up and greeted them. Just as they were about to speak, the second car's door opened as a dignified-looking woman walked out. The 2 girls stared before simultaneously crying out, “Aunty Gu?!”

Gu Qing Han warmly smiled. “Meng Xin, Qi Qi, it has been 2 years since we've last met. You've become more and more beautiful.”

Yun Meng Xin lightly smiled. “Aunty Gu's flattering us. Aunty Gu looks even more magnificent and glamorous; if I can be even half as pretty as Aunty Gu is when I'm her age, I'll be happy to death.”

“But why are you here, Aunty Gu?” Xiao Qi asked curiously.

Li Xiao Xue mysteriously smiled. “Of course she's here to wish that man, who is lucky to death, a happy birthday. As for the specific reason, we'll talk about that later. Have you finished the preparations?”

“Of course we have, we were just waiting for you. Let's go, let's go, come on Aunty Gu.” Xiao Qi grabbed Li Xiao Xue and impatiently walked towards the living room.

The dining table was fully seated with people. Xuanyuan Dia Wu, Yun Meng Xin, Xiao Qi, Su'Er, Mu Bing Yao, Li Xiao Xue, Fey, and Yola were all present, each of them looking incredibly beautiful.

Each of them was extraordinarily beautiful, and seated together, any person would be intoxicated by the sight. Chao Ying and Chao Xi were wearing incredibly low tops and sexy miniskirts, their exposed flesh enough to make anyone's blood boil. They were each holding 2 bouquets of flowers and giving expectant and sweet smiles. Gu Qing Han was sitting at the head seat, and even though many of the girls had only met her for the first time and felt quite confused by why she was here, since she had been brought by Li Xiao Xue, they did not mind too much. After chatting with her, they felt much closer with her.

Gu Qing Han had been involved in many big matters over her lifetime, and no matter how important or serious the matter she was facing, she remained absolutely calm. However, today, her heart had been beating rapidly the entire time, and facing these young women with incredible backgrounds, looks, temperaments, and histories, she felt as if she was in a dream...

Li Xiao Xue – currently one of the most famous people in the world, the sole heiress to the Li family financial group, and the true controller of the Li family financial group...

Yun Meng Xin – the most famous and beautiful woman in the world, the goddess of everyone's dreams, the Lady of Ling Tian City...

Xuanyuan Dia Wu – the daughter of the Xuanyuan family, the Sword Emperor of the virtual world, and a woman who would take her own life for Ling Chen...

Xiao Qi – the Princess of the Battle Alliance, the largest underground power in the north, and the fearsome 'Flame Empress' in the virtual world...

Su'Er – the sole heiress of the Su family, her father was the Mayor of Beijing, and her uncle was the third highest Senior Official in China, wielding incredibly military might...

Gu Qing Han did not know Fey, Mu Bing Yao, and Yola before

today, but with her discernment, how could she not tell that they had a formless aura that far surpassed normal girls? This was especially so for Fey – within her bright and beautiful eyes, she gave off an air of condescension. Evidently, she had seen many things, and even the most amazing things in the world were incredibly simple to her.

Chao Xi and Chao Ying were Li Yun Ze's adopted daughters, and every young man in Su Hang and the entirety of Zhong Zhou wanted them. And yet, they stayed here as servants, and they not only did they not seem reluctant, but they also looked honoured and blissful.

Any one of these young women could shake the world. Who would believe that they resolutely surrounded a single man, and when they heard the name 'Ling Chen', they revealed the same expression... including Xiao Xue, Chao Ying, and Chao Xi.

Gu Qing Han felt quite shocked – to be surrounded by these women, any man would be able to die a hundred times without regrets. As Gu Qing Han revelled in shock, she unconsciously smiled... it was a smile of deep satisfaction and pride... it was even prouder than when she had single handedly made the Gu family mighty again.

“Shh, he's going to come soon.” Li Xiao Xue raised a finger to her lips.

Ling Chen's door was opened as Tian Tian and Shadissika held Ling Chen's hands on either side of him... with a large blindfold on his face.

“Oi! What are you doing, Tian Tian? Are you trying to take revenge on me for bullying you just then...” Ling Chen walked forwards under Tian Tian and Sha Sha's guidance.

“Hehe, no way.”

“We're nearly there... remember, you can't peek,” Shadissika

reminded him.

Tian Tian and Shadissika dragged Ling Chen in front of the table before blinking at the big sisters. Shadissika stood on her tippy toes and placed her little hands on the blindfold. “Alright, close your eyes Ling Chen... mm, 3, 2, 1!”

As she counted down in her clear voice, she quickly took off Ling Chen’s blindfold, and Ling Chen opened his eyes!

Pa! Pa!

All of the lights were turned on as colourful confetti rained down from above Ling Chen. The cover over the table was lifted off as a large and colourful cake with 24 candles on it appeared. In front of Ling Chen were many beautiful and familiar faces covered with warm and joyous smiles, and his ears were filled with their singing, “Happy birthday to you... Happy birthday to you...”

Ling Chen stood there, dumbfounded, feeling slightly stunned. Only when the women finished singing did he come back to his senses. “You... You...”

“Aiya, so he’s really a man who doesn’t even remember his own birthday,” Li Xiao Xue said while smiling.

“Today’s September 18, your 24th birthday; I knew you would forget,” Xuanyuan Dia Wu said softly as she stood up and looked at him. Ling Chen celebrated his birthday for the first time with her when he had only been 8 years old. After that, they had spent their ninth and tenth birthdays together... after they had been reunited, this was the first birthday that they had spent together.

“Hehe, happy birthday, big brother! Hurry and put this on!” Tian Tian stood on her tippy toes and placed a small ‘birthday hat’ on Ling Chen’s head.

“This is the cake that Tian Tian and I baked for big brother. It was completely made by us!” Shadissika raised her face and beautifully smiled.

“Happy birthday, big brother Ling Tian,” Su’Er said softly.

“I hope you’ll be happy every day, forever and ever,” Xiao Qi said in a loud voice as she put her head on Su’Er’s shoulder.

“Mm, if you’re happy, all of us will be happy,” Yun Meng Xin smiled.

“Master...” A small smile appeared on Mu Bing Yao’s face, making her seem like a snow lotus that had blossomed perfectly.

“After so many years, this is the first time that we’ve celebrated your birthday... this feeling is quite great; no wonder people like celebrating their birthdays,” Yola said somewhat hazily with a slightly red face.

“Whew, the first time we met, you were only 10 years old. Now, in the blink of an eye, you’ve become a 24-year-old old man. My Adam, you should enjoy the last bits of the springtime of your youth; otherwise, you won’t have this opportunity anymore,” Fey said.

“Hehe, this is the first time we’ve celebrated master’s birthday with him; this is so exciting!” Chao Ying and Chao Xi’s smiles blossomed like flowers. The countless rich and powerful young men who had desperately pursued them had never had the luck to see those smiles before.

Ling Chen felt a tugging on his heartstrings, and an indescribable warmth filled his body and mind. As he swept his gaze across each of the beautiful faces, when he saw Gu Qing Han, his expression froze and he subconsciously muttered, “A-Aunty Gu?” As he said this, everyone turned to look at Gu Qing Han. Apart from Li Xiao Xue, none of them knew why she was here.

Gu Qing Han slowly stood up, her gaze slightly trembling as she calmly and elegantly smiled, “Happy birthday, Ling Chen. I know my presence here is quite strange, and I hope it won’t affect all of you.”

“Of course not,” Li Xiao Xue said before rolling her eyes at Ling Chen. “If it wasn’t for Auntie Gu telling me, I wouldn’t even have known that it was Ling Chen’s birthday today... heheh, and there wouldn’t be such a lovely scene today.”

Ling Chen: “.....”

“Eh? How did Auntie Gu know big brother Ling Tian’s birthday? Even we didn’t know,” Xiao Qi asked curiously.

The intelligent and sensitive Yun Meng Xin and Fey’s eyebrows jumped upon hearing Li Xiao Xue’s words. Thinking to why she had brought Gu Qing Han here, they seemed to realise something.

“We can talk about this later because right now it’s time for our main character to do his part.” Li Xiao Xue pursed her lips as she smiled. “Ling Chen, it’s fine that you forgot about your own birthday; in the future, there will be many people to remember it hundreds of times clearer than you. Now, blow out the candles, close your eyes... and make a wish.”

“Mhmm, blow the candles; you need to blow all of them out,” Tian Tian reminded him as she held Ling Chen’s hand.

Facing this sort of scene and so many warm and loving gazes, what could Ling Chen say? No amount of words would be enough to express how touched he felt. September 18 was indeed his birthday, but without Dia Wu and Shui Ruo, he would always forget about this date. Even if he remembered it, he would not pay much attention to it.

From today onwards, there would be so many people remembering this day that belonged to him and to them.

Ling Chen bent down and blew out the 24 candles in 1 breath. With his abilities, blowing out those 24 candles simultaneously was naturally quite easy.

“Make a wish big brother, make a wish.”

Even though he was completely unprepared, facing this sort of

scene, Ling Chen could not resist at all. As Tian Tian and Sha Sha encouraged him, he silently closed his eyes...

His first wish: Ruo Ruo, come back to my side soon.

His second wish: That everyone by my side can be safe, happy, and worry free.

His third wish: That the earth and Mystic Moon world will be safe and will not face any more disasters.

Chapter 799: Birthday (3)

“Mm! The wish-making is done... after making your wishes in front of so many beauties, even if you don't want your wishes to come true, they'll still come true.”

“Hehe, come sit over here, big brother.” Tian Tian moved the chairs that Chao Ying and Chao Xi had prepared over, pulling Ling Chen to sit. She and Shadissika sat on either side of Ling Chen, looking like little angels.

“In order to wish our birthday boy Ling Chen a happy birthday, each of us have brought you a gift. I'm sure that you're very excited and have been looking forward to this, right?”

Ling Chen opened his mouth, not sure what to say. After all, he had only ever spent his birthdays with Xuanyuan Dia Wu before. This was the first time he had experienced such a heartwarming scenario before, and he could only dumbly nod.

“Wow! Big brother's going to get so many presents; you must be happy to death.” Tian Tian blinked with happiness and admiration.

“Of course – he looks calm now, but inside, he's probably smiling like a blooming flower,” Li Xiao Xue said as she grinned, then turned to look at Gu Qing Han. “Aunty Gu, as our senior, you should be the one to start.”

“Wow! I wonder what Aunty Gu's present is.” Xiao Qi sat up and looked on expectantly.

A slight trace of nervousness appeared in Gu Qing Han's eyes as she stretched out her tightly-clenched right hand... she had kept this present gripped in her hand because she had wanted to give this to him personally since a long time ago.

After slowly opening her hand, everyone saw a small... jade pendant.

It was an extremely ordinary-looking jade pendant and was the same shape and size as an olden-day copper coin. There was a very thin red string threaded through it, and it was a snow-white colour, making it look like it was made of white jade.

“Ling Chen, this is Auntie Gu’s birthday gift for you. I hope... I hope you won’t dislike it,” Gu Qing Han slightly smiled as she said softly.

“Wow! It’s a jade pendant!”

Yun Meng Xin examined the jade pendant for a while before smiling, “It looks like it was made from an extremely pure and high-grade Hetian Jade, and it contains no impurities at all. Jade pendants are usually given for safety, and Hetian Jade was used as sacrifices in the past, so jade pendants made from Hetian Jade have the meaning of praying to the heavens for one’s blessings and safety. Auntie Gu has spent much thought on this.”

Just as Ling Chen was about stand up and reach over, he saw Li Xiao Xue’s complicated gaze looking at him as she said, “No less than expected from Meng Xin, well observed. That’s right, a jade pendant made from Hetian Jade has the meaning of praying to the heavens for one’s blessings and safety. Auntie Gu’s jade pendant’s craftsmanship and its purity are both top-notch, and it is worth entire cities. However, that’s not the main point. The main point is that this jade pendant... was personally carved by Auntie Gu.”

“Eh? Personally carved... by Auntie Gu?”

“That’s right.” Li Xiao Xue lightly nodded. “Moreover, there are 23 of these jade pendants in Auntie Gu’s home. Each of them was personally carved by Auntie Gu.”

Ling Chen: “!!!.....”

“Eh? Auntie Gu had such a hobby?” Xiao Qi asked in surprise. With the Gu family’s strength and Gu Qing Han’s status in the family, how easy would it be for her to purchase such a jade? Why

would she carve it herself?

“Of course not.” Li Xiao Xue shook her head. “This small jade pendant contains Auntie Gu’s purest prayers. In order for the heavens to feel her sincerity, not only did she personally carve the jade, but she also personally chose the Hetian Jade and red string and never allowed anyone else to help. After completing the jade pendants, no one else has ever touched them.”

“Has Auntie Gu been praying for someone’s safety?” Yun Meng Xin asked in a soft voice.

“Mm.” Li Xiao Xue nodded and glanced at Ling Chen as she said slowly, “Even though Auntie Gu is alone now, when she was younger, she had a son. However, a few days after her son was born, she was separated from him, and she could only see him after 10 years. Being separated from her own flesh and blood was a great torment to Auntie Gu, and she became very sickly from missing her child so much. On her sickbed, she carved her first jade pendant... it could be said that she used her life to carve it... after that, every year, when it was nearly his birthday, she would find the purest Hetian Jade and use all of her thoughts and effort to carve a jade pendant to pray to the heavens for her child’s safety... just like that, after she carved her 10th jade pendant, she heard that her child had been infected with the Isrock Disease and had gone missing. They could not find his living person or his corpse.”

“Ahh!” The girls all cried out.

“So... so sad. No wonder Auntie Gu seemed so sad whenever I saw her.” Xiao Qi’s hands were clasped in front of her chest, her eyes filled with tears.

“It’s okay, auntie. In the future, we’ll all be your family,” Tian Tian’s eyes trembled as she comforted Gu Qing Han in a soft voice.

“Aiya, let me finish,” Li Xiao Xue said as she continued, “The story isn’t as bad as you think. After hearing that, Auntie Gu was

inconsolably heartbroken, but she still carved a jade pendant every year... because that was her only way of holding on amidst her despair. I'm sure that the heavens heard Aunty Gu's prayers, and they were moved by her earnest prayers. Her child did not die; no, he's still living well and is doing better than anyone else, surrounded by countless beauties. Oh, and what's coincidental is that his birthday just so happens to be September 18."

"Eh? That's the same birthday as big brother. What a coincidence." Tian Tian nodded before suddenly realising something and quickly looking over at Gu Qing Han. "Ehhhhhh??"

The room suddenly fell silent as all of the girls' expressions became quite marvellous. Some had a glazed look in their eyes, while others' mouths fell open, realising something.

"Aunty Gu," Xuanyuan Dia Wu somewhat uncontrollably stood up and said with a trembling voice. "Could it be that you're... you're..."

"How could... How could it... Wasn't it that from his youth, he..." Yola covered her mouth with her hands, her golden eyes widening.

"Who knows." Fey shook her head before thinking of something, a sorrowful look appearing in her eyes. She slightly smiled before looking at Ling Chen, a faint look of appreciation and admiration in her eyes.

"Is... Is this true? Aunty Gu is... big brother Ling Tian's..."

"Shh." Yun Meng Xin gently nudged Xiao Qi.

When Ling Chen had first seen Gu Qing Han, he had felt slight confusion in his heart. Now, Li Xiao Xue had exposed the thing that he had been escaping from this whole time, causing his heart to completely fall into chaos. Every word that Li Xiao Xue spoke tugged at Ling Chen's heartstrings, and seeing the jade pendant in Gu Qing Han's hand, he could almost see her weakly lying on her

sick bed with tears in her eyes, ignoring everyone else as she carved out a jade pendant bit by bit. He felt a pain and warmth within his heart as he stretched out his hand, taking the jade pendant into his hand.

After being gripped in Gu Qing Han's hand, the jade pendant was quite warm – a type of warmth that could seep into one's heart – to the point that he felt tears forming in his eyes.

He had thought that he did not have a mother or need a mother... he had thought that they would still be strangers even if she really was his mother – that there would be no emotions between them, so there would be no need to get to know her...

But why did he think about her so many times in the past days, and why did he feel so much pain after hearing about how she had spent these years? And right now, in his heart... was it the bloodline connection that Fey said that he could never escape?

“T-Thank you, Auntie Gu.” Ling Chen gripped the jade pendant and nodded somewhat stiffly. He subconsciously looked away, not daring to meet Gu Qing Han's gaze.

The ‘thank you’ and his avoidant gaze made Gu Qing Han feel a slight bitterness, and she forced out a smile and said gently, “You're welcome, I hope it can bring you peace and safety forever.”

Ling Chen nodded and opened his fist, staring at the jade pendant before pulling on the red string and putting it around his neck. When the jade pendant fell onto Ling Chen's chest, Gu Qing Han covered her mouth and lowered her head, tears flowing out of her eyes as her shoulders trembled.

The girls' eyes all became red, and no matter how stupid they were, they could realise what was going on. Even though the situation was quite inconceivable, Ling Chen and Gu Qing Han's reactions had given them their answers. Their gazes towards Gu Qing Han completely changed... the Gu family's leader and Ling

Chen's mother were two completely different people in their hearts.

“So... So big brother Ling Tian's mother was still alive and is... is...” Seeing Gu Qing Han sobbing, Su'Er's eyes also became damp.

Even though neither party had said it clearly, for Ling Chen to respond in such a way, Li Xiao Xue was satisfied. She patted Gu Qing Han's back and comforted her as she said with a slight smile, “Next, who should give their present... since the first person to give their present was Aunty Gu, the youngest should go next. Tian Tian, Sha Sha, it's your turn.”

“Okay!” Tian Tian and Shadissika clearly responded before looking at each other and smiling. They got up from Ling Chen's sides and took a few steps back.

“Big brother, this is our birthday present to you.”

“Mhmm, Ling Chen will definitely like it.”

Tian Tian and Sha Sha held hands. They were dressed in a flowery dress and a white dress and looked like a fairy and a little celestial goddess. Just the scene of them standing together was enough to make anyone feel intoxicated.

“This is the song we wrote for big brother, called ‘Lian Chen’. Here it is!” [TLN: ‘Lian Chen’ most likely means ‘loving (Ling) Chen’]

Chapter 800: The Missing Sha Sha

When Tian Tian and Shadissika's song sounded out and they started to dance, Ling Chen fell into a deep trance.

It had been more than a year since he and Shui Ruo had brought Tian Tian into their home. Even though it was not a very short period of time, he had never heard Tian Tian sing before, nor had she expressed any interest in singing. This was the first time that he had heard Tian Tian singing... and it was for him.

Tian Tian's singing was somewhat immature and would sometimes go out of tune. After all, this song was written by Shadissika, and she had only practiced with Shadissika for half a day. However, her voice was simply too cute and pleasant, and even though she would sometimes go out of tune, everyone still liked to hear her sing.

As for Shadissika's singing, it could only be described as perfect and wonderful.

Shadissika and Tian Tian danced as they sang, and Shadissika's soft voice did not go out of tune like Tian Tian's, and it instead had a penetrating quality to it. Everyone could feel Shadissika's voice piercing into the deepest region of their hearts, making them sink in her voice, crushing all of their will and mental defences. Their minds were solely focused on the incredible singing, unable to think about anything else...

Did the sort of voice that could sway souls - something that even the best singers in the world could not do - really come from such a young girl?

The song was filled with bliss, peace, fortune, and their love for Ling Chen. Every word they sang lightly tugged at Ling Chen's heartstrings. Accompanying their singing was their dancing. They looked like little goddesses, blossoming flowers, and butterflies at varying times. They had only 'rehearsed' this dance for half a day,

but it was almost perfect. This was because Tian Tian and Sha Sha slept on the same bed every day and would interact every day, so they were incredibly close. Even without trying, they were able to work astoundingly well together.

Their expressions were serious yet cheerful, their eyes burning, and their song and dance caused Ling Chen and everyone else present to feel intoxicated. They felt as if they had been swept into a beautiful fantasy world and wished that the song and dance would go on forever...

As they watched on, the song and dance finally finished. As Shadissika and Tian Tian were about to finish, they spun over to Ling Chen like dancing butterflies, and each of them hugged one of Ling Chen's arms as they lightly kissed him on the cheeks. "Happy birthday big brother!" They yelled together, a red blush on their faces.

"Wow! Wow!! That was so beautiful!!" Xiao Qi vigorously clapped, her eyes full of adoration. She felt an impulse to rush up and tightly hug these 2 angelic girls.

"So cute, so cute, I feel like I'm melting. Wuu... I really want to hug them," Su'Er muttered in a soft voice as she clutched at the corners of her dress, her gaze flashing.

"Aiya, it's like we just experienced a song and dance by a pair of angels," Li Xiao Xue sighed in amazement. "This is especially so for Sha Sha. I'm sure that your voice is enough to shake the world."

"Hehe, no way. Plus, I'll only ever sing for Ling Chen," Shadissika said as she beautifully smiled.

Ling Chen pulled Tian Tian and Shadissika into an embrace, feeling incredibly touched. He didn't know just what he had done to be so lucky to have these 2 angelic girls stay by his side and love him so. "Thank you for your birthday present, Tian Tian and Sha Sha. With you by my side... I'm the happiest person in the world."

“Hehe, we’re the same: as long as big brother is by our side, we’re the happiest people in the world.” Tian Tian happily smiled after being hugged by Ling Chen.

“Mhmm.” Shadissika also smiled... however, her body suddenly trembled as if she had been shocked by lightning, and her red cheeks became as pale as a sheet.

“If big brother likes it, we can song more for big brother in the future. I think I’m starting to like singing more and more.” After seeing how happy Ling Chen was with their song and dance, Tian Tian suddenly became much more interested in singing.

“Mm, that’s good.” Ling Chen nodded, and just as he was about to let go of the girls, he suddenly felt a violent tremble from Sha Sha’s body, and her temperature plummeted.

“What’s wrong, Sha Sha?” Ling Chen turned to her and asked caringly. When he saw Shadissika, Ling Chen’s heart thumped because Shadissika’s face was as pale as a sheet. Her smile was gone, replaced by a stiff expression and a trace of fear. Her eyes... were rapidly dilating and contracting.

“Sha Sha! What’s wrong, Sha Sha?” Ling Chen hurriedly hugged Sha Sha, his voice becoming filled with panic. His cry caused everyone to notice something strange about Sha Sha, and they all anxiously came over. Fey did not move, and she started to deeply frown... because Sha Sha’s reaction was one of extreme fear!

Just what was going on? Why would she suddenly feel fear in such a place and time? There were no dangerous people here, and there was not even a trace of a dangerous aura.

“I’m... I’m fine.” Shadissika shook her head, a stiff smile appearing on her face. “I just felt a bit uncomfortable; maybe it was the food I had for breakfast. I’m sorry, Ling Chen... can I go and have a nap?”

Ling Chen nodded. “Alright, I’ll carry you to your room.”

“No, it’s alright. I can go by myself.” Shadissika gently but resolutely got out of Ling Chen’s embrace and lightly ran to her room. After reaching her door, she stopped and turned, her expression normal again. She stared at Ling Chen for a few seconds before saying, “I’ll be fine after napping for a bit, so don’t disturb me before I’m up... Ling Chen and everyone, make sure you live happily every day.” After speaking, Shadissika gave Ling Chen and Tian Tian a final, longing gaze before walking into the room and lightly closing the door.

“Sha Sha... what’s going on with her?” Tian Tian held onto Ling Chen’s arm with her small hands. Even she could tell that there was something different about Sha Sha... things definitely weren’t as simple as a stomach-ache from breakfast.

“Ying, Xi, immediately call Yao Ying and the others and tell them to bring the medical equipment,” Ling Chen quickly said.

“Yes,” Chao Ying and Chao Xi simultaneously replied as they went to make the call.

A deeply unsettling feeling arose within Ling Chen’s mind, making it impossible for him to sit there. In the end, he got up. “I’m going to check on Sha Sha, give me a minute.”

After saying this, he quickly walked to her room. Even though Shadissika had told them not to disturb her, he simply couldn’t shake off that unsettling feeling. After opening the door, Ling Chen stared at the empty room and the tightly-closed window... Shadissika was nowhere to be seen.

Ling Chen stared in surprise, rushing in and looking all around the room, “Sha Sha? Sha Sha! Where are you, Sha Sha? Sha Sha!”

Ling Chen opened the window and could not see Shadissika’s figure outside. He quickly turned and rushed into the other rooms, yelling, but he still could not find Sha Sha, nor did he hear any response from her.

His worried yells caused everyone to also come over. Li Xiao Xue asked, “What happened?”

“Sha Sha – Sha Sha’s gone!” Ling Chen said with a slightly trembling voice.

“Eh? How could that be? Didn’t she just go into this room? How could she have disappeared?”

“It’s impossible that she left from the window,” Fey said calmly as she glanced at the window. “Otherwise, no matter how soft it was, I would have heard it... so would you. What’s more, before you opened this window, it was locked from the inside, right?”

“That’s right, so... so I have no idea what happened! Sha Sha’s really not here anymore, but she didn’t go through the window, and there’s no trace of her outside... it’s like she vanished.” Ling Chen tried to keep himself calm, but there was a slight trace of panic within him. This was simply too inconceivable to the point that he had no idea what to do.

“Sha Sha! Where are you, Sha Sha? Respond to me, Sha Sha!” Ling Chen rushed out the door as he yelled.

Chao Ying and Chao Xi quickly came to his side and said seriously, “We looked through the surveillance cameras, but we didn’t see anyone walk out from here. We’ve also looked around the top of the house, but we didn’t find anything.”

“Eh?” This result greatly shocked everyone... she had not walked out from here, and she could not be found... had Shadissika really vanished?

Ling Chen and Fey were completely dumbfounded. With their mental energy, even a blade of grass blowing in the wind 100 metres away could not escape their senses. If Sha Sha had left from the room, they definitely would have noticed her.

Ling Chen recalled Shadissika’s pale face and frightened gaze... as well as the words she had said before walking into her room... now

that he thought about it, those words were like words of farewell...

Just what was going on? What had happened to Sha Sha?

Be calm! I need to be calm!

Ling Chen pressed his hands against his head, forcing himself to calm down. He then quickly thought of all of the possibilities as to what had happened.

At this moment, a voice sounded out in his mind... it was Qi Yue's voice, "There's no use searching; she's not here anymore. More accurately speaking, she's not on earth anymore."

"What... did you say?" Ling Chen raised his head.

"In order not to trouble all of you, she left earth and should be in the Mystic Moon world right now. This is because that's the only place she can go to apart from earth."

"What... what are you talking about? Trouble us? Why did she disappear if she went into the Mystic Moon world? What are you saying? Do... Do you know something?" Ling Chen asked as he gnashed his teeth.

"Ai," Qi Yue gave a long sigh. "She didn't enter the Mystic Moon world using her gaming equipment. I can't explain too much to you right now, but if you want to find her, go into the Mystic Moon world. Right now, she's most likely at a place that won't affect other people... such as the summit of the Godchild Peak, where you first met."

Table of Contents

[Shura's Wrath](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 701 - The Yun Family's Greed](#)

[Chapter 702 - 12am](#)

[Chapter 702.5 - The Missing Godchild](#)

[Chapter 703 – Enchanting Moon](#)

[Chapter 704 - Grievous News](#)

[Chapter 705 - Nightmare](#)

[Chapter 706 - Breaking Off Ties \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 707 - Breaking Off Ties \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 708 - The Su Family's Despair](#)

[Chapter 709 - Flying to Su Hang](#)

[Chapter 710 - Meeting In Real Life](#)

[Chapter 711 - The Ineffective Fairy Fountain Water](#)

[Chapter 712 - Ling Chen's Heart](#)

[Chapter 713 - Miracle](#)

[Chapter 714 - Blessing The World](#)

[Chapter 715 - Sha Sha and Tian Tian's promise](#)

[Chapter 716 - Futuristic Technology](#)

[Chapter 717 - Long Tian Ya?](#)

[Chapter 718 - The Delayed Truth](#)

[Chapter 719 - Grief and Lament](#)

[Chapter 720 - An Unexpected Guest](#)

[Chapter 721 - Her Name Is Gu Qing Han](#)

[Chapter 722 - Soulcilling Curse!](#)

[Chapter 723 - The Loyal Dog Long Tian Yun](#)

[Chapter 724 - Eternal Hatred To The Long Family](#)

[Chapter 725 - A Big Scare](#)

[Chapter 726 - News About A Saint Orb](#)

[Chapter 727 - Fey Returns](#)

[Chapter 728 - The Long-Awaited Reunion](#)

[Chapter 729 - Beg Me](#)

[Chapter 730 - 'Sea Cat'](#)

[Chapter 731 - Catching The Lucky Cat](#)

[Chapter 732 - The Incredibly Trash Aries Orb \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 733 - The Incredibly Trash Aries Orb \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 734 - Reaching The Moon God Island](#)
[Chapter 735 - Entering The Moon God Palace](#)
[Chapter 736 - Time Domain](#)
[Chapter 737 - Fey Facing 3 Moon Goddesses](#)
[Chapter 738 - The Moon God Clan's Offer](#)
[Chapter 739 - Final Hope: Ultimate Dimensional Domain](#)
[Chapter 740 - Fighting 3 Moon God Representatives](#)
[Chapter 741 - Hiding](#)
[Chapter 742 - The Exposed Lunar Scourge](#)
[Chapter 743 - Merciless Heaven's Jealousy](#)
[Chapter 744 - Sealed In The Lunar Sky Hell](#)
[Chapter 745 - Eight-Clawed Corpse Demon, Volcanic Desolation Beast](#)
[Chapter 746 - The Missing Ling Chen](#)
[Chapter 747 - Shura \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 748 - Shura \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 749 - Shura \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 750 - Shura \(4\)](#)
[Chapter 751 - Shura \(5\)](#)
[Chapter 752 - Shura \(6\)](#)
[Chapter 753 - Shura \(7\)](#)
[Chapter 754 - Shura \(8\)](#)
[Chapter 755 - \[Sacrificial Slaughter\]](#)
[Chapter 756 - The Unstoppable Shura](#)
[Chapter 757 - Lunar Scourge Divine Spear](#)
[Chapter 758 - \[Eternal Moon Shadow\]](#)
[Chapter 759 - Blood Of The Moon Goddesses \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 760 - Blood Of The Moon Goddesses \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 761 - A New Clue: 49554](#)
[Chapter 762 - The Novice Village That Cannot Be Returned To](#)
[Chapter 763 - Shattered Moon](#)
[Chapter 764 - Changing 'Strategies'](#)
[Chapter 765 - The Approaching International Mock Battles](#)
[Chapter 766 - The 3 Moon Goddesses' Counterattack](#)
[Chapter 767: The Perfect Counter, Lunar Prison Divine Mirror](#)
[Chapter 768: Heart End Cliff, Yama Curse \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 769: Heart End Cliff, Yama Curse \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 770: Yama Looks Down On The World](#)
[Chapter 771: Evil Plan](#)

[Chapter 772: Returning To The Novice Village](#)
[Chapter 773: Night Emperor](#)
[Chapter 774: Star God Orb](#)
[Chapter 775: A Different Kind Of Shura](#)
[Chapter 776: Lunar Scourge Divine Armour](#)
[Chapter 777: Demon Emperor's Soul](#)
[Chapter 778: The Unsearchable Sun God Orb](#)
[Chapter 779: Omen](#)
[Chapter 780: 'Crazy' Decision](#)
[Chapter 781: Fate-Defying Heavenly Orb](#)
[Chapter 782: Descent Of The Demon Beasts](#)
[Chapter 783: Chaos In Ling Tian City](#)
[Chapter 784: Shura's Might](#)
[Chapter 785: Crisis In The Forgotten Continent](#)
[Chapter 786: Demon Emperors Everywhere](#)
[Chapter 787: Demon Emperor x 2](#)
[Chapter 788: Divine Might, Underworld God Cannon](#)
[Chapter 789: Mastermind \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 790: Mastermind \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 791: Mastermind \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 792: Mastermind \(4\)](#)
[Chapter 793: Mastermind \(5\)](#)
[Chapter 794: Truly Dead?](#)
[Chapter 795: The Stopped Mystic Moon Plan](#)
[Chapter 796: Saviour?](#)
[Chapter 797: Birthday \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 798: Birthday \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 799: Birthday \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 800: The Missing Sha Sha](#)